

Arifureta Chapter 216

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Wai-, You Raised Too Many Flags!

Part 1

The bodies of the berserkers who were surrounding a figure from four directions were slowly collapsing like a blooming flower.

The figure that appeared from behind the tough meat wall that lost their head was the lord whose body was wrapped in a black outfit with two jet black short swords held in reverse grip. The one-lens type sunglasses was reflecting light even under the cloudy sky; it glittered with a sparkle. Surely, it was an optional feature.

「GAAAAAAAAAAH!!!」

It was a dissonant sound of many overlapping roars. The roars of the berserkers shook the air.

Lord Abyssgate, who was cool at any time with his body kneeling on one knee and his short swords readied to the front and back, wasn't perturbed by that shriek that stimulated human fear. He stood up silently while putting away one short sword.

And then, he took a half-body stance toward the berserkers who were tightening their encirclement and thrust one hand forward; his palm was facing up——*kui kui* he moved his fingertip. It was as though he was telling them 'come at me'.

「Let me tell you this, this lord isn't so soft that the like of mindless beasts can

possibly win.」

It was as though that whisper became the signal because the berserkers roared and began charging from three directions. The vibration of their steps made it feel like the ground was shaking. Normal people would surely lose strength from their waist and feel their groin going cold from feeling that pressure. Just like Emily-chan the other day. Just like Emily-chan!

In contrast, the lord——vanished.

It happened in an instant. The berserkers that came from three directions were blown away all at once. They went back down the path they just advanced through with a fierce momentum as though they had just been hit by a dump truck. Naturally, the berserkers approaching from behind also got grandiosely dragged into it.

At the spot where the berserkers were just at, there was the lord in an unmoving pose——three of them.

「Abyss-style Assassination Martial Art – Phantom Attack Form——”Roukyouka”」(TN: Haze Frenzy Flower)

It seemed the lord was pleased with the naming of the Abyss-style. He looked pleased that he could unveil the numerous naming (centered on existing techniques, especially the martial art moves that weren't named before this) he had thought up of through the whole night last night. The smile on his mouth indicated that.

By the way, what he did was only make clone bodies and simultaneously blew away the enemies that were coming from the three directions using palm heel. The ability of the lord's lovely fingerless glove produced unrealistic power that could make huge bodies in the middle of charging forward to double back. Of course, the lord properly transmitted the impact to the brain, so he didn't fail at dealing the fatal blow.

「aAAAAAAAAA-!!」

Three berserkers swung down their stout arms like a hammer from behind the three lords. In the next moment, the clones easily vanished along with a comical sound. The attack from two berserkers ended up striking the ground in

vain.

And then, the true body of the lord——

The enlarged fist the berserker was attacking with was already larger than the lord's head. That fist hid the figure of the lord and without stopping it plummeted toward the ground without compromise.

That was how it looked, but there weren't any remains of the lord in the small crater. The lord that was supposed to be the real body shouldn't be vanishing like a phantom. The berserker who lost his target moved his bloodshot eyes everywhere in search of the target.

「If you lost your reasoning power, then at least sense using instinct.」

「-」

A voice came. From below the berserker.

The berserker looked down at his own feet in shock. His figure that was peering at his own feet with his body leaning forward looked as though he was bowing. He looked really comical acting like that with his large build and the mad atmosphere he was giving off.

A short sword that stretched out from the ground, as though it had been growing there all along, attacked the berserker that was peering at his own feet. The short sword flew straight at the berserker's head, pierced the eye of the berserker, destroyed his brain, split the skull, and flew out from the back of his head.

Light left the eyes of the berserker that received the lethal attack as his body tilted unsteadily, and at the same time, the other hand that was reaching out, similar to the short sword, grasped at the berserker's hair and pulled it into the ground.

Using that recoil, the lord flew out beside the berserker that was buried in the ground, making it look like its upper body was prostrating. Of course, the lord flew out in the pose of a wild eagle!

「GAAAAAAAH」

The approaching berserker leapt at the lord in midair. Using their charging

momentum, they threw their body into the air like a cannonball to shoot down the lord.

「How unfortunate. That's an illusion.」

The body of the berserker passed through the lord's body without hindrance. The one jumping was the clone body of the lord, which didn't have any substance.

Then, where was the real body?

Of course, the lord was normally right beside it with his painfully thin presence. Even now, he was closely nestling beside the berserker-san. However,

「Be embraced by the dark hellfire——”Katon – Enryuuga(Annihilating all creation – The abyss's world-destroying conflagration)”」(TN: Fire Escape – Flame Dragon Fang)

von A unique sound resounded. The true shape of that sound was by the body of the lord that was dancing midair beside the berserker, the flaming short sword that appeared in the lord's hand without anyone noticing——it was the sound of “Heaven Destroying Sword of Lightning Flame” cutting through the wind.

—— Katon – Enryuuga(Annihilating all creation – The abyss's world-destroying conflagration)

The highest class of fire elemental magic “Azure Sky”——that magic was in a compressed state enveloping the short sword. The sword that was clad in the super-hot blue fire cut and melted the target. It made a unique sound *von* when it was swung. Because it was a sword that was filled with magic power, it could repel magic attacks.

Yes, it was a peerless sword that melted and cut every obstacle while leaving a beautiful trail of light behind in midair——so to speak, it was a ligo saber!

When this ability was first unveiled, it went without saying how the creator and the lord wordlessly exchanged high-fives. And then, unable to contain themselves, the two did make-believe of a certain knight. It was a little bit of a black history for the two of them when they received a lukewarm gaze from the two rabbit-ears witnessing their act.

The berserker whose neck was melted and cut by the light sword rolled on the ground right after. Berserkers were attacking the landing lord one after another.

「It's hard to move with that large body, right? I'll make it lighter for you——”Demolish Yoke”」

The lord made a sonorous finger snap. Right after that, the surrounding berserkers were blown away into the sky.

——Gravity magic “Demolish Yoke”

The magic that Miledy Raisen once used at the legendary decisive battle, a magic that forcefully liberated the target from the wedge of gravity. The berserkers who lost the shackle of gravity were thrown into the air helplessly due to a reason that couldn't be resolved using physical strength.

And then, if someone looked far above the sky, there were two lords standing back to back in bilateral symmetry, as though looking at the mirror reflection. They both were taking a stance with half their body shifted to the back, and both of them were holding kunai between their five fingers while displaying a throwing stance.

「「Thy art judged by the dark god——”Juuton – Saika no Seitsui(Inescapable Judgment of Abyss)”」」(TN: Gravity Escape – Star Fall of Calamity Judgment)

What was launched was a downpour of kunai that multiplied in weight until they reached several tons.

The dozens of berserkers became helpless due to the restriction that was zero gravity in midair. The only thing that they could do was to use their hands instinctually to cover their head. Even so, perhaps they could possibly defend using those thick arms that looked like logs.

Although, in the first place, Juuton – Saika no Seitsui(Inescapable Judgment of Abyss) *wasn't a technique for piercing* the target. This was an attack that was labeled as judgment. And then, from time to time, judgment was carried on *by reaping the head*.

The result,

「At least have a peaceful life in the next world.」

Surrounding the lord on the ground, a sudden squall poured down on the berserkers, where their heads were separated from their torsos like a joke.

The cause was one thing. The rain of kunai was something to reap the head from the beginning. The super heavy kunai falling to the ground had super-fine steel string tied to each other. Yes, so to speak, the steel string was like a guillotine falling down from the sky.

White smoke was rising from here and there. The ability of【Berserk】was trying to keep the berserkers alive by repeating super-regeneration, but there was no way it could regenerate the whole body from the head, and it was also impossible to regenerate the brain from the torso. Before long the bodies reached their limit and withered as though in resignation.

The rising white smoke looked like the soul of the people that were liberated from the【Berserk】transformation.

The lord standing in the middle of the white smoke shifted his sunglasses slightly and offered a silent prayer to the white smoke, and then his eyes narrowed quietly toward the remaining berserkers.

Around him were floating kunai that were connected to each other with steel string. *step* The two clones landed down on both sides of the lord. The lord swung the short sword clad in azure flame while it made a *von* sound, and then the clones also started swinging similar swords of azure flame.

「Now then, let's end this quickly.This futile fighting.」

The lord muttered, and at the same time, his presence got drastically thinner. Even though he was right in front of them, the berserkers looked around in puzzlement.

Right after that, the lord rushed out.

Five minutes.

That was the amount of time the mindless beasts who were given the name of the legendary mad warrior were able to survive in front of the abyss lord.

Part 2

「.....Impossible. What the hell is that.....just what in the world is happening.....」

A man's voice that sounded shaken was resounding in a dim monitor room located in the corner of the research facility. What that person clad in a lab coat looking like a researcher was looking fixedly at with an intense concentration was the image from the security camera that was facing toward the heliport.

It had been anticipated that someday the security bureau, or the army, would come to assault this place; therefore, the closest place that a helicopter could land at and the path that could be passed through by car were all monitored. When a communication came from the lumber mill, the people here only thought「Aa, they are coming here really early, huh」.

As long as they had groups of berserkers, they didn't need to fear most armed groups. It wasn't like they needed to hold the place and carry out do-or-die resistance. The berserker group was simply for buying time. While the attacker was spending their time dealing with the monsters, they would carry the research data and escape using the prepared method. After that, they would continue research at another research facility.

If they kept repeating that method later, then they wouldn't be able to be captured that easily. That was what they were thinking.

Yet despite so,

「Impossible. This is impossible-. Just what is that brat-. This is ridiculous! It's like a poorly made American comic-. Who can accept that such a thing exists in reality-」

「.....Ingram.」

Beside the man, an armed man with an air that seemed used to battle punched down on the desk loudly while shouting.

The armed man——his name was Weiss Ingram. He was a guard that Kaysis put in charge of for the security for this research facility. Narcotic smuggling, human trafficking, inducing war, arms trade, and so on, he was a leader of a mercenary group that would do anything as long as it produced him money.

Weiss had a large scar running from his cheek to his right ear. His face was distorting as though that scar was twitching while he gave some kind of instruction to his subordinate through a wireless device. And then, his gaze turned toward the man in the lab coat.

「Oi, what the hell are you doing staring idly like that? Finish your preparation to skedaddle right away. I don't wanna die fighting that kind of incomprehensible American comic bastard here. We are going to use all the remaining berserkers and "that" to buy time. We are going to leave this place in five minutes.」

「A, aa, got it. No, wait a second. You are going to use "that" too?」

「Aa? Isn't that obvious? We cannot bring that kind of thing with us anyway. We only need the data of the result of the experiment; there won't be any problem releasing that to send it to those guys.」

「That's.....certainly, you are right. Got it, I'll prepare——」

The man in the lab coat was nodding while he was going to say「I'll prepare right away」, but his words stopped in the middle. Weiss turned dubious, and his gaze moved to the man, where he saw the man in the lab coat had his gaze fixed on the monitor.

In the monitor was reflected the picture of the helicopter landing on the heliport that had been safely secured, the troops of the security bureau's special force quickly getting down from the helicopter, and then a girl with blonde hair tied into a side-tail getting down with the help from the man who annihilated the berserker group using supernatural skills.

The man in the lab coat opened his eyes wide while muttering「Why, in this place.....」. Weiss got irritated seeing the man in the lab coat acting like that and called「Oi-」with a rough voice. The man in the lab coat seemed to come to his senses from that, and with a 'hah' he took his gaze off the monitor and shook his head once before saying「I'll prepare myself」while exiting the room.

Weiss's gaze returned to the monitor, and he narrowed his eyes, staring at the girl who, for some reason, seemed to embrace the young man, or rather, she somehow looked like she was clinging to the young man.

「A girl on the battlefield, huh. Well, she is wearing a lab coat, which might mean that she is someone like that.」

Weiss pondered something before a wide grin that looked disgusting appeared on his face. He then followed after the man in the lab coat and exited the room. He did that while giving instructions to his subordinate through a wireless device.

Part 3

The research facility had a white outer wall. Alpha squad was lining up along that wall in an orderly formation. Bernard, who was in the lead, had his gaze fixed on the door that his subordinate was trying to break.

The other squads, Beta squad and Gamma squad, were trying to infiltrate from other entrances. Each of those squads was accompanied by a clone of Kousuke.

Kousuke was vigilantly sensing his surroundings at the back of that formation while being aware of Emily who kept glancing at him with a complicated look.

「.....Emily. I'm really not bothered, so Emily too don't get bothered by it. Rather than that, focus your mind for now. Even though we are protecting you, that doesn't mean it's okay for you to not be careful, okay?」

「Ye, yes. I'm sorry Kousuke.」

Actually, Emily thought that because she almost called Kousuke as Abyssgate just before he was about to jump from the helicopter, Kousuke accidentally fell out of the helicopter. Because of that, she was a little down thinking that she had held the other back right away from the beginning.

Emily apologized right away when she got down from the helicopter, but Kousuke, who had offhand knowledge that it was the easiest to get aimed at the moment when a helicopter was taking off or landing, was being busy acting vigilant toward the surrounding, so he only replied「Aa, yeah, it's fine」that sounded really curt.

Of course, he also really didn't mind, so his words sounded light coupled with that factor too, but from Emily's point of view, she felt that Kousuke's words had a different nuance. So to speak, for her it sounded like「Emily is the same as the other guys, huh? Well, it doesn't really matter though.」.

As a result, Emily leapt at Kousuke. Kousuke was startled, and he drew back, but Emily kept clinging to him while yelling things like「You are

misunderstanding Kousuke! The bad one is the idiot soldiers of the security bureau! I just got unconsciously carried away by them, I actually wanted to call you by your name properly! Please, believe me, Kousuke!」

On site of a recent battle where a curb stomp had just been performed, in a situation where they were surrounded by the special force troops around them, furthermore, in a time where they were going to march into the enemy's base after this, Emily-chan clung while imploring「Don't hate me!」unashamedly. It seemed that her nerves had unexpectedly become thick and sturdy through the case this time.

「Oi, Aby. We are going to charge in. Keep your flirting with your girlfriend for later.」

Bernard warned with an exasperated voice seeing the love comedy of the two that was completely lacking in tension (seen from the side) just before they broke in.

「Oi, captain-san. The way you call me got even friendlier huh. If you want to get along with me that much, it's fine to call me Kousuke you know?」

「Is that so? Then you can also call me by my name you know, Aby.」

「.....I'm absolutely not going to.」

The ignoring phenomenon occurred really naturally. It wasn't like it was caused because of sarcasm, ill will, or teasing. In fact, Bernard calling Kousuke as Aby with so much naturalness that it felt like a leaf that would fly if it was blown by the wind.

Beside Kousuke who was making a sour look, Emily, who was called as "girlfriend", had red cheeks while her mouth was smiling broadly. She was also throwing a gaze that was mixed with slight jealousy to Bernard who called Kousuke with the pet name Aby even though it was Kousuke's alias. She was busy with various things.

「.....How envious. How jealous. Flirting with a cute girl in this kind of situation.....damn Abyssgate.」

「Who do you think you are addressing without any honorifics just now? I'm going to get rid of you while dressing it up as an accident you know?」

Allen had a handkerchief that he took out from somewhere and bit on it while going ‘mukii!’. It seemed that he was considerably broken. In response to such an Allen, Vanessa was giving a warning with a voice that didn’t sound like a joke.....as for her, surely, she was already at a point of no return.

The soldiers, including the captain, who were emitting nervousness from preparing themselves with the possibility that they themselves might get infected with【Berserk】exchanged looks at each other wry smiles seeing the exchanges of Kousuke and co.

「Captain, we can proceed.」

Bernard received the report from the soldier that succeeded in unlocking the door and used his radio. Both Beta squad and Gamma squad also returned affirmative signals for their breaking-in preparation.

Bernard started counting. Inside the tightly tense atmosphere, the count——turned to zero.

「GO-!」

The soldiers were invading the facility with a fluentness akin to flowing water starting from Bernard’s signal.

Emily was desperately following in the middle of the soldiers while being surrounded from three directions by Kousuke, Vanessa, and also Allen.

The safety confirmation「Clear」reported back through the radio from each squad.

The corridor was dim. It seemed that the place was only installed with fluorescence lamps for emergency use. The existence of Kousuke and co was known from the battle on the helicopter landing pad. Therefore, the facility personnel must have already turned off the facility’s function and started to escape.

The squad’s objective ranged from capturing to erasing the essential personnel that were important even among the staffs of this facility. And then, their most important duty was to not let the water supply be polluted by【Berserk】no matter what happened. There wouldn’t be any advantage for the enemy to spill the current version of【Berserk】, but the possibility of what

these cornered people might do.....it couldn't be viewed optimistically.

Therefore, now that they had been detected, they had to suppress the whole facility swiftly. The soldiers were confirming their current position with a device in hand while advancing without hesitation inside the ominous facility without any human presence.

They could see the end of the corridor ahead. It seemed that the path became a T-junction there.

It was at that time,

「Enemy-. At the front, they're armed!」

「Spread out!」

Kousuke's yell reverberated. Bernard gave out instructions swiftly in a flash. The soldiers parted to the left and right in a second and took cover behind pillars or room entrances. Kousuke also hugged Emily and dived behind a pillar.

Almost at the same time as that, *dadadadadada*- consecutive gunshots were reverberating. Muzzle flashes blinked in the corridor ahead, and in the next moment, impacts ran on the walls and pillars where Kousuke and others were hiding and smashed up the surface.

It seemed that it was an ambush by *humans*.

The reaction of the soldiers was also swift. They aimed toward the spot where the muzzle flashes were visible and began firing with polished accuracy.

「We cannot waste time in this kind of place! Jazz-, grenade!」

「Yes sir—!」

The soldier called Jazz pointed the grenade launcher attached under his rifle muzzle and fired deep into the corridor. Right after that, a heat wave blew through along with a fierce roaring sound.

「Go-, Go-, Go-!!」

Bernard's command resounded while the wave of the explosion hadn't ended yet. The soldiers were firing simultaneously while rushing deeper into the corridor. Their gun points were directed ahead at where the corridor was

divided to the left and right. At that moment, they could see the figure of a man running away toward the corridor turn.

The following soldiers saw men collapsing on the ground; perhaps they were late to escape from the grenade explosion and crouched down. The men were groaning in pain, but right after that, they started to convulse. At that moment,

tan-tan-tan-

Gunshots echoed. The soldiers drilled the head of the men without hesitation.

「Clear」

「Clear」

The soldiers reported the confirmation of safety with calm voices. And then, as though nothing happened, the soldiers advanced forward once more with a flowing movement toward the direction where they saw men escaping to just before.

(.....As expected, the real deal special force is amazing huh.)

Kousuke reflexively sent praise with a small voice. Vanessa beside him showed her affirmation with an expression that looked slightly proud.

(Naturally. They aren't anything overwhelming like Kousuke-san, but the assault force of the security bureau is unmistakably elites. As long as their opponent isn't a mass of absurdity, they wouldn't fall behind that easily.)

As though to prove those words of Vanessa, Alpha squad, led by Bernard, was exterminating the armed groups lurking everywhere inside the facility to buy time, as though they were facing children. The squad kept advancing without stopping.

It seemed that the other squads were also the same from the report coming through the radio. There also wasn't any report of someone being injured. Kousuke, who was sharing information through his clone bodies, also understood how his clone bodies didn't really need to do anything, so he once again felt for real the strength of the special force.

While they were advancing like that, Kousuke and co arrived in a spacious room. According to Kaysis's data that they had downloaded before, this room

should be the main research room.

As though to show that, there were several types of machinery that seemed to be for research use, incomprehensible items left around on a desk, and several personal computers here and there.

「Captain-san.」

「Aa, I know.」

Kousuke called with a small voice, to which Bernard nodded. He already finished giving out hand signs and the troops also aimed their guns to cover all blind spots.

「Yoo yoo, ain't this the great elites of the security bureau. Just what are you doing, standing around silently in this kind of place?」

The one who was saying such a thing with a joking mood was a frivolous man with a large scar on his cheek as his peculiarity, Weiss. Perhaps as the expression of his composure, he didn't even touch the light machine gun hanging on his shoulder by a strap. Both his hands were raised up as though to show his surrender.

「.....Weiss Ingram. I never thought that you were in this kind of place.」

Allen sighed with his gun pointed. When Vanessa asked with her gaze「Who?」, Allen said that he was an inhuman mercenary who some time ago was failed to be caught by Agent L from the JD Agency and then went missing after that.

Hearing that, Bernard's motivation to leave the man alive turned zero, and he was about to give the erasure order in a snap.

「O, oi oi, wait a second. If you kill me, something disastrous will——」

「Fire-!」

Weiss was about to say something, but Bernard was merciless. He signaled the men to fire without compromise. Weiss jumped to the side without delay, and countless bullets passed through the spot where he was just at a few moments ago.

Weiss hid behind a desk while cursing「This is why I hate the spoiled elites-」

and sent instructions through his radio. The subordinates of Weiss who were hiding everywhere inside the room pulled their triggers toward the troops right away.

The troops immediately scattered to positions where they could cover each other and began firing back at every direction. Kousuke was also starting his half Abyssgate transformation in the off chance some stray bullet would go to Emily while suppressing the enemy force.

「Shit-. That Kaysis bastard. The pay is not worth it at all for something like this! Oi-, old man! Not yet!? We cannot hold on any longer here!」

「——」

Weiss threw an angry yell while firing back with his light machine gun. Right after that, a man was crawling out on all fours from the shadow of a desk located deeper in the room. It seemed that the man was crouching because he couldn't move due to the intensity of the gunfight.

Weiss who saw that clicked his tongue and took out a smartphone from his breast pocket, and without hesitation, he pushed on one of the buttons lighting the screen. When he did that, a scream immediately surged.

「My bad. Die for my sake a bit.」

The button Weiss pushed was the detonator for the【Berserk】that he made his subordinates drink.

Naturally, Weiss's subordinates knew the true nature of the thing they were made to drink. They knew yet they still drank that kind of thing. If they were asked why they did it, then it wasn't because of loyalty but because of fear. Simply because if they didn't drink it, then they would be killed by their boss Weiss. That fear allowed them to take the drug even knowing the true identity of the drug.

Because in Weiss's mind he didn't think that he would be able to escape while leading all his subordinates, he made this inhumanly ruthless decision. He made everyone except his close aides and useful subordinates take the drug.

「Chih. All troops, concentrate on the berserkers! Don't get hit by any residual splash!」

Bernard's order was given, and at the same time, Kousuke began to deal with the berserkers. He didn't neglect to guard Emily, but there were Vanessa and Allen beside her. It was Danessa-san who recently only showed her unfortunate side, but her strength was an authentic one.

After all, by herself, she protected Emily from the dozens of pursuers led by Kimberly while being isolated and helpless; she was a formidable fighter that could overcome even a berserker if it was a one-on-one with leeway to spare.

As for Allen, it went without saying that he was a murder specialist that could take on, at the same time, several berserkers that were the primary source of infection who had been dashed with the undiluted solution of【Berserk】. Even now, he wasn't letting any enemy get nearby by means of martial arts that looked like Gun-Kata using two handguns resembling a certain demon king.

But, even so, in this kind of situation where they were surrounded by berserkers from all directions, and it was at a range this close, it couldn't help that the attention would be directed that way.....

「Ah」

Emily unconsciously raised her voice. Ahead of her gaze, there was Weiss who was trying to get out of the room quickly where right now he was opening the door, and a man in a lab coat who got his collar grabbed by Weiss before he got thrown into the place behind the door.

Kousuke lopped off the head of a berserker, and then he was about to set forth to capture Weiss——but just before he could do that,

「Then, sayonara everyone. Please enjoy your welcoming party until the end no matter what.」

Weiss then pushed the smartphone button, and the solid door closed loudly.

It was unclear just what his reason for pushing the button was, but that reason was immediately turned clear.

「Guruururururu」

A low growling voice resounded between the gunshots.

「Captain-san! The door deeper inside!」

「-, oi oi, what's that.....」

Kousuke was pointing ahead. There, the door that was on the wall on the opposite side of the door Weiss and others went through was being opened before they knew it. And then, Bernard stiffened reflexively when he saw the thing coming out from there.

The thing coming out from there was a large body that might reach two meters in length——a beast. Its appearance looked like a cat. It had lean limbs and a tail swaying relaxedly. However, it had a large body that couldn't be found anywhere on earth. Its eyes were bloodshot, and saliva was dripping down from its mouth.

From behind that beast, there were also things that weren't cats, but they were also enlarged beasts that looked hungry without any sanity. There were dogs, mice, and also monkeys. Every one of them was literally a monster.

「I see. There is no reason to not use【Berserk】on animals. And this place is a research facility. It would be stranger instead if there were no animals for guinea pigs.....」

Bernard muttered that with a disgusted expression. He then gave instructions to his subordinates, and they rearranged their formation. But, at the same time, there were angry yells resounding from the radio. It came from Beta squad and Gamma squad. It seemed that at their side they also encountered berserk animals.

Thanks to Kousuke's clone, currently, there wasn't any soldier who became unable to fight, but they didn't seem to be in a situation where they could link up with each other soon.

「It can't be helped. We don't know how many of this things there are, but I'll clear——」

「No, Aby. You go chase Ingram and others together with Doctor Grant.」

Kousuke who was in his Abyssgate transformation once more was about to take on the berserk animals——the Berserk Beasts. But Bernard stopped him.

Kousuke reflexively turned an expression of disbelief「Are you sane?」to Bernard. Bernard gave a glance to Kousuke before throwing a flashbang and

tear-gas grenade. If they were animals, then even if they were turned mad, they might falter a bit in front of objects that intensely stimulated their sight and smell. That was Bernard's thinking but.....

Unexpectedly, it seemed that his thinking was right on the mark, the Berserk Beasts didn't falter, but they leapt back greatly.

Bernard included that useful information into the tactic inside his head while he spoke to Kousuke using the time he bought.

「Both Ingram and that man he took away are both prey that cannot be allowed to escape. We don't know what kind of escape method they have prepared, on top of that, we cannot let them buy any more time. Besides, there won't be any meaning of you taking the girl here if they get away, right?」

Bernard said that with a smile. His gaze turned toward Emily who was desperately looking at the situation around even while she was turning small with both her hands holding her head.

It was exactly as Bernard said. The reason they picked this place from among the places that should be suppressed was for Emily's sake. Emily herself knew that she was asking for something selfish, but even so, she earnestly requested and arrived here. It wasn't for the sake of the world, or even for the sake of the security bureau. It was for the sake of Emily that he came here. It was none other than Kousuke who declared that.

Kousuke looked at Bernard once again. The berserkers around had mostly been dealt with by the soldiers, but even so, if they had to face the Berserk Beasts, then it would be a struggle between life and death for them.

But the gaze that Bernard returned to Kousuke contained not even a shred of hesitation or fear. He would give his all for the sake of doing what must be done. There was only the resolve as a professional in his gaze.

「I'll send my clones here quickly when they finish taking care of the guys in the other places. Don't be reckless and focus on buying time.」

「That's really reassuring. If it's just buying time, then it will be too simple that I might let my guard down unconsciously.」

Bernard smiled fearlessly. Kousuke also returned back a fearless smile while

he helped Emily stand up.

「Bernard. You are a good guy.」

「You noticed it this late? You are unexpectedly slow huh, Aby.」

Kousuke and Bernard thrust their fist at each other. For some reason, Vanessa's eyes were sparkling at the exchange of manly smiles between the two, but they ignored it for now.

Kousuke pulled on Emily's hand and broke into a run right away. Vanessa and Allen were also following behind.

At the same time, the Berserk Beasts instinctually hate letting their prey get away more than feeling disgusted toward the tear gas, so they all rushed off toward the four.

「Don't let them hinder Aby and the others-!」

The soldiers laid out a barrage following Bernard's order. The Berserk Beasts were blown away to the side were unable to stop the charge of Kousuke and co.

Using that opening, Kousuke was able to reach the door where Weiss went into. Kousuke opened the door while he looked at Bernard and the soldiers who were facing the Berserk Beasts who had changed targets.

Seeing Kousuke and the others stop moving and looking here, Bernard yelled angrily.

「Don't mind us, just go quickly-! Heh, no need to worry, we are going to catch up with you guys soon.」

「Wai-, stupid-! Just why did you say that just now!?!」

The speech of Bernard that was said with a fearless smile caused Kousuke to make a retort. Just how could Bernard say that kind of lovely speech in this critical hour? There was no way Bernard, who wasn't an otaku, was running a joke here, which made that speech sound excessively ominous.

But in a perfect form, Bernard added a more lovely flag as though he was being possessed in this critical hour.

「Aby! Let's get some beer when this case is over!」

「Stop it already! In the battlefield,『When I go home~』type of speech is something that mustn't be said the most!」

Of course, Kousuke's words were ignored so naturally, it was unnatural as usual.

「Doctor Grant! There is one thing I want to say to you along with my subordinates if we can meet again later! Will you hear it then!?!」

「Eh? Ye, yes! It's a promise!」

「That's why stop ittt! Emily too don't reply back! It's seriously not funny at allll!」

‘As expected, perhaps it was better that I remain here.’ Kousuke thought so, but right after that, one of the Berserk Beasts approached Kousuke and co. Because Allen pulled the other three through the door to the other side while saying「Please hurry!」, the beast didn't manage to get near.

The solid door was closed, and in the end, the sight of Bernard giving them a thumbs up with a nice smile was seared into their brain.

The door was dented then from the tackle of the Berserk Beast, and after that, the sound of gunshot resounded *gan gan gan*.

「Now, let' stop standing idly here and proceed!」

Vanessa and Emily stood up from Allen's words. Kousuke also stood up with a speechless expression.

Like that, Kousuke and co started running deeper into the corridor. Vanessa suddenly whispered.

「What a sorrowful affair.」

「You are annoying!」

Kousuke's retort exploded toward that extremely imprudent line. *bachikon* Vanessa's head was struck with such a sound while Emily and Allen were bewildered at that incomprehensible act of the two. Kousuke then prayed.

「Bernard. I'll send help there as soon as possible so seriously, don't die.」

For some reason, the figure of Bernard giving a thumbs up with a nice smile

couldn't vanish from Kousuke's mind.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I don't have any writing time at all with 7 days of continuous working, but this chapter made it in time somehow with just a little bit of lateness.....but I'm sorry for the lateness.

Next chapter will be the climax.

The next update will be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 217

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

The Snapping Abyss Lord

Kousuke and co dashed through the dim corridor that was only illuminated by emergency lamps.

They couldn't see the figure of Weiss and the man in the lab coat they were pursuing, but there was no hesitation in the steps of Kousuke who was in the lead. He was advancing while his gaze was focusing on the ground of this complicated passage that seemed like an underground labyrinth. There weren't any maps for this place, even in Kaysis's data.

Kousuke was following the trail and presence of the escaping Weiss using the skill of the "assassin" vocation, [+Tracking]. He didn't miss even the faintest trace that was even vaguer than mist, which a normal person wouldn't be able to perceive. Putting aside Vanessa who was ecstatic, even Allen's face was twitching for who knew how many times already from seeing that figure chasing after the prey accurately.

「「oOOOOOOO-J」

「Don't mind them. Run!」

Berserkers appeared from the corner of the passage. The two berserkers were charging at them right from the front, causing the ground to vibrate. Allen and Vanessa spontaneously began to stop their feet to intercept, but Kousuke accelerated faster instead and raised his voice. The two of them reflexively obeyed him.

Kousuke tensed his legs and put strength into them. He soundlessly accelerated and approached the wall. Emily and the others followed behind thinking that he was going to pass through from the side, but they soon knew that wasn't his intention.

Kousuke put his foot on the wall and ran on its surface while his body was turning sideways. When he climbed up to the ceiling where his body became upside down, he kept running on the ceiling without pause. —Skill “Shadow Dance”. It was Kousuke’s favorite skill.

「Hah」

Kousuke sprinted on the ceiling. The movement of the two berserkers, who were about to tackle them, halted for a moment after seeing the impossible position of their target. Kousuke rushed between the two.

While still upside down, a short sword flashed in a rotation like a whirling wind. A beam of light the color of the blue sky gently caressed the necks of the berserkers, melting and cutting without reservation. Shockwaves flew from the fingerless glove too as though it was only done as an extra, blowing the berserkers against the wall.

Kousuke landed lightly, and then he resumed running in the lead as though nothing happened.

The body of the berserkers convulsed in vain on the wall without any residual splash or without being an obstacle at all.

Even before reaching this far, there were berserkers and berserk beasts attacking them incessantly. Most likely, they were prepared by Weiss to hinder them, but they only came sporadically and couldn’t hope to stop Kousuke from his hunt.

Before long, Kousuke and the others ran into a steel door at the end of the passage. The width of the passage was quite wide, but there were so many large boxes and machinery parts cluttering the floor that if multiple people wanted to pass through, then they would need to line up in a single line.

「Vanessa-」

「Roger.」

When Kousuke called, Vanessa moved instantly in understanding. She hugged Emily who was at her side and hid behind a large machinery part. Allen also took cover smoothly after her.

A beat.

DA DA DA DA DA DA DA DA DA- A thunderous roar echoed. A machine gun in full auto spouted fire, and a great number of bullets scattered the packages filling the corridor. Kousuke smoothly evaded the flying bullets and threw a kunai.

「Kousuke-san. Your Vanessa is desiring to see the scene of cutting bullets with a katana.」

Vanessa-san was loyal to her own desire even while being exposed to gunshots. Emily, who was being embraced inside Vanessa's arms, was dealing the slaps of a straight man repeatedly *pechi pechi* even while turning small.

「No, putting aside getting out of the line of fire, but a stunt like cutting apart bullets from a full-auto machine gun with unparalleled accuracy is beyond me, okay?」

Vanessa's eyes turned round while she went「Ee.....」hearing what Kousuke said. It seemed that the Kousuke inside Vanessa had been turned into someone who could do anything.

Vanessa turned a gaze that seemed to want to say「You're kidding; you say that, but the truth is?」. Kousuke smiled wryly to that.

「Something like cutting all the bullets fired in full-auto without even missing one, that kind of stunt is only possible for the demon king or the demon king's wife, the swordswoman-sama. As for me, I'm fine with sticking to petty surprise attacks.」

Kousuke shrugged his shoulders, and then in the next instant, his figure vanished. In exchange, there was a kunai at the spot where Kousuke had been at until now. That was the kunai that Kousuke had thrown just before.

Naturally, for the kunai to be there meant,

「Guah!?!」

「Shit-. Since whe——」

「Gafuh!?!」

Kousuke was in the middle of the enemies.

It was one of the abilities possessed by the kunai. Space substitution. The subordinates of Weiss were panicked at the sudden appearance of Kousuke on the wall where the kunai had stabbed. They aimed their gun muzzles without delay, but at that time, they could do nothing but have a tearful separation with their head and body.

A single slash attack of heat gave them an unreal death. Their torso and head rolled like broken toys leaving them no time to transform into berserkers, and they departed for their journey to the other world.

Even so, different from a berserker's last moment who would have their body dried up completely and broke down to the degree that they couldn't keep their original shape, now the space was filled with human corpses rolling around everywhere. That factor was enough for Emily who wasn't used to death to turn pale and bile to rise up in her throat.

「Emily, right now, think only about what's in front of——」

「I, I'm fine, Kousuke. Let's go!」

Her smiling face was twitching and pale, but Emily stopped Kousuke's words with a strong voice. And then, she stared at the solid-looking steel door in front of her eyes, as though she understood something.

「Kousuke. Ahead of this is.....」

「So you realize. Yeah, that's right. They are on the other side of this door. It looks like they are flustered, but they still aren't escaping. Looks like we made it in time.」

「I see.....」

Emily took a deep, deep, deep breath. And then, she closed her eyes just a little. By doing that, scenes revolved behind her eyelids like a revolving lantern. The days she spent in the Down classroom. The smile of Hendricks and Lizzie who looked after her, the quarrel between Rod and Dennis in place of greetings, Jessica's mischievous smile, the joyful and fun joke exchange between Sam and Milo.

They were Emily's beloved big brothers and sisters. They weren't here anymore. She could never meet them again, her precious family.

Emily opened her eyes quietly.

「Kousuke, please.」

「Ou」

Her words were few, but the response she got was strong. Kousuke's short sword left an azure trail behind and pierced the steel door. It was as though a knife stabbing through butter, the short sword smoothly pierced without meeting any resistance. The place pierced by that super-high temperature had the surrounding area melting in the blink of an eye.

plop, plop The steel door was turned red hot and melted down. The sight behind the door was starting to turn visible bit by bit from there.

It seemed there was an underground parking lot on the other side of the steel door. There were several passenger cars and freight cars; there were also particular vehicles like forklifts and so on.

Beside one of those cars, on the side of a medium-size pick-up truck, there was the figure of two people. They were on the side of the truckload that seemed to be filled with luggage, but it appeared they were astonished by the steel door melting. They were standing still without a twitch.

plop, plop The door was vanishing, The door separating Emily and the man was vanishing.

Their knees were starting to be visible. One set was Weiss's that they saw before this while the slacks of the other man's was something really familiar for Emily. Those slacks were dark brown, and Jessica and Lizzie always said that it was too plain. Surely, if the slacks were seen from nearby, there would be a small fray that could be found around the right knee.

The belt was starting to get visible. That belt was slightly thinning recently, and the holes were shifted. Everyone was worried if the wearer of that belt was eating properly because he often went on trips.

The necktie was visible. It was a bright navy blue necktie with sharp stripes on it. To tell the truth, it was a present from Emily to him for his birthday. The expense choked out her pocket money while she chose the necktie with the help of Lizzie and Jessica.

「Aa.....」

Emily unconsciously leaked out her voice. That voice came from her fleeting hope——that “It could be a mistake by some chance”, that hope which she herself would laugh at. It was now crushed to bits.

Kousuke swung his arm. The steel door was blown away without leaving any trace.

There was nothing that stood in their way anymore.

The remains of the steel door illuminated the surrounding with a bright red light even though it was rapidly cooling down. Emily slowly walked forward while the remains were scattering. On her right was the protector from the Far East who was wielding the mystic, on her left was the heroic protector who would stand up even against her motherland if it was necessary, and behind her was the protector who shouldn't exist that symbolized the necessary evil. She entered while taking them along.

The fluttering lab coat was Emily's pride. The proof of her pride in the things she had piled up and of the place to belong that was given to her by him. But right now, that pride felt really heavy, really empty.

Beside Weiss who was cursing「This is too fast, this damned monster」while holding his head, there was the man who was still petrified in astonishment. Emily looked like she was going to burst out crying at any moment; however, her expression was filled with the resolve that she absolutely wouldn't cry. It was with that expression that she opened her mouth to that man.

「Why did, you do it.....teacher?」

There was no way the man couldn't understand the meaning of that question.

The first voice Emily spoke out made him, Emily's teacher that was like a substitute of her father——Professor Reginald Down to come back to his senses.

「Emily.....」

「Why did you do it, teacher?」

Hearing her name called by that voice that she thought she wouldn't be able

to hear for the second time caused Emily's heart to be shaken whether she wanted it or not. The words that she repeated had no intonation, perhaps because she was forcefully holding down her emotions.

「.....Emily, I—」

Professor Down's words got caught up in his throat once more. He bit his lip hard, as though he was in pain, or as though he was holding back something. Kousuke and Vanessa watched over the scene.

Silence ruled over the place. In the middle of that, Weiss suddenly glanced at his wristwatch. At that moment, Allen, who had never taken off his gaze from Weiss, reacted.

He exchanged a glance with Kousuke for an instant. That was him signaling to let Emily keep talking while he would capture Weiss ahead. There wasn't any reason to let an enemy at large, so Kousuke also showed an agreement with his gaze.

Like that, Kousuke and Allen were about to leap out, but just before they could,

「Whooops, don't move you two. If not, then I'm going to make this beloved papa of that missy get riddled with holes, yeah.」

Weiss anticipated that quickly move and circled his arm around Down's neck and pinioned him from behind. He was hiding behind Down and turned him into a shield while his gun muzzle stuck out on Down's side.

Weiss hindered Emily's talk with his gun muzzle not wavering. Vanessa gazed at him with a suspicious gaze.

「What are you planning?」

「What, nothing. *Even though he is threatened*, but as expected, with the girl who is like his daughter in front of him, perhaps this guy might do something stupid. That's what I think, you know?」

「Threaten?Are you saying that Professor Down is here because he is being threatened?」

「Hm~~, it's a bit of a faulty expression to say threaten I guess. It's that,

something like unwillingly complying with a forced request for cooperation.」

It seemed that Weiss wanted to say that Down was here unwillingly. Down's face grimaced from the sensation of a gun being pressed hard on him. Weiss grinned smugly while he jerked his chin toward Emily.

「Genius missy. This substitute father of yours is really gallant see. He will even lick other people's shoes with the term that they won't lay a hand on you. Even I got moved into tears by that devotion and thought that maybe I'll overlook you missy, but it's a different story if you come here by yourself.」

「Wa, wait, that's not what we agreed on. You said that Emily wouldn't——」

Down showed his panic hearing Weiss being talkative. Just from looking at that, it really seemed that Down was obeying without any choice because Emily was used to threaten him.

Weiss sent a vulgar gaze at Emily as though he was going to ridicule Emily's agitation——

「Teacher, please answer. Why, did you come to do something like this?」

「.....」

What was there was an Emily who wasn't shaken even for a bit, her straightforward gaze was unchanging while her expression looked as though she was desperately stifling her overflowing emotions. Rather, her expression was showing something that was dirtied from how Down was still displaying that kind of farce at this point in time. Be that as it may, a strong will could be seen from her that made it clear that she had no plan of going along with that kind of farce.

Kousuke and Allen spontaneously made a small smile seeing how Emily acted. Vanessa too, even though she was gazing at Emily with concern, her expression was proud toward Emily who was showing her “strength”.

「What's this, I thought you were going to get shaken at least a little. Well, I didn't expect that much from this anyway. It's fine because the true thing will be from here on.」

Weiss easily separated from Down and shrugged his shoulders, and then he

cleared away in one go the cover enveloping the large box that was put on the back of the pick-up truck.

「-, you-」

「Ooh, so you are shaken by this. I'm glad I brought it here just in case.」

Emily glared at Weiss with a furious look. Kousuke and the others weren't an exception. That special case with a transparent surface was filled with children who hadn't even reach five years old. They looked really scared. Three children were snuggling each other in the corner of the cramped case as their bodies huddled down while trembling fiercely.

Weiss pushed his finger on the smartphone on his hand while his vulgar grin deepened.

「The American comic bastard over there, also the agents, and even Emily, don't move, okay? If my finger slipped because of the spur of the moment, then these brats will end up going out with a cheery monster debut, yeah?」

Because Weiss knew about Kousuke's ability, he didn't take his gaze off of Kousuke for even a moment despite his frivolous attitude. Most likely, the moment Kousuke's presence vanished even for an instant in this situation; he would move his finger without hesitation and activate the detonator switch for the【Berserk】that was consumed by the children.

.....And so, Kousuke was normally vanishing just like usual.

「You scum. Just the fact that you are living is a crime.」

Vanessa who guessed what Kousuke was doing cursed to buy time. Weiss's expression turned amused instead at the abuse from an opponent in a situation where he was overwhelmingly superior and shrugged. Of course, he didn't take his gaze away from Kousuke.....he didn't take his gaze away.....

「It's better for all you dogs of the government to increase your cursing variation a bit more. I already got too used to what you guys will say, and recently, it was boring for me. Well, no matter. Come on, first of all, you guys toss the dangerous items to the floor.」

His gaze toward Kousuke wasn't taken o.....wasn't tak.....it was taken off.

Weiss's gaze smoothly flowed toward Vanessa who was talking to him. He did that really naturally, without any doubt, as though it was only the norm. He slowly lowered down his gun, and he made a satisfied smile toward *Allen and Vanessa*.

「Not using this skill is also advantageous sometimes.....it's not like, I'm crying here.」

「Wha-, guwah!?!」

Kousuke-san who was normally at your side, weeping like usual, was here. He ignored Weiss who jumped in shock, held his wrist and made him drop the smartphone, and then held him down to his knees.

「Guh, god damn it-. This American comic bastard! Just why the hell did something like you come out here, huh!」

「It's not like I don't understand your feelings, but be quiet for a bit. Right now is Emily's time.」

When Kousuke increased the pressure at Weiss's joint, Weiss leaked out a small anguished voice「Ngh」before he shut his mouth.

Down backed away from Kousuke who suddenly appeared at his side where Emily's gaze then pierced through him.

But, right after they thought that Weiss's farce was over and they could start talking,

goun-goun-goun-

A suspicious sound that sounded like it was resounding from the bottom of the earth resounded on the eardrum of Kousuke and co. It was the sound of some kind of machine activating. And it also sounded really loud. Kousuke and co ran their gaze suspiciously to the floor.

And then, their gaze caught a crack running through the floor. No, it wasn't a crack, but a circular line with its center split by a vertical line.

「Is that, an elevator?」

Vanessa muttered. It was just as she said; there was an underground space further underneath this underground parking lot/cargo storeroom. The

diameter of the circularly shaped elevator was around seven to eight meters. It was a large elevator for transporting large machinery and material.

It was climbing up. Kousuke and the others had a bad premonition welling up inside them fiercely. This time a muffled laughter resounded in their ears.

「Ku-, kuku-, fuhah. It finally arrived. It took a lot of time to lure it to the elevator, but it's barely safe. I was wondering just what would happen when the distractions got easily broken through and we were caught up with, but it's worth it making up that kind of farce.」

Weiss said that kind of thing while being pushed on the floor by Kousuke. They were about to question what he meant by that, but before they could, the elevator's door opened. The floor split to the left and right, and a hole was opened wide in the floor——

Countless somethings instantly flew out from there.

「-, Get down-」

Kousuke yelled while taking a position in front of Emily right away. And then, he mowed down those things attacking them with a flash of his short sword. Vanessa and Allen also quickly got down, and they succeeded in evading the first attack somehow.

Those things intercepted and severed by Kousuke made raw sounds *bicha* and fell on the floor. The fallen things convulsed with watery sounds while the sources of the things that lost its tips were pulling back into the elevator.

「Te, tentacles?」

「Looks like it. Those guys, just what in the world are they calling here?」

The things that Emily mentioned while her face went pale were indeed tentacles. They were skin-colored, fleshy tentacles that even looked like human guts. Those things flew out simultaneously from the elevator.

「Old man. It's plan B! Run to the meeting point somehow!」

「-, Go, got it!」

The moment Kousuke left him, Weiss sprang up to his feet and jumped to the side. He barely avoided those things that also came attacking him. And then he

took out an attaché case from the pickup truck's driver seat that had its door opened all this time. At the same time, he started up the engine.

But, he didn't enter the truck but started running at full speed while still holding the attaché case.

On the other hand, Down also seemed to know what was coming from underground as he rolled under the truck the moment the elevator's door opened. Like that he came out on the other side and hid there, so he was safe. And then, just like Weiss, he took into his hands a shoulder bag and a rectangle case. He then started running toward a door the opposite side of where Weiss was going.

Naturally, Kousuke and the others aimed their kunai and guns to stop Weiss, but a lot of tentacles flew out before they could and hindered them.

On top of that,

「Ah, Kousuke-. Those children-」

「That bastard-. So this was his aim from the start-」

The tentacles attacked the pickup truck as though they were reacting to the engine sound. Even though each of the tentacles was only as big as an arm of a child, they instantly toppled the truck sideways without any difficulty. Naturally, the case holding the children was thrown out from the truck. The children who were jostled inside the case screamed.

The tentacles reacted to those screams and entangled the case. It seemed that it was a tough case, so the case wasn't crushed or squashed, but the case was dragged toward the elevator.

「Vanessa, Allen. Take care of Emily!」

「Acknowledged!」

「Aah, geez. This is completely out of my field you knoww」

They followed Kousuke's instruction and went to Emily's side to protect her; then they led her away to take some distance from the elevator. Most of the rushing out tentacles was cut apart by Kousuke, but even so, as expected from the two, their skill allowed them to accurately blow away the remaining

tentacles using bullets.

Kousuke judged that it would be fine to leave them to fend for themselves for the moment, and he was going to rescue the children.

However,

「No way I'll let you do that so simply yeah!」

「You-, this shitty bastard!」

Weiss fired his machine gun from the other side of the door. He was aiming at Emily. As expected, a feat of shooting down bullets using bullets could only be done by a certain demon king. It was impossible for Vanessa and Allen.

Therefore, Kousuke couldn't help but defend against that using his kunai to deploy out a barrier. Although it was only for a little while, Kousuke was still being held in place.

「Yoo, American comic bastard! If you are a hero, then don't abandon those pitiful children just like a hero yeah.」

Weiss's disgusting laugh echoed, then in the next instant——it flew out.

Like a spear that was thrown by an expert, countless tentacles stretched out and stabbed the ceiling and walls. And then, by using expansion and contraction, and recoil, something that could be described as a lump of meat appeared from the bottom of the earth.

It was weird and repulsive, like minced meats that were haphazardly kneaded to each other, with tentacles haphazardly growing out from there. That figure stirred up instinctive revulsion from anyone seeing it.

It wriggled with a flabby motion and crawled up like a muddy stream. It scattered around flesh and liquid while moving to the nearest prey. ——Yes, toward the case where the children were inside.

「That case is a solid one, so it will be able to hold for a bit even if it was swallowed by that ruined experiment. Do your best and go all out to rescue those children. We won't mind it, okay?」

A ruined experiment——just as those words stated, the meat lump was a product that was created from a process of an experiment. The reason this

thing ended up as this ugly meat lump was only one was because of a demonic deed that was done for the sake of knowing the limit of【Berserk】's ability.

【Berserk】would repeatedly cause regeneration by forcefully invigorating the cells until it was past the limit of the flesh. Then, what would happen if【Berserk】was continuously administered while also continuously giving healthy and young flesh to the subject? The subject would fuse its former flesh with other flesh in the form of it getting swallowed inside regeneration. Such a thing was repeated.

Like that, what resulted was the worst monster that didn't even retain its shape as a living thing——a Berserk Chimera. It was already incomprehensible just what the former organisms that entered into the fusion were.

It took time to lure this thing from the underground's deepest experiment room to here using any kind of bait. But Weiss believed that it would be impossible to hold back this existence that was wielding the supernatural without using the Berserk Chimera. This was his genuine trump card. That farce and all his talkativeness were for buying time to guide this Berserk Chimera.

Weiss immediately vanished behind the door at the same time as his spoken out parting remark. After the berserk chimera took the children's case, it continued to attack Kousuke and the others without pause using its tentacles like a storm.

Kousuke defended against all those while gritting his teeth hard. Behind him, Emily called to him with a trembling voice.

「Kousuke, those children.....what to do! They have to be saved!」

「.....」

There was no reply. Normally, Kousuke would reply right away with words that were overflowing with confidence, but now he didn't reply right away. A bad premonition welled up inside her. By any chance, perhaps even with Kousuke here, those children were beyond salvation already. Was this the end, just like what Weiss said.....

「Kousu——」

Emily slowly peeked at Kousuke's side profile with an expression that almost

cried. She instantly swallowed back her words unconsciously.

Kousuke was always like a whistling wind or making a troubled smile on his face. Sometimes he showed a serious face, a resolved face, or a nostalgic face. Emily had seen all those faces until now, but she had never seen Kousuke's current face.

There was nothing in it, an expression of "nothingness".

Honestly, she shuddered. The eyes without any emotion in it, staring straight at the berserk chimera, and the expression where all emotion had slipped off cleanly from it, it was as though the person there wasn't Kousuke.

「I somehow, understand. Even though I don't know what your former appearance looked like, I understand somehow.It's scary, isn't it? It's painful, isn't it? You were brought to this kind of place, and ended up like that.....」

Those words lacked intonation. There, not just Emily, Vanessa and Allen also noticed.

Kousuke had "snapped". It wasn't at the level of the anger he showed when Emily was cornered by the security bureau. At that time, there was still some saving grace. The Grant family was in good health and they were already rescued, Chief Magdanese and her group were also people with conviction, and the incident at the research building had a strong aspect as being an accident.

That was why, even though Kousuke was angry at that time, he wasn't totally angry. But, right now was different. What was in front of Kousuke was an inhuman act, an avatar of malice and greed. He understood. Even though he didn't know the details, he understood just what the material used to make the lump of meat before his eyes was. He understood just who was crying and screaming at that time.

That was why, the feeling that Kousuke held——was rage.

「Allen.」

「Ye, yes-」

Allen who was suddenly addressed twitched in reaction. Allen was sweating

coldly from the terror that was silent but surely eroding him. Kousuke commanded at such an Allen still with a voice that was lacking intonation.

「Chase after “that”. Stop him in his place until I catch up after I rescue those children.」

「Ye, YES SIR-!!」

Kousuke stabbed his short sword into the ground and made a path of flames run on the ground. A path that was protected by a flame wall ran straight to the door where Weiss entered. Allen dashed through it.

「Emily.」

「Hy, hyes-」

「Chase after the professor. Vanessa.」

「Yes, Kousuke-san.」

「Protect Emily.」

「Acknowledged.」

Flames ran toward the door Down went through. Emily was hesitating, but Vanessa held her hand and pulled her. Even so, Emily was worried about the children, and also about Kousuke. When she looked back, there, Kousuke was putting on his sunglasses while opening his mouth.

「Don't worry Emily. I'll save those children. I'll destroy this pitiful monster. I'll make “that” regret that he was born. I'll leave only Down to Emily, but I also won't let anyone other than those guys get away. That's why, go.」

「Ye, yes, I understand.Kousuke, please, save those children!」

「Yeah, leave it to me.」

Emily started running, led by Vanessa. The berserk chimera instinctually shirked away from the flame wall, but even so, it still tried to capture the prey by stretching its tentacles in a roundabout way through the ceiling, but all its efforts were pushed back by the barrier from the kunai, and it couldn't approach the prey.

Emily and the others chased after their respective target, and their figures

vanished from the room. Detecting that, Kousuke, no, the abyss lord declared calmly without even taking a cool pose.

「This rage surely belongs to all of you who are toyed with by others as they pleased. In return, I'll dispel your chagrin for you. That's why, please, sleep peacefully.」

The abyss lord who was driven by rage began his battle for the sake of salvation.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, in the last chapter, I said that next would be the climax but.....this chapter is one step behind the climax.

So far as it goes, Shirakome is looking on warmly from managing to put out a cool development following the template "the mastermind is the father" but,

Actually, I wanted to end this all in one go with one chapter.

Everything is the fault of reality and the workplace. I'm sorry.

Next week, I will receive consecutive holidays, so I think I can go until the end.

It will make me happy if you readers can look forward to it.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 218

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

I Wanted, to Have a Date.....

AN: This chapter was late. I'm sorry.

He was running without making any sound while paying the greatest attention to the surroundings, yet his running speed was still top speed. The agent of a nonexistent organization—Allen, was chasing after the escaping Weiss with astounding speed.

It seemed that Weiss was heading toward the installation of this facility's power generator, Allen could see various pipes and electronics, big and small, throughout the corridor.

But at that time, Allen's gaze suddenly caught something that he ought to be careful against. It was a very fine wire that was set up in the corridor inconspicuously. A simple trap.

Allen's face didn't change, his running speed didn't decrease, and he went to the wall and jumped. And then by kicking on the wall, he climbed until near the ceiling, his hands caught one of the pipes, and he flew over the wire like a pendulum.

That jump looked excessive just for jumping over a single wire, but actually, that wire was a bluff, there was an infrared-type trap set up ahead of that wire, so Allen's action was correct looking at the result. It was an instantaneous judgment based on Allen's experience of many years.

「This would be easier if I could run on the ceiling like him though!!」

「Chih. You bastard are also monstrous enough to be able to react to that-」

Weiss, who was hiding behind some cover, aimed at the moment Allen landed and fired. However, Allen also read that ahead of time and got down looking as though he was clinging to the floor the moment he landed, so the bullet futilely passed over above his head.

Still lying down on the floor, Allen pulled his gun trigger without any time lag. His bullet counterattacked Weiss. Weiss leaked out a「Uoh-!」voice, but even so, he managed to dodge by hiding his body with the agility that was on the level of a cockroach.

「Eat this too!」

「Are you an idiot, doing that in this kind of place!?!」

Weiss threw a hand grenade while roaring angrily. It was a cramped place, and furthermore, the place was packed full of pipes that he was unaware of what their functions were. ‘Just what the hell he is thinking throwing explosives in here!’ Allen sprang to his feet even while cursing and aimed in a kneeling posture using both his hands.

The bullet he fired accurately shot through the midair grenade, and it exploded right in the middle of Weiss and Allen. Allen rolled to the passage’s wall at the same time as his firing, and then he covered his whole body with his coat that possessed the material to be bullet-proof, knife-proof, and some impact resistance. Even so, he grit his teeth from the impact that made him feel enough pain while trying to snipe Weiss. At that time,

「Ih!?!」

「Light is with you, I guess?」

Allen’s cheeks twitched from looking at “that” rolling below him. Right after that, *kat-* intense light surged out.

Weiss, who in a sense believed in Allen’s skill, had predicted that Allen would shoot down the hand grenade, so he also threw a flashbang at almost the exact same time.

With this, he ran out of grenades and flashbangs. The double-layered trap and the hand grenade was a preparation to steal Allen’s sight at this moment.

At the same time, when the light was starting to settle down, Weiss sent machine gun bullets at the spot where Allen was. His tactics were flowing smoothly without any hesitation and mercy, brought about by his overwhelming battle experience. He became the target of the JD Agency because he was using this skill of his to accomplish immorality and turned the table on the many police and agents coming to capture him.

He was even able to escape once from an agent of that JD Agency; his skill was something authentic, in contrast with his frivolous attitude.

Although, if it was asked whether that skill could work that easily against the man who was positioned to work directly beside the chief of the state security bureau even from among the JD Agency,

tan-tan-

「Tsua!? Son of a bitch-」

Two gunshots echoed, and at the same time, Weiss's machine gun was blown away. It was merely luck that his fingers didn't get blown up too.

Weiss immediately drew out his handgun to fire back. But, he whispered「That just ain't possible」with a displeased expression seeing what appeared at the space where the flash had settled down.

「It's the standard for a spy to have seven gadgets, right? My organization is a nonexistent one, but the guys affiliated with it are all comparatively a believer of romance you know?」

Allen said so with his hand holding that——a coat that hardened like a shield and blocked the bullets. He waved it lightly. Inside his heart, he was going「That was dangerous just now!」while sweating coldly, but he was hiding it with his usual foolish smile.

「Spare me from a real 007. Don't tell me that the developer of that thing is named Q or something, that's not it yeah?」

「.....No comment.」

「So it's really Q, huh!? Your organization is screwing around too much!」

「No, no comment.」

Both of them were acting the funny man and the straight man like television performers while, at the same time, they pulled their gun triggers. They were trying to take each other's life smoothly while talking jokingly. It was a black communication between a veteran mercenary and a first-class assassin.

As expected, it seemed they had predicted each other's movement as the bullets grazed the cheek of the two who were in a half-body stance. (TN: This half-body stance is like karate stance, where you directed one side of your body toward diagonally behind, so to make your body a smaller target)

Allen made his coat a substitute for a shield and charged forward in a dash. The passage wasn't that wide, so when the shield of the hardened coat that was spread widely launched a shield bash it was impossible to dodge.

Weiss had a future vision where he got pushed down——so he instead stepped forward. If he were to show his back, then he would undoubtedly get shot in the back and die. He judged that his path of survival only existed going forward.

Weiss slid the moment just before he came into contact with Allen. Perhaps he was trying to slip through between Allen's legs, but there was no way Allen would allow that as he swung the shield down——Right before that, however, Weiss fired repeatedly toward the ceiling.

「-」

The fired bullets hit a pipe on the ceiling and came back toward the ground through a complicated ricochet. Allen immediately lifted his coat shield and blocked the ricochet. At that moment, Weiss was sliding on the floor while passing through.....during that time he unsheathed a knife to slice Allen's foot.

Allen blocked that knife using his shoe that had a metal plate inserted inside, and then he discarded his coat and, at the same time, used one hand as a fulcrum and kicked with a reversed foot. The shoe of that reversed foot had a mechanical knife flying out from its tip.

Weiss blocked that using his gun barrel while retreating from the kick's range using the momentum of his sliding. He rotated once and then aimed toward Allen from a kneeling stance. Allen also aimed his gun from a kneeling stance.

「Just die quickly, dog of the state.」

「Please die quickly, mercenary.」

A beat.

tan-tan- tan-

Bullets showered each other from point-blank range. Although the firing line of Allen's gun was slightly shifted by Weiss's knife, Weiss's gun also had its firing line shifted by a retractable baton that Allen took out unnoticed. It finished with only their cheeks being grazed.

jako- Their magazines ran out at the same time with that sound echoing. Weiss pretended to retract the knife in his left hand, and in the middle of that motion, he threw that knife to his right hand. His left hand caught Allen's baton without pause while the knife landed in the right hand's grip, as though it was attracted to there, as he approached to carve Allen's throat.

Allen easily abandoned the baton and stepped in so low that he looked like he was crawling on the ground. He dodged Weiss's murderous blade while he grasped his collar, and then he turned around. He threw up Weiss with his waist's motion.

Weiss that was flung away with a so-called shoulder throw then had his back strike the floor.「Gahah」Air was driven out from his lung.

「Yep, the end.」

「Well, not yet actually.」

Allen pulled out his spare gun, and he pressed the gun muzzle on Weiss's forehead. At the same time, Weiss also talked lightly even with his face grimacing, and he pressed a button on his wristwatch.

In the next instant, a thunderous roar and an explosion blast blew violently from behind Allen. Allen's gun muzzle shifted slightly due to that, and because Weiss's head swung aside, the bullet veered away.

Weiss jumped to his feet and dashed fiercely toward the nearest door. Allen immediately fired, but Weiss stepped on Allen's coat while passing through and sent it flying to block the bullet. Even so, he couldn't avoid all the bullets, and

his shoulder got hit, but he didn't pay it any attention and opened the door with a tackle and jumped inside.

「Good grief, what obstinacy. I can understand how J can let him get away.」

Allen made a bitter expression at his failure of letting Weiss slip away while he immediately moved to resume the chase.

He clung to the door and slowly peeked in. Right after that, a storm of bullets rained down like hail. It seemed that Weiss had a spare machine gun. Most likely, Weiss was someone wary, so he had put weapons here and there throughout his escape route.

Allen took out the magazine from his gun and confirmed his remaining bullet. He only had few bullets left, and there was only one more magazine on his waist holster.

「Haa, I used up too much on the berserkers in the first half of this mission.」

Allen smiled bitterly while exchanging his magazine with the new one and put away the half-used magazine. And then, he pulled out a pin from his wristwatch and dropped it on the floor. Immediately, small legs like an insect's flew out from the pin.

Allen rotated the rotatable bezel of the watch halfway round. Right after that, the windbreak part of the watch turned into a display that projected the image on the floor level.

「This is the prided article of a real-life Q. Just watch it thoroughly to your heart's content.」

The small metallic bug moved its legs with a rattling sound and advanced toward the location of Weiss who was shooting his machine gun while talking provocatively. Allen was watching his watch's display while controlling the small insect using the bezel's rotation.

Like that, the feet of Weiss were visible inside the display. Allen grinned widely, but as expected, the one over there was Weiss, whose obstinacy was on the level of a cockroach. Just before Allen could press the button, Weiss suddenly noticed something below him. He discovered the metallic thing with strange legs crawling below him, and his cheeks twitched grandly.

The next instant, *DOOON*- an explosive sound echoed, and the gunshots stopped.

Allen rushed into the room with his gun readied and guard up. It was a large room. It was an atrium with a height of around two floors, and there was also the second floor with a wire-net type floor. It was a room that had a lot of power generators in it.

When Allen intruded deeper, he could see a crushed machine and a pipe that snapped in the middle and was spouting out white smoke. Allen was instantly alerted in wonder if it was a poisonous gas, but there wasn't any warning from the air composition that was displayed on his watch.

Guessing that it was just vapor, Allen circled around the white smoke while he aimed his gun in a snap toward a cover that had a human presence.

「Yoo, doggy. That thing, ain't it a foul?」

「That is a power I have exactly because I'm a dog of the country. That's not wrong, is it?」

「Don't screw with me. This is why.....I hate, the elite young master.」

Weiss talked frivolously. Allen talked frivolously back with his gun aimed at Weiss once more. But, although there wasn't any carelessness in Allen's eyes, there also wasn't any great cautiousness in it. That was understandable. Weiss had his side largely gouged, and he was already fatally wounded. Allen guessed that he would only have a few more minutes to live.

Weiss vomited out a glob of blood while limply leaning on the wall. He took out a cigarette with a trembling hand. Allen was about to pull the trigger without caring about it but,

「Hey, doggy. You want.....Hydra's, information right?」

「.....No, not really?」

「Is that so? The case, this time, is from that bastard Kaysis's arbitrary..... action. Hydra, has their own, different.....plan. There won't be any harm.....in knowing it, right?」

Indeed, 【Berserk】's case was something Kaysis had done on his own authority

in order to triumph against Hydra's leadership. And then, Kaysis's data didn't include the big plan of Hydra's that would be carried out soon. If Hydra had a different plan in progress, then it was something that the security bureau ought to know.

Therefore, Allen's finger slackened slightly from pulling the trigger. Weiss grinned smugly while his hand carried the cigarette toward his blood soaked lips. His figure enjoying the cigarette smoke didn't look like someone who would die with certainty.

「Why are you going to talk?」

「Just, for harassment. Because they gave me.....this job that's not worth it, yeah.」

Allen showed a slight hesitation, and a beat later, he urged Weiss to continue with his gaze.

The light in Weiss's eyes was dimming already; his voice was small. His voice was whispering in a subdued tone, making it really hard to be heard in this room where there was the echoing sound of vapor jetting out. Without any other choice, Allen got closer to Weiss.

Of course, Allen anticipated that this might be a trap and the moment he got closer Weiss would pull out a knife or a gun. Even so, Allen had confidence in his reflexes, and he judged that he would undoubtedly be the faster one in this situation; he got closer while putting up the maximum caution.

「So.....after this, Hydra.....」

「Please give it your all if you are going to die anyway. I cannot hear anything here.」

「This guy, how harsh..... But see, if you, get this close.....that's enough, yeah?」

Both of Weiss's hands sprang up right after that. He caught both of Allen's wrists instantly with a speed that was unthinkable coming from a half-dead man. Although Allen was calm, he was slightly late in his reaction because he was mostly cautious against a gun or knife, but it wasn't any problem at all getting caught like this.

Allen made the knife inside his shoe to jump out, and he kicked Weiss's stomach. Weiss vomited out blood with his body lifted in the air.

But, here an unexpected situation occurred. Weiss should have no more physical strength with his dying body, and he should be blown away from Allen's finishing blow; but instead, his grip strength was increasing further. He didn't let go of Allen's hands like a magnet.

「-, so this is what they call the great strength when at death's door!」

「Hihih, this is a desperate grab for a fellow traveler to hell.」

Allen kicked repeatedly. He broke Weiss's ribcage, his mechanical knife hacked Weiss's stomach into shreds, and furthermore, he also stabbed Weiss's heart. But, Weiss didn't die. The pressure on his captured wrists was increasing!

「Don't tell me-, the cigarette just now-」

「Spot on-! I'm not gonna let you aim at the head y'knoww」

With both his hands caught, Allen had no way to destroy the head. Being too close like this sealed his legs from destroying the head.

Allen twirled his gun using his fingertip, like a sleight of hand. His pinky held the trigger, and he aimed at Weiss's head with the gun in a reversed position, but Weiss's arm strength that was increasing further didn't allow Allen to aim accurately. Allen was continuously landing strong knife-attached kicks, but the created wounds were smoking white and gradually began to regenerate.

「Hahah, I'm easy to get lonely see. At least accompany me a little in my journey to that world 'kayy」

「You-. Release me already-」

Weiss laughed ghastly while getting drenched in blood. The cigarette that was crammed with【Berserk】had its content soaked with the drug. Weiss was pretending to smoke while actually he was biting off the cigarette and swallowing it. That was why Weiss was transforming bit by bit.

Because his transformation was slow, there was merit in that he didn't change into a berserker right away and could still think. At the same time, there was also a demerit that it would be the end if his head was shot in the halfway

stage before he completely transformed into a berserker.

That was why Weiss was sealing both of Allen's hands.

As expected, Allen was losing patience while he unleashed kicks like a storm at Weiss that was starting to rapidly change before his eyes. However, Weiss's regeneration ability was also gathering speed, and the first stab wound was already completely healed.

「Guh-」

「Then, let's meet on the other side yeah, doggy.」

Weiss's insane words stabbed at Allen who groaned from the feeling that both of his arms were being gripped so hard that they were on the verge of snapping from the pressure. Right after that, a roar rose from Weiss. His muscles enlarged and his wound closed in tremendous speed.

「DON'T UNDERESTIMATE MEEEEEE-」

Allen pulled up both his arms together with a loud yell that was rarely heard coming from him while he struck Weiss's stomach with a fierce kick. Weiss's body was lifted up before it fell down right away, but before that, Allen made his body slide to the floor and put Weiss's body on his lifted leg. And then he pulled both his hands while his leg struck up with all his strength.

The body of Weiss that was in the middle of the transformation got turned over with an overhead throw. He was sent flying face up to the opposite side. Even so, Weiss's hands didn't let go of Allen, but Weiss that was turned over was in Allen's line of fire.

Allen twirled his gun once more with just his fingertip and pulled the trigger repeatedly. He didn't manage to aim at the head, but it was enough to strike the shoulder. Perhaps the bullet hit a good spot because one of Allen's hands was released.

Allen quickly got up and aimed at the other hand that was growing like a log while holding his hand and fired. The moment his hand was released, he rolled away to take some distance while firing toward Weiss's head.

But here there was a further unexpected situation occurring.

「Wha!? He dodged!?!」

「AAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

Yes, he dodged. A berserker dodged. It detected the approaching bullet and leapt aside.

A berserker was a lump of instinct. It would at least cover its weakness the head with its arms, but fundamentally, a berserker would only charge forward like a boar. It could do nothing but charge forward relying on its body and super regeneration. Until now, there wasn't a single berserker that had ever taken "evasive actions".

「Chih, a troublesome guy even after becoming a berserker huuh!」

Allen took out a throwing knife and threw it toward Weiss's eye. Allen thought to fire at the head the moment Weiss dodged. But, as expected, this berserker——Berserker Weiss, didn't seem like a normal one.

The throwing knife was struck down this time without dodging. Furthermore, it didn't keep charging without pause, but it dipped its waist deeply like a beast while groaning「uUUUUU-」and glared at Allen.

Yes, as though it was observing Allen's move.

「Wa, wa wa wait.....this is different from what I heard! A berserker that can "fight" is not a joke-」

Allen was complaining greatly but fired at the same time. The moment Allen aimed his gun, the berserker charged forward with a terrific step. Although that charge wasn't a bull rush like every berserker before this, it was a counter rush that was accompanied with the evasion of the bullet by lowering its stance instantly.

「Seriously, spare me-」

This time Allen jumped to the side. Berserker Weiss rushed through the place he was in just now and created a crater on the concrete floor.

Allen jumped to the side while doing a handstand with one hand and fired further. The bullet approached the head with terrifying accuracy, but Berserker Weiss lifted its hand as though it had predicted it from the start, and the bullet

was blocked by that hand.

Berserker Weiss raised a war cry while grabbing the nearby broken pipe. He tore it off with brute strength and threw it toward Allen.

「HIIIH」

Allen screamed pathetically while clinging to the floor and rolling away. He somehow managed to dodge it. However, the fact that the berserker was using a tool caused Allen's expression to shudder with fear.

But, at that time, a light machine gun on the floor was reflected in the corner of Allen's sight. Most likely, it was the weapon that Weiss used before which probably got sent flying due to the explosive of the insect gadget. Allen leapt so close to the floor that he was hugging the ground and pulled the trigger toward Berserker Weiss that was bending down in preparation for a charge.

dadadadadada- A rhythmical sound resounded, and a swarm of bullets assaulted Berserker Weiss.

「GAaH」

「He dodged as expected! Aa, geez-」

Berserker Weiss dashed to the side at the same time as when Allen pulled the trigger. And then, it sometimes used obstacles for cover while running in a circle around Allen.

gachin- That sound echoed showing that the light machine gun ran out of bullets. Allen's face paled.

With a timing as though it had aimed for the moment the bullets ran out, Berserker Weiss turned on the offensive. Its step made a *DON*- sound as though a cannon had fired, and it approached Allen.

「Shi, shit-」

Allen took out a small cylinder from his belt's buckle and fired it at the pillar of the second floor. A wire stretched out, and its tip then clung tightly and fixed itself on the pillar. Allen pushed his belt's buckler at the same time, and the wire reeled in quickly pulling Allen to the air.

Below him, Berserker Weiss passed through just within a hair's breadth while

smashing some kind of machinery into pieces overenthusiastically.

「This isn't a joke. Just what part of it is a lump of instinct! A berserker that is this used to battle is just.....」

Allen was drenched in cold sweat while taking refuge in the air, and suddenly a conjecture welled up inside from his own words. The berserkers that he faced until now were basically just civilians or fellows that more or less used to some scuffle. That was why charging like a bull was only natural for them if they followed their instincts.

But, if it was a first-class fighter whose body moved on a subconscious level to predict the chance to attack and took the optimum evasive action when in battle, then what would happen if that kind of person was turned into a berserker? A person with a combat skill on the level that it was engraved into their subconscious, would they become a monster that only charged forward like a civilian in the end?

By any chance, the answer to that might be this Berserker Weiss before his eyes. A skilled mercenary that could battle a top-ranking agent equally was transformed into a berserker resulted in this. Of course, it was nothing more than a conjecture; perhaps there was another factor contributing to this.

「Hahah, perhaps this will be seriously bad if this is turned into a weapon.」

Allen reflexively muttered such a thing, but his face tensed right away. Berserker Weiss was tearing apart the fixing implement of a machine that was almost as big as a car so that it could lift it up.

It was obvious what its reason for doing that was.

「Crap crap crap crap-」

Allen manipulated his buckle to cut the wire and fell to the ground. After that, the car-sized machine came flying. The pillar Allen fixed his wire on was pulverized with a thunderous sound, and then the second floor's path was also destroyed by the machine.

Allen landed with an ukemi technique, but naturally, Berserker Weiss didn't overlook that opening. The rock-like fist was already approaching by the time Allen was recovering his stance.

「Gahah」

Allen could only guard by crossing his arms while taking a back-step with all his strength to lower the impact as much as possible. He was blown away horizontally above the ground, and his back crashed on a machine behind him. He couldn't even scream with how intense the impact was, and then his body slipped down slowly to sit on the floor.

'Kahah' Blood was mixed in the breath that he finally could spit out. It seemed that his internal organs were injured. Both his arms limply hung down with their direction facing to strange angles.

But even so, he was alive. What's more, he was conscious, and he was able to watch the Berserker Weiss slowly approaching him. Surely, that was thanks to his miraculous impact neutralization and ukemi technique.

「Aa.....gehoh. This is really, not a laughing matter.Haven't I, bought enough time already? Ayssgate-sa~n, it's fine if you rush here.....gohoh, anytime noww」

Allen smiled bitterly at his body that couldn't even twitch from the impact while calling for help with a listless voice. But, even Allen understood. This was checkmate.

Berserker Weiss had arrived until it was right before him. Perhaps it was just his imagination, but it somehow looked like the berserker was sneering at him.

Allen was always side-by-side with death in his duty. Therefore, he didn't feel fear. However, if he had a regret, then that would be.....

「Before the end, just once. I wanted to have a date.....with a super beautiful woman or girl.」

'Even though I'm also an agent, but why is Jameo Bond that popular while I'm not? Regret.....' Allen whispered.

Berserker Weiss's fist was lifted up. And then just before it was swung down, 「FIREE-」

A command. A storm of bullets assaulted Berserker Weiss. It was a concentrated fire from four directions above. Berserker Weiss couldn't endure

and threw its body between the machinery in evasion.

「Chih. It wasn't finished off from the first attack. Its instinct is really something. Oi, Allen, what's with that berserker?」

The one saying that while jumping down from the second floor using other machines as footholds was,

「Be, Bernard-san!」

「Ou, you really got done in huh, Allen. You didn't get splashed by any liquid, right?」

Yes, the one firing from the second floor was the person who had displayed an outrageous skill of raising death flags in high speed, that Bernard!

It appeared that he had struggled through that deathly battlefield and came here as reinforcements. Allen who was saved by a hair's breadth like a heroine in some tale felt an emotion welling up inside his heart. Driven by that feeling he spoke to Bernard who was making a fearless smile.

「Anyway, I request a change.」

「How regretful. He is infected with【Berserk】already.」

click Bernard's gun muzzle locked on to Allen's forehead. Allen made a justification「I'm lying, lying! You aren't a beautiful girl, but I'm really happy that you came to save me!」in a panic.

Bernard made an exasperated face at the agent whose talkativeness didn't decrease even when wounded all over like this while helping him to stand up.

「Err, you saved me Bernard-san. But, that guy, he is really bad news.」

「No, it will be fine.」

Allen suggested caution against the out of norm Berserker Weiss, but Bernard was indifferent. Bernard opened his mouth with a wry smile toward Allen who looked dubious.

「We are here. So there is no way he isn't here too, right?」

「A. Aa, that's right. Hahah, really I'm saved.....」

Right after that, *GOBA-aAAA-* Berserker Weiss flew out from the cover along

with a terrific impact sound. However, it flew out not by its own action, but with a black whirling sphere settled on a hand palm. That palm was thrust forward in a palm attack stance by Kousuke——no, Lord Abyssgate, which blew away the berserker.

「I received the information from my real body. It looks like you have acted really inhumanly. ——Don't think that you can die easily.」

The lord that was walking out calmly had his eyes filled with rage, his hands unsheathing two short swords. One sword was clad in the azure flame, and the other sword was clad in glimmers that looked like diamond dust. The melting and severing sword of superheat “Enryuuga”, and the ice sword of absolute zero that formed its counterpart, “Touryuuga”. (TN: Enryuuga = Flame Dragon Fang, Touryuuga = Frozen Dragon Fang)

Berserker Weiss made a war cry while standing up, and then it threw pipes and machine parts toward the lord.

The lord stepped in. Right after that, he jumped and rotated midair while stepping lightly on the pipe. And then, without stopping he stepped on the machine parts and splinters flying at him one after another and charged toward Berserker Weiss in a straight line.

Berserker Weiss might've felt a threat because it then tried to dodge to the side. But,

「Where are you going?」

Such a sentence reached the berserker. From right beside the position where it was going to dodge to. At the same time, the figure of the lord approaching from in front of it flickered and vanished. The lord had already switched with an illusion in the middle of jumping by using the skill “Leaf Dance”.

Berserker Weiss wasted no time in swinging its fist. The arm was as thick as a log, and it was swung with a force equivalent to a cannon firing in order to flatten the enemy. And then, something flew in the air. An arm severed from the elbow was rotating in midair.

Berserker Weiss that didn't feel pain launched a deadly attack with its other arm without delay, but the figure of the target had already gone. And then, the

berserker fell on its knee with a jerk because one of its legs was cut and sent flying while encased in ice.

The lord slipped into the blind spot behind the Berserker Weiss after he cut the arm. And then he swung “Touryuuga” while passing through. The blade of ice that was formed to an extreme thinness had a slimness of a single molecule already. The chill coating the blade froze the target instantly.

「AAAAAAAAAA-」

「Who said that you could howl?」

Berserker Weiss launched a backhand blow even while on its knee, but its body was slowly tilting in contrast with its will. What was flying midair was the arm that was launching the backhand blow. What was rolling on the ground was its other leg.

Berserker Weiss that lost its four limbs was starting to regenerate its hands and feet by activating its super regeneration. But, the two short swords were swung again right after the limbs were starting to grow and sent them flying.

After that, it was routine work. The regenerating part was chopped off before it could be restored to normal, and the berserker couldn't escape its state of limbs shortage. It tried to take some distance by prancing up its upper body, but even so, it was pressured down by a whirling black sphere, and it couldn't hope to move because of the suppression of the supergravity.

「You can regenerate however much you want? Fine then. I'll keep you company until you die in that case. Regenerate as much as you like, squirm as much as you like. Until that time when the end arrives.」

The lord's arms went hazy. Each time the limbs of Berserker Weiss danced in midair. In the first place, the amount of【Berserk】that was crammed into the cigarette didn't amount to much.

Berserker Weiss writhed, the state of its instinct was different from other berserkers, and before long, something other than madness was starting to enter its eyes, welcoming that time. The speed of its regeneration dropped down drastically, and the vigor of the rising white smoke was decreasing.

The limit of the regeneration had come.

Its flesh body was gradually shrinking. Due to that, the withered Weiss who was on the verge of death recovered his awareness.

「Son of a bitch-. Damn it, if you ain't gonna accompanying me then just diee」

Weiss didn't stop his cursing and frivolous talk even at this kind of time. In his eyes, there was a disgusting color, that he wouldn't grant them the reaction they wanted from him no matter how much he got tortured.

After all, he would die in less than a few seconds. In that case, he would rather spit out curses even if just by one more. Weiss opened his mouth with that kind of intention, but the lord firmly grasped his head. And then, he took out a five-yen coin crystal that was tied with a string.

「Just an instant is enough to grant you regret and despair.」

「What are, you planning——hih, ah, aAAAAAAAAAAAAH」

A shriek that was unbearable to listen to was reverberating. That was undoubtedly a voice of regret and despair. Weiss was screaming while his body was completely withering and rotting away.

「Sca, scaryy. Aby, just what did you do?」

「Hahah. I don't want to know though.....」

Bernard, accompanied by his subordinates, arrived while lending Allen his shoulder and asked. His expression along with his subordinates were all twitching extremely. Allen was going 'no no' in refusal to hear, but he couldn't move properly, and on top of that, both of his arms were broken, so he couldn't even block his ears.

The lord spoke with an expression that seemed sickened toward Bernard and the others.

「I just showed him a nightmare. A nightmare where he is eaten alive by the dead. For now, I set it so that his mind experienced it a hundred times in a moment.」

「「.....」」

It would've been better if he didn't ask. Bernard and the others were wordlessly holding the same thought inside their heart.

Then, the lord suddenly raised his head. Bernard and the others asked the lord what happened with their gaze, to which the lord spoke.

「It seems it's necessary for me to head for my real body's reinforcement. Bernard. I'll leave the rest to you.」

「Roger. I don't know what is going on, but leave this place to me. I won't let even a single one of the remaining staff here get away.」

The lord nodded at Bernard's words before his figure became smoke *bofun* and vanished.

Right after that, an intense shaking attacked the facility. It was clear that the vibration came from a distant place.

「He is really going at it flashily huh, that Aby. The vibration just now was intense.」

「I think Bernard-san who is calling him with a pet name is also amazing you know?」

Bernard was staring in puzzlement at Allen's words before he pulled himself together and began giving orders to his subordinates.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This time I was late too.

Coupled with the work for publication too, Shirakome's sleeping time is..... heheh

Next week for sure, I'll write the story until the very end in one go for sure!

Please, follow the lord's adventure for just a little bit more.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 219

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

It's Me You Know, Anderson-kun-

AN: ↑

For those who don't understand the meaning of the title, please watch the movie Matrix Reloaded without fail.

Smiths-san's「Me, me, me——and then, me」is strangely pleasing for Shirakome.

The lump of meat squirming before his eyes——Berserk Chimera, didn't try to chase after Allen who chased after Weiss or Emily and Vanessa who chased after Down.

The Katon flame wall blocking the tentacles' path had already vanished. If it was a berserker that was faithful to their instinct, then it would at least try to stretch its tentacles to chase, but this berserker didn't even do that and stopped trying. Surely, most likely, that was because it was cautious against the human in black clothes standing in its way.

「Now then, I don't know just how deep you have carried the case of the children, so I won't give any mercy no matter what you were formerly.」

Kousuke unsheathed two short swords. *shaan* A clear voice echoed and the unsheathed swords were held in a reverse grip and, at the same time, Kousuke's body sunk really low to the floor. It was a stance similar to a crouching start so to speak.

In an instant, the berserk chimera launched countless tentacles. Those tentacles that were fired with a speed that resembled a bullet became like a wall as they attacked Kousuke.

And then, a hard sound, which was really unthinkable when coming from a lump of flesh, resounded as it began stabbing the metal floor.

Yes, they stabbed at a space where there wasn't anyone.

「Chih. As I thought, even the weakness's position is haphazard.」

The sound of someone clicking their tongue and a curse resounded. That voice came from behind the berserk chimera. There, the figure of Kousuke was unmoving with his arms crossed. Looking carefully, the top of the berserk chimera's head was entirely cut off, and a beat later, the lump of meat fell on a distant spot along with a graphic sound *docha*-.

At that instant, Kousuke rushed forward with a momentum that would give anyone who saw it the thought that he liberated the power he saved up, slipped through the barrage of tentacles, and then split the upper head of the berserk chimera.

Although it didn't look like the berserk chimera received any pain, it was spouting out white smoke while the top of its head regenerated in what should be called an instant. At the same time, it created new tentacles and launched them to Kousuke.

(I cannot see the position of its weakness, the brain. In the first place, there is no guarantee that it only has one brain. It's not like I don't have a method to blow it up altogether, but then the children inside will die with that. And then, that super regeneration is a hindrance for me to scrape off its body.....this is difficult.)

Kousuke cut apart the swarm of tentacles, dodged with acrobatic movements, and handed out attacks by using the tentacles as stepping stones. He grumbled inside his heart while analyzing the enemy as a wry smile suddenly emerged on his lips.

To add as a side note, it was also forbidden for him to get touched by the liquid that was scattered when the tentacle was grazed. Even if it was Kousuke, he wouldn't be able to suppress the transformation of his body if he got splashed by【Berserk】.

Then, at that time, the senses of Kousuke, who was pondering on how to

approach this, detected an assault from behind him. When Kousuke immediately twisted his body midair, just as he thought, there were countless tentacles the size of human arms flying toward him from behind.

「Oi oi, so it can also grow from the part that I cut off. Just what kind of organism has this thing consumed that it can do something like that?」

What attacked Kousuke from behind was the lump of meat that Kousuke cut flying before this. It was squirming despite being separated from the main body and grew out slender tentacles.

There were tentacles and flesh, which he had cut apart, lying all over the place. As expected, Kousuke's expression couldn't stop from twitching.

The moment Kousuke muttered「This is bad」, a barrage of tentacles approached from all directions. In addition to that, there was also the lump of meat clinging to the ceiling unnoticed that began attacking like a shower, leaving no place to escape. Their numbers already surpassed three digits.

Normally, it would be a hopeless scene. If the one who was here was the soldiers of the special squad, then they would undoubtedly sigh and make a bitter smile at the same time as their resignation.

But, of course, for the right-hand man of the demon king, something of this level, no, no matter what kind of situation it was, it was an impossible story for him to carry an emotion of resignation.

「——”Juton – Todokienu Kuroki Sei'iki”」(TN: Gravity Escape – Unreachable Black Sanctuary)

Immediately after, four whirling black spheres as big as pinballs expanded around Kousuke. At the same time, all the approaching tentacles crashed to the ground as though they were struck down.

「Abyss-style Assassination Martial Arts – Sword Form——”Senretsu Kokujou Yaiba”」(TN: Flash Rend Black Fortress Blade)

Furthermore, Kousuke lifted both his arms and rotated his two short swords like a pinwheel using the movement of his fingertips and his wrists inversely. The tentacles attacking from overhead were shaved off and blown away as though they were hit by an excavator.

Even the tentacles that circled around the shield of slashes and attacked were repelled back by the kunai that were unnoticeably flying around Kousuke like satellites. Furthermore, those kunai were rotating at high speeds. Not a single tentacle could reach Kousuke.

「Burning all these.....will put the children in danger I guess. Then, let's smash them apart after freezing them——Rage, silver wind. The breath of the eternal world of ice and snow. Hinder the path of the traveler and seize at the cold arm. Thy art the prisoner of the white ice coffin——”Tougoku no Hana”」(TN: Flower of Frozen Prison)

Kousuke lightly made a sound *ton* with his step. Immediately after that, a sound *bikibiki* echoed and the floor was dyed white. Mist was generated as well. With Kousuke as the center, the white wave was spreading as though it was eroding the world. The tentacles and liquid scattered everywhere were frozen altogether.

But, it didn't end with that. The lump of meat which was dyed pure white and hardened was then enveloped by a prison of ice right after that, like a blooming flower.

A cluster of ice flowers was blooming proudly everywhere.

The white erosion also reached the berserk chimera through the floor. Perhaps sensing the danger, the berserk chimera stabbed its tentacles in the ceiling and made its body leap into the air. It already had the composure to launch a random barrage of tentacles to Kousuke despite just escaping from the floor.

However, the tentacles needed for attacking were all touched by the chill that froze them. The berserk chimera obeyed its instinct and severed all of its tentacles by itself. The countless tentacles that bloomed into ice flowers instantly were now falling to the floor.

「There is no way I'll let you get away don't you think?」

Kousuke used the falling ice flowers as stepping stones and jumped toward the berserk chimera. He used the tentacles he cut down and the tentacles approaching wildly as further stepping stones while he somersaulted; then using that momentum, he threw his short sword.

The short sword cut straight through the air like a single streak of light. It stabbed the berserk chimera that had no leeway to evade.

GI, GI, GIIIIII

A bizarre voice reverberated. Kousuke guessed that it was the scream of the berserk chimera that let alone having a mouth, it was doubtful that it even had vocal cords. Inside the space where the scream that sounded like the scratching of metal was echoing, the area that was centered on the stabbing short sword was playing a dissonant sound *bikibiki* as the berserk chimera started to freeze over.

「I won't freeze your insides. I'll shave and smash you from your outer layer.」

If its separated part could still move after getting cut off, and if it could regenerate no matter how much it got slashed, then he would restrain it using an ice coffin, and then freeze all of the parts he scraped off and pulverize them. It was a method that paid attention to the safety of the captured children as much as possible while rescuing them with certainty.

Before long, the tentacles that stabbed into the ceiling and supported its mass were frozen, and they became unable to endure their own weight and snapped. The berserk chimera fell to the floor, and its body's outer part was smashed apart from the impact of the fall.

Squirming lumps of meat could be seen from inside the smashed lump of meat. It was trying to regenerate. But, the stabbing short sword didn't allow that. The mist was coming down faster than the regeneration could start and froze them.

When Kousuke snapped his fingers, the frozen outer layer broke apart once more, and frozen lumps of meat were scattered into small block shaped pieces.

「If I continue to smash it like this until those children become visible——」

‘I should be able to save them.’

Yes, Kousuke was about to say that, but right after that, his cheeks cramped from the squirming presence he felt near him. When he quickly looked around, *piki-, paki-* he could see cracks forming in the ice flowers.

「O, oi oi. This is a joke, right?」

Kousuke unconsciously let out those words. It was understandable. After all, the countless lumps of meat locked inside the ice flowers were squirming and bloating from the inside.

baki- Hearing such a sound, Kousuke returned his gaze to the berserk chimera, and there, the same sight of it bloating from inside entered his eyes.

Kousuke opened his eyes wide. No matter how he looked at it, the lumps of meat in the room, and also the berserk chimera, were increasing in volume. When a human transformed into a berserker, their super regeneration was caused by the repetition of breaking down and regenerating. It could be said to be similar to the phenomenon of muscles swelling up.

But, even that had a limit. It wasn't like a berserker would transform endlessly until it was a giant. It was impossible for them to multiply new flesh from a small fragment of flesh. It wasn't an ability that a human was equipped with.

「No, wait. In the first place, this thing is *stretching out* tentacles.....」

Kousuke suddenly noticed. This thing was stretching out tentacles endlessly——that was an impossible trait for all creatures that he knew about. Even though there were creatures that had tentacles, there shouldn't be any creature that was able to grow several hundreds of it or more.

But, in reality, the berserk chimera before his eyes was propagating itself with a force that could even destroy the ice coffin from the inside using pressure——

「Propagation.....haha, come to think of it, there is this organism called the planarian huh. Even if they are cut, they will regenerate the same specimen, right?」

That was correct. Certainly, the berserk chimera had taken in a lot of organisms. Not to mention animals and insects, it had also taken in plants and so on. Of course, it had also taken in a few human adults and children. And then a lot of planarians were added into that flesh.

Super-regeneration wouldn't occur if there wasn't any flesh that became the base. Then, if that flesh was able to multiply automatically, wouldn't infinite regeneration become possible with that? This was the result of the experiment

that was carried out with an idea that had gone past madness into exasperation.

The berserk chimera had not even a fragment of the souls of the animals and humans that became its base. What it had was a more primitive instinct. —Only the instinct to eat and survive, that was all.

Kousuke shuddered while returning from his own thoughts back to reality, and right after that, all the ice flowers smashed apart.

「These guys here created something like this, just how were they planning on stopping this thing when the time came?」

What was truly frightening was the deed of man. The spirit of inquiry and tenacity, madness that pushed on ahead until the end of the road without considering the future or other people. Just like the magicians of the former world's mad god—Ehitorujue that invited the destruction of themselves.

It would endanger the children if he burned this thing to ash. It was useless to freeze and smash it. If he slashed it, then it would regenerate and multiply endlessly just as much as he slashed. Exterminating it using great firepower would endanger the children. If he was touched, then it was game over.

However,

「Good grief. Just when I thought that I finally went home from a fantasy world, this side is also fantastical like this. It seems that I, no, we are deeply loved by the extraordinary, huh.」

The Kousuke's expression contained no despair as he shrugged with an air of "dear me". He also didn't believe in the possibility that he might not be able to save the children.

Why?

It was obvious.

「So you returned, me.」

「Yeah, I have returned, me.」

「I too, me.」

「Bernard.....it was seriously just barely for him. That guy is really loved by the god of death so much that it's a wonder how he has been able to survive until now y'know. But it looks like he is also loved as much by the god of fortune.」

The berserk chimera had swelled up until it was twice, no, triple its former size while making a bizarre scream. And then, the innumerable number of lumps of meat had already transformed into tiny berserk chimeras. Clones appeared at both sides of and behind Kousuke while all those were surrounding them.

These were the clones that accompanied Bernard's group and the other squads.

The clone that reinforced Bernard had a faraway look. Its information was also shared with Kousuke's real body, so he also got a faraway look from the scene「you are already a fantasy」where Bernard was continuously collecting death flags per second; however, he was also continuously escaping from the clutches of the god of death due to strong fortunes that continuously came at him per second too.

GIIIIIIIIIIIH!!

A wave of flesh attacked at the same time as the shriek. Yes, it was a wave. The small chimeras were also adding onto it, turning the attack into a grandiosely spreading wave that looked like a thick membrane. It spread out everywhere toward Kousuke and his clones.

「Now then, the clones have also come back, except the one guarding the Grant family, so let's settle this quickly.Haa, I actually don't want to use this thoughh. I rea~lly don't want to use this thoughh. But there is no time, and it's for the sake of the children. It can't be helped, huh.」

Kousuke leapt on the roof of a large truck and looked at his three clones that were in the three corners of the room. They were showing a wry smile, or possible a melancholic expression. He then took out something from his breast pocket.

It was a crimson jewel.

The shining jewel the size of a pinky had a metallic vine coiling around it, and

it was linked with a thin chain. Kousuke wore that on his neck, and then he gripped the crimson jewel tightly.

Perhaps the berserk chimera had its survival instinct stimulated by Kousuke's freezing magic because ahead of his gaze there was its figure already swelling up until it nearly reached the ceiling without stopping its regeneration and propagation. The case holding the children seemed tough, but surely it would reach its endurance limit soon. There could be no more postponement; they needed to be rescued even for a second faster.

Then, there was no way he could hesitate.

No matter how much Kousuke himself shirked away from it. No matter how much compensation he would need to pay for it.

He liberated it.

That taboo power! It once caused even the demon king to raise an anguished voice, the true and tremendous power!

「Endure this, my willpower! Here we go! ——"Limit Break-“!!!」

Right after that, a crimson magic power burst out from Kousuke. The intense magic power spiraled and blew up violently as though it pierced the ceiling. Magic power and storm howled thunderously. Kousuke's figure was enveloped by the radiance of the demon king and became indistinct.

The berserker chimera pulled back the tentacles that it was going to stretch out. It was as though it was getting frightened of the existence before its eyes.

Ki, GiiiiiH The berserk chimera cried. A voice resounded toward it from inside the crimson tornado.

「O pitiful existence. Your time of liberation has come.」

That voice sounded as though it reverberated from the whole space. The crimson torrent was starting to converge, and a shadow of human appeared from inside the dazzling radiance.

The black silhouette took a step forward from the large truck. Naturally, it didn't fall down or anything. A ripple appeared in midair, and the shadow advanced on it.

「This abyss lord, will save thee.」

The raging magic power torrent dispersed in a flash. In exchange, the crimson radiance was increasing in might and enveloped the shadow. The shadow swung one hand widely and turned his body magnificently. The shadow lowered one leg slightly, and his other hand moved toward his chest. His sunglasses glittered with a flash despite the impossible angle.

Shadow.

Yes,

「My name is Kousuke E Abyssgate-! The noble of the abyss, and the right hand of the demon king! The next patriarch of the head reaper rabbit (planned)-! I am the one that brings salvation and the end for thee! Now, welcome it with the shriek of heavy thunder!」

It was the abyss lord who was highly spirited more than usual!

The berserk chimera went, ‘anyway, tentacles first!’, it attacked following its instinct.

「EE—XCELLEENT-! No matter what is going on, it’s a good thing to not hesitate.」(TN: The ‘excellent’ is said in broken English, ‘eeekusereentoo’)

The lord who finally used Western language called a clone to appear in front of him. The clone destroyed the tentacles using “Enryuuga”. Behind the clone that became a shield slashing down the tentacles, the lord pushed up his sunglasses sharply while continuing his words.

「Although, whether it will work or not is a different matter. Fix your eyes. At the true form of the endless abyss!」

Right after that, multiple presences were born. A further four clones were created *from the clone* that became the lord’s shield.

Not only that but besides the original three clones that evacuated to the room’s corners, four clones materialized at each of their sides.

Those four clones leapt toward the chimeras, and at the same time, each clone created four clones midair. Those four clones then created four more clones. And from those four additional clones came a further four clones. Four

clones, to four clones, to four clones, to four clones-!

——Abyss Lord’s Exclusive Limit Break Artifact “Last Zell(just don’t use it on me okay?) Ver.2.1”

The last derivative skill of the “Assassin” vocation, “Abyss Lord”, originally raised the foundation ability of the user, breaking the limit along with the passage of time. The crimson jewel that was bestowed by the demon king blew away this passage of time and forcefully multiplied the user’s ability by five times.

And then, regarding this Abyss Lord’s activation state——Kousuke divided it into five stages that he called “Depth I” up to “Depth V”——He would be able to create one more clone when he entered “Depth III”, and when he entered “Depth V”, the clones that originally could only be created by the main body of the abyss lord could then be created by the clones themselves too.

It would usually take a considerable amount of time for Kousuke to reach this “Depth V”, but Last Zell cleared away that limitation.

However, naturally, there was compensation for it.

「「「「「「「「「「The abyss is without end——」」」」」」」」」」」

The lord multiplied into sixty-four people almost within an instant. They charged from four directions while saying something simultaneously.

The tentacles stretched out from the small chimeras that were scattered everywhere inside the large underground parking area, and with the tentacles that were launched from the main body, their number was already enough to form a cage of piercing spears that left no place to escape. Even if some of them got mowed down by the short sword shining with the azure flame, it was a herculean task to handle all of them.

Half of the sixty-four lords were cut down within an instant. However,

「「「「「「「「「「There is no end to the darkness of the hell」」」」」」」」」」」

In the next moment, more than 160 lords manifested. Using their skills and bodies, they became the shield for the clones behind them and cut open a path of survival.

「「「「「「「「「「There is no hope to capture the abyss——」」」」」」」」」」

The small chimeras widened the membrane of flesh in an attempt to swallow the lords. The attack with a vast surface area was already an area attack. The lords used other clones as stepping stones, or they threw the others to escape from the range of the membrane. The rest enveloped their bodies with Katon and launched kamikaze attacks at the small chimeras.

「「「「「「「「「「There is no meaning in touching the abyss——」」」」」」」」」」

No matter how many of them were pierced, no matter how many of them were splashed with liquid, in the first place, the clones weren't made of flesh despite having a solid body. There was no way the clones could be altered; the small chimeras were helpless against the overly extravagant suicide bombing skill.

「「「「「「「「「「It's a pipe dream to destroy the abyss——」」」」」」」」」」

The number of lords that disappeared from suicide bombing already surpassed a hundred easily; however, by the time a beat or two passed, three hundred lords began attacking in waves.

「「「「「「「「「「Despair to the resentful——」」」」」」」」」」

They were pierced and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place.

They were pulverized and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place.

They were smashed and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place!

「「「「「「「「「「Hope for those who searched——」」」」」」」」」」

The small chimeras were reduced to ash one by one in succession with certainty by unceasing attacks that had no hesitation of being a sacrifice. The berserk chimera was surrounded by more than three hundred lords and got its body thoroughly scraped off from the outside.

「「「「「「「「「「O you that stand in our way, engrave into that body」」」」」」」」」」

G/IIIIII-, the berserk chimera shrieked as though to drive away the terror it

felt. It shrank its body for a moment, and right after that, it launched tentacles in every direction. What was different about that, was that all its tentacles that previously were as thick as a child's arm, were now reduced to the size of a finger.

It might be sensing the danger of being obliterated. It might be doing this to fulfill its survival instinct. It seemed to optimize its attack method toward the enemy.

It would be appropriate to call the thin and sharp thrusts as an intense rain. They were assaulting straight ahead, from the ceiling, or from the floor. The flesh thrusts that might reach in the several thousands were a symbol of despair.

More than a hundred lords were terminated by that.

「「「「「「「「「「「Moan from the endless nightmare」」」」」」」」」」」

And so, it was opposed by a thousand lords.

They wielded a short sword of azure flame, but be that as it may, the weapon they utilized was their own body. Like a nightmare without end, each vanishing was filled with manifestation, and each time the number was increased in an infinite hell. Even with Last Zell put into operation, it didn't change that he was in the "Abyss Lord activated state". His spec that was continuously increasing finally outdid the propagation and regeneration speed of the berserk chimera.

「「「「「「「「「「「We art the incarnation of the abyss. The dream of darkness, the black ephemeral, everything—」」」」」」」」」」」

This was exactly, the right hand of the demon king.

This was exactly, the true form of the one that was said by his comrades to be "actually the one who was nonchalantly on the level of humanity's strongest".

This was exactly, what accomplished that grand feat of inflicting a scratch on that demon king.

More than a thousand abyss lords launching unceasingly, multiplying chuuni speech, and gestu— —not that, waves of attacks without end!

「Lukewarm-. Do you think you can bring me down with something of that

level! If you wish to drive away the abyss, then you need to bring at least a gatling railgun!」

The name of him who spoke of such absurdity, let's say it, one more time.

「Now-, this is the closing of the curtain! You can boast to king Yama in that world-. You can say, that the one who granted me my end is that person! Yes, it's by this me, Abisuuge—to-!」

The lord yelled his own name a bit like a native speaker (?), or rather, his pronunciation sounded like his tongue got rolled up. The lord then crossed his arms with the short sword, still in a reverse grip, as his body bent forward with tension.

The small chimeras were already annihilated. The regeneration and propagation of the berserk chimera also couldn't catch up anymore; its body had been reduced to the size of a big truck.

Like that, one of the clones scraped off the flesh even while its body was pierced by tentacles. At that place, a solid glitter could be seen faintly. Without a doubt, that was the case where the children were locked in.

「Gather-, my compatriots-. This is the time for salvation!」

The lord's order thundered. Several dozen clones lined up instantly in front of the lord and took the same stance.

The lords grinned broadly with fearlessness, and his eyes opened widely in a snap (Warning: It was done behind the sunglasses, so other people couldn't see it).

「Mine abyss, can you see through it? ——Abyss-style Martial Art – Attack Form Secret Finishing Move【Kokusou – Arashi Kage Ryuuha(Surging fang, shadow claw, know the nightmare of the dark abyss)】–!!」(TN: Black Phantom – Storm Shadow Flow Rending)

The abyss lords sprinted. They became a single vertical row and charged the berserk chimera.

The berserk chimera tried to launch its tentacles, it tried to leap and become a cannonball with its lump of meat, but the clones in the front row handled it,

and even if they couldn't handle it and vanished, the next lords would eliminate it.

And then, the clones that arrived at the berserk chimera in the blink of the eye used their bodies to whittle the flesh wall down and got annihilated. The following clones each recklessly hurled themselves to the berserk chimera and opened up a hole with certainty on one point of the flesh body!

It was a storm-like assault without any pause by the black shadows. That waves of attacks that could be mistaken as a single great lance, it looked like, yes.....

Jet Streao Attack!

In the next moment, a sound *boba*- came into hearing, and the flesh on the other side of the berserk chimera was blown away. At the same time, a lord flew out from there. A beat later, a case that was wrapped with steel string flew out.

The lord rotated in midair and swung his short sword at the case that was flying and following him. The case was instantly split apart into pieces, and three screaming children flew out from there.

It seemed that they didn't faint even after getting swallowed by the berserk chimera. Normally, anyone would lose consciousness from excessive fear but..... What could be done now was only to pray so that they wouldn't get traumatized by this.

The lord, along with his clones, caught the children that were thrown out in midair and landed lightly.

「Boy, it's safe already.」

「E, eh?」

The boy that was let down was looking around with greatly restless eyes due to his great confusion. And then, the boy witnessed the unrealistic scene of countless humans with the same appearance surrounding the berserk chimera, and he exposed his shock with「EeEEEEH!?」.

The boy and girl that were let down by the clones beside him were also

similarly flustered while on the verge of tears.

「Hmm. I guess this is a bit too intense for children. But, I ask you to be relieved. This nightmare is over already. I'm ending it!」

The lords spread out. In the center was the berserk chimera.

While the eyes of the boys and girl turned into dots, the lords simultaneously touched one hand to their sunglasses (of course, the stylish pushing up motion couldn't be forgotten), they averted half their body slightly behind, and then their other hand pointed quietly toward the berserk chimera.

「「「「「「「「「「The sky of hell, the world of fabrication, the revolving black sun——」」」」」」」」」」

That was a chant. The only magic that the lord learned, the magic of destruction that once tore down the logic of the world.

「「「「「「「「「「The night sky collapses, the star of calamity shines darkly. What is released is a fragment of the abyss——」」」」」」」」」」

A finishing move among finishing moves that couldn't even be invoked by the lord if he wasn't in a state of "Depth V".

「「「「「「「「「「Converge, disintegrate, swallow without pause, smash without stopping——」」」」」」」」」」

Sparks surged. It was a phenomenon of electrical discharge that looked like black lightning. It was generated with the berserk chimera as the center.

The berserk chimera launched its tentacles looking somewhat desperate, but the clones blocked them in front of the chanting lords and cut them down altogether.

「「「「「「「「「「That is a world of interstice without light. The embrace of demise. The birth of a new providence——」」」」」」」」」」

And so, that thing propagating into the world, which destroyed even the Holy Precincts——the attack of the protector that brought about the dawn.

The main body of the lord made a beautiful turn that was without any meaning, and then along with a really magnificent pose, he spun the last sentence, and let it resound to the world.

「Be swallowed by the infinitude of darkness and perish——Gravity magic ultimate secret art【Kokutenkyuu(black whirling darkness of abyss)】」(TN: Black Heaven Suffering)

At the center of the surging black sparks, a small black sphere manifested.

The sphere was whirling in disorder, and right after that, it swelled up to a size with a diameter of a meter and began to suck anything and everything in the surroundings with a fierce might. No, perhaps it should be said that rather than sucking, it was already twisting the space altogether while compressing it to the center.

——Gravity magic “Black Heaven Suffering”

It was the gravity magic’s secret art that the liberator Miledy Raisen once used in order to save the world.

Compared to what she used, this magic here was a shoddy one where its immaturity was standing out. But, even so, here in this place, it possessed enough strength to destroy this monster that could possibly regenerate and propagate if there was even just a fragment of its cell remaining——it was truly legendary magic.

GIIH, GIIIIIIH!!

Perhaps that should be called its shriek of death and agony. The berserk chimera was pulled in as though the lump of meat was crumbling from the edges, expelled toward a world of super compression and destruction.

A beat.

The large truck that was entangled by stretched out tentacles so that the berserk chimera wouldn’t get pulled in was sucked in without any resistance and crushed by the pressure. In the end, the berserk chimera became completely terminated.

The black celestial sphere shrunk before vanishing as though it melted into space. At the same time, the many clones also dispersed, as though to say that they had finished their role.

The end was very silent.

「.....Onii-chan, who, are you?」

The boys and girl forgot their trembling, their crying, and also their huddling with each other. Their heart was stolen by a piece of legend before their eyes. One of them asked with a small voice toward the lord while still feeling astonished.

The lord looked back over his shoulder. The gaze of the little children turned toward him.

The lord went「fuh」toward them, and then he answered while sharply pushing up his sunglasses.

「Oneself? I am.....just a hero that you can find anywhere.」

Thinking that it would be inappropriate to say things like “demon king” or “abyss” toward the cornered children, the lord answered after showing a thinking gesture for a while. Hearing that, for a moment the children looked puzzled and they looked at each other’s face.

But, the next moment, they showed a smile that was like a blooming flower. It was the greatest sparkling bright smile, one that children would show toward a hero just like in a movie. It was a smile that was overflowing with conviction, that heroes certainly existed, with admiration, and with hope filling their heart——it was the greatest reward there was for a hero.

The lord that received that——crumbled down right after.

「O, Onii-chan!?!」

「Hero-san!」

「Ninja-lookalike something-san!」

The children rushed in a panic toward the lord that abruptly fell on all fours with his head hanging down. And then, their face approached looking worried, and they heard that whisper.

「Hahah fuhiih, I messed up saying “oneself”. Even I don’t understand what I’m saying.....it hurts, my heart hurts~」

The children lifted their face and exchanged gazes once more. Even though they had no words, what they wanted to say was conveyed to each other

clearly.

That was,

——Just what is a hero?

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

When I wrote in high spirits, the number of letters become like this.....

I will post one more chapter today or tomorrow.

=>Was what I thought, but I forgot my Sunday work.....

I'm sorry, looks like the update will be as usual.

I also wrote this in my activity report, but Overlap-sama's homepage is uploaded with the newest chapter of the comic version.

Kick rabbit is really bad news.

If you are interested, please go take a look without fail.

Also, it's also uploaded on the homepage, but volume 4 seems to be for sale.

Please treat it well.

It seems the next update will be at 6 P.M. Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 220

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Berserk, Was in Your Heart Right From the Start

go-go-go That sound that sounded like earth rumbling, and impact sound *DON-* that resounded to the bottom of stomach, could be heard.

And then the one who screamed cutely「Hyaah」to that while hopping *pyon* was Emily who was chasing after Professor Down.

Vanessa, who was running beside Emily, wasn't perturbed at all. Perhaps also because it was just the two of them right now, Vanessa was currently in the cool beauty Vanessa-san mode like when they met for the first time. Seeing Vanessa like that, Emily looked down feeling a little embarrassed.

「An expression of shyness—priceless.」

「Aa, yep. Even when you are in work mode, the inside is still Vanessa.」

While the sound of *gan-gan-* from the shoes hitting the metal floor was resounding, Emily made a dry smile at Vanessa who was saying that kind of thing with a crisp expression.

「At any rate, Kousuke-san is really going at it flashily.」

「You're right. That must be just how absurd that berserker is.」

「A lump of meat—just what in the world, that.....」

Emily spoke her deduction to Vanessa's whisper. It was in line with the answer that Kousuke reached personally. It was a deduction that showed the depth of humanity's sin.

The berserker chimera possessed the ability of regeneration and propagation that humans, in general, couldn't possibly stand a chance against. When

Vanessa heard the true identity of it, her expression moved slightly. That wasn't because she was worried for Kousuke, it was something that was directed to Emily who could talk about her deduction so calmly.

「I understand now that it has absurd abilities but.....Doctor Grant, you don't look like you are particularly worried.」

Emily felt the glance of Vanessa on her. However, Emily replied without averting her gaze from straight ahead.

「I am worried. No matter how strong Kousuke is, there are many ways things can possibly go wrong. He might even get injured. It was the first time I saw Kousuke that angry, so I'm also feeling uneasy that he might do something reckless.」

「Is, that so?」

Even so, Emily looked relatively calm. Vanessa tilted her head at that. Seeing Vanessa like that, Emily smiled wryly while continuing to speak「But」.

「Even so, that person.....is my hero after all.」

That was why she believed. That no matter what kind of difficulty he encountered, no matter what kind of irrationality he was exposed to, no matter what kind of pinch he fell into, in the end, he would surely overcome it all and fulfill his promise. He would save the children, liberate that pitiful existence from the wedge of this world, send flying that mercenary who was rotten to the core and then rush to her side. Yes, she believed.

「That's why, I, I have to do what I ought to do. I have come here by acting selfishly. I cannot afford to be flustered or anything. Looking back will be an insult to Kousuke who believed in me and sent me ahead.」

「.....」

Vanessa kept sending sidelong glances at Emily. And then, she nodded「yep yep」as though she understood something.

「Doctor Grant.」

「What?」

Emily stared straight ahead and advanced without hesitation. A smile

emerged on Vanessa's lips while she spoke.

「You are a good woman. Surely, Kousuke-san too will accept you. Leave the hotel reservation to me.」

「Bufuh!? Wha, what are you meowtering out!? Really, what are you meowtering, Danessa!」

Emily slid down due to the flow of the talk that suddenly went toward a vulgar direction. She almost kissed the floor lightly. She stood up in a hurry and started running once more, then with a reddening face she glared piercingly at Danessa. She prepared the firing of her cat punch.

Although, the Vanessa in question was making a puzzled expression instead. That irritated Emily excessively.

「Doctor Grant. In a movie or film, in the last scene, the main character will kiss or bed the heroine. In the case this time too, it will be the best if it's concluded with Kousuke-san and Doctor Grant acting a passionate bed scene. Leave the scene recording to this me, Vanessa.」

「Be be be be be, bed scene!? Idiot-. Danessa you idiot-! There is no way we will do something like that! No, I'm not saying that we will never do it but..... that, I only thought a little about it, like 'I too someday will~', but if I'm asked by Kousuke it's not like I'll refuse.....wait that's wro—ng-! That's not it! Or rather, what's with you! What do you mean recording huh! Just what kind of position!」

「Any kind of event needs to have a memento about it left behind. So please feel relieved. I'll also participate in the middle. A sticky and wet, passionate threeso—」

「Don't say any more than that-!」

Emily howled. Her straight-man skill had already reached the maximum number. At the same time, a cat punch was let fly. That punch which was unleashed under the straight-man skill splendidly bored in on Danessa's cheek.

「? Why, was I punched?」

「This person is hopeless already. I have to ask Kousuke to turn you into a

splendid villager.」

Surely, Vanessa was gifted with the skill Serious Breaker. Emily was feeling disheartened but still managed to resolve herself to use the final option.

Like that they advanced forward, passed through several doors, and before long, the two of them came out into a passage with a waterway in it. It seemed that they had passed through an underground passage below the research facility and came out in the water purification facility.

After they passed by a place that had several things that seemed to be pipes and tanks lined up, the two of them put their hands on the door in front of them. Vanessa made Emily back away while she entered the room.

That room seemed to be placed above, and was wholly dedicated to, a water tank. Half of the room was used up by machinery while the other side of the fence became a watering place.

Perhaps this was a place to temporarily store the water that was flowing in from the waterway. It seemed that it was being opened right now, so under the floor was a fierce water current that was flowing toward somewhere.

It was a vertically long room, so they could see a stair that continued to an upper floor, a passage, and then a door. The door of the second floor was located at the southern end of the room, and there was a bridge-style passage that connected both doors.

Emily and Vanessa sent their gaze toward the door of that second floor——

「Ah, teache——」

「Doctor Grant-」

There was a flapping lab coat. It was clear whose coat it was. Emily was trying to call out because Down's figure had vanished to the other side of the door. However, Vanessa pulled Emily closer to her cautiously.

Right after that, *gan-* a loud voice entered their ears. Something fell behind Emily and Vanessa, in front of the door they had just gone through. When they looked back in surprise, there was a large rectangle case the size of a Boston bag there. It was the thing that Down carried, along with a leather bag, when he

escaped. It seemed that he threw it at the time when Emily and Vanessa entered the room.

The sound *batan-* of the door on the second-floor closing resounded.

At that moment,

「「「「「KIIIIIIIIIIII-」」」」」

Such cries struck the two's eardrums, and at the same time, the case bloated up from inside, and it was destroyed. It seemed that it wasn't made from a material that was really tough in the first place as the cracks spread in the blink of an eye and the clasp snapped.

Instantly, something leapt out and attacked Emily and Vanessa. Vanessa placed Emily behind her for protection while she fired.

However, that creature's speed wasn't normal. Also, its movement was strangely irregular, and so the bullet Vanessa fired missed.

That creature kicked on the floor and leapt toward her face right away; however, Vanessa only narrowed her eyes quietly without even any agitation. Her long leg kicked up vertically to deal with it.

go- The thing was kicked up together with the vivid sound of bones breaking; it then twirled in midair before it then crashed on the floor some distance away.

「That is.....a monkey.」

「Seems like it. It looks like an adult, but seeing that case's size, it seems that before this it was an infant monkey.」

A bullet struck the infant monkey in a flash when it slowly stood up. The moment it raised its face a splendid headshot finished the berserker animal——Berserker Monkey, and like that it crumbled down and white smoke rose from its corpse.

However, they couldn't let their guard down. The reason was the presences that spread out to surround the two of them——the Berserker Monkeys still numbered four in total.

「Strange.」

「.....Indeed. Doctor Grant. Please back down slowly to the wall. Toward that gap between the machine and the pillar.」

Vanessa guessed the meaning of Emily's mutter, and she increased her cautiousness to the maximum while slowly backing away as though to make herself a shield.

Yes, they had the leeway to back away. The berserkers that usually rush ahead following their instinct were taking a fixed distance from Vanessa and Emily, as though they were observing the situation, or they were being careful.

Actually, these Berserker Monkeys had wariness toward danger instilled inside them using a method similar to the Pavlovian dog experiment. It was an experiment to make berserkers that usually only rush forward foolhardily cope to a certain degree toward firearms. Seeing a gun muzzle and hearing a gunshot, those conditions along with the awareness that "something painful would come flying", at the same time, were planted into them.

It could be seen whether the experiment failed or not from this. The four berserker monkeys were surrounding Vanessa and Emily. Their wariness was plain to see. However, they also didn't retreat due to their instinctual belligerence, or their desire to eat.

Vanessa made Emily withdraw to the gap between a machine and a pillar before she pulled the trigger as though to say that she didn't give a damn about that wariness.

However, the berserker monkeys who tried all they could to not stand in front of the gun muzzle were already out of the firing line by the time the trigger was pulled.

「So this means that even without an antidote, the progress of converting the drug into a weapon is advancing steadily, isn't it.」

Even an expert marksman like Vanessa couldn't hit the target easily in front of the berserker monkeys that were taking evasive actions with all their strength by using their beastly agility.

gachin- Such a sound rang out, and the gun's chamber was fixed in place in a slide-out position. It ran out of bullets.

As though aiming for that moment, the berserker monkeys went out to attack simultaneously.

Vanessa was in danger—was how it seemed.

「An agent of the security bureau isn't so soft that they can be taken off guard by the likes of monkey.」

That muttered words were the truth. Vanessa's hand thrust out smoothly toward one of the assaulting monkeys, and the moment that hand made contact, the monkey was blown away in another direction.

And then Vanessa stepped forward without pause and threw the empty gun magazine she had taken out. A berserker monkey rapidly approaching from the left was checked with that before Vanessa crouched down swiftly and launched a fierce upper roundhouse kick.

By crouching down, the berserker monkey that approached from the right lost sight of its target, and it sailed over above Vanessa's head. The monkey that leapt from the front received a fierce roundhouse kick that sprang from a blind spot and got blown away.

The left berserker monkey that got checked by the empty magazine came flying in with a time difference. Vanessa had recovered her posture by that time, and she thrust out her arm once more.

The berserker monkey opened its mouth with a shriek *kiiii-*; however, in the next instant, the monkey felt a faint touch on its arm, but at the same time, its field of vision reversed, and it fell into a panic. Then it noticed that it had received a severe impact on its back and was staring at the ceiling.

And then, a gun muzzle cut into its field of view. The sense of danger instilled into it ordered it to evade but—too slow. *pan-* A light sound rang and with it a wind hole opened in the berserker monkey's forehead.

The berserker monkey that was the first to be blown away in another direction was going along the ceiling and assaulted from overhead.

But, as expected it couldn't reach. A hand that thrust out in a flowing motion softly touched the berserker monkey's head as though in a caress, and then it was forced into a backflip with fierce momentum. Even the physical ability of

the monkey was in vain, and the berserker monkey crashed on the ground. It then met the same fate as the previous monkey.

Without even any time to wake up, a shot to the head splattered its brain.

The last monkey moved as though it was crawling on the ground in order to bite at Vanessa's leg. In an instant, a knee fell down. Perhaps because of its instinct, the berserker monkey leapt to the side right away, but its wrist was grasped.

Its wrist was twisted, and its joint was instantly locked. For a berserker that didn't feel pain it was possible for it to shake off the hold without balking at getting a broken bone, but even so, for a few moments, it couldn't avoid moving while following the limit of its body's mobility. And then, the berserker monkey's vector of inertia and center of gravity were directed at that instant, and it quickly got pressed down with its face against the floor.

A knee fell on its back to stop it from moving. Because the right point was pressed, it had no room to use its physical strength. It wasn't even given a chance to even struggle. *gorit*- The gun muzzle pressed on the back of its head and fired its bullet with no hesitation.

「With this it's all of them.」

Vanessa's sharp gaze ran through the surroundings.

What she used was a technique of jujitsu and aikido. Vanessa's body was that of a female. No matter how much she tried to deny it, it was a fact that her pure physical strength was inferior to males. That was why she polished numerous techniques based on 'soft and fair goes far'.

What about powerful offensive abilities? A single bullet would serve that purpose. No matter how muscular the opponent was, even if it was against a monster, she could knock them down unquestionably if only one of her hands could touch them. For the rest, she just needed to pull the trigger.

This was the strength of Vanessa who was said to be at the top level in close-quarter combat among the agents that belonged under the security bureau. Even though recently she was called as Danessa a lot, her strength was the real thing.

——That was exactly the reason he created this moment because he didn't underestimate the people of the security bureau by any means. The moment when Vanessa was away from the protection target.

「Agent, protect her if you can.」

「-, Doctor Grant!」

Unnoticed, Down's face peeked out from the door on the second floor with a gun muzzle aimed. ——Toward none other than Emily.

Vanessa leapt in front of Emily as though she was flying. It was at the same time as when Down fired.

A dry bursting sound rang consecutively. Vanessa's body jerked. Fresh blood scattered in a splat and dirtied Emily's cheek.

「Kahah, gaa, a」

「Vanessa-」

Vanessa crashed on the ground and rolled several times. She then tried to stand up right away, but the impact clogging her lungs made her unable to breathe well. She could only crouch from the intense pain cruising through her whole body as she was unable to move.

Emily, whose facial expression changed, rushed to her. She made Vanessa face up and embraced her inside her arms. Blood could be seen flowing from her shoulder, arm, and thigh, but Emily couldn't see any blood from the torso that got shot first. Even while panicking, Emily took off the suit's jacket and took a look. There she saw four bullets squashed inside a bulletproof vest that blocked those bullets.

It seemed that the bulletproof jacket barely saved her life. Although, putting aside the gunshot wound in her arm and shoulder, the bleeding on her thigh was at the level that couldn't be left alone. Most likely an important artery was grazed there.

「As I thought, I'm no good in something like this. Just what do I need to do to get a headshot I wonder?」

Footsteps rang while Down advanced on the upper passage of the second

floor. He stopped in the middle and aimed his gun while staring at the defeated berserker monkeys. There weren't any particularly strong feelings that could be felt from his words and voice, whether from shooting a person or aiming a gun at Emily. Emily bit her lip strongly from that.

But, right now wasn't the time to complain. Emily took out a container that looked like an experiment vial from her breast pocket. She opened the lid and made Vanessa drink half of it while she poured the remaining bit by bit on the wounds.

Immediately the blood that was flowing out like a river was clearly lessening. Vanessa's pained breathing was also recovering its regularity slightly.

「.....My god. Emily. Emily, by any chance, have you improved【Berserk】in this short amount of time? Or is that a product of an idea that you didn't tell anyone, even me? As expected, you are really outrageous.」

Down's eyes were shining ominously at the unknown medicine that was displaying a recovery ability that was impossible for existing medicine.

However, his deduction was completely off the mark.

What Emily used was healing medicine from another world that Kousuke handed to her in preparation for the worst case scenario. As expected, its effect couldn't give a complete recovery until the bullets remaining inside the body were taken out, but it was able to at least stop the bleeding completely, soften the pain, and heal to a certain degree.

Vanessa didn't look like she could move properly, but even so, she conveyed that she was okay with her gaze. Emily sighed in relief.

And then, her gaze struck at Down who was looking down at them from the second floor. It was a calm gaze; however, a rage that couldn't be hidden was dwelling there.

「Teacher. You shot at me there. Without any hesitation.」

「.....That's right. However, I want you to not misunderstand. I wasn't trying to kill you there. For a researcher like me to stop that security bureau's agent, I have no other way than that.」

Down, who knew that he wouldn't be able to shake off the pursuit from the beginning, implemented a strategy that used berserker monkeys to separate Emily from the troublesome bodyguard, and then he shot at Emily so that Vanessa would cover her without any leeway to dodge or counterattack.

In other words, because he had no confidence that he would be able to snipe Vanessa, he did it in a way so that Vanessa herself would be the one that entered his line of fire.

However, that didn't change the fact that Emily was in his line of fire. If Vanessa didn't make it in time, then there was no proof that Emily would be safe.

「But, it's fine in its own way even if I got shot. Isn't that right?」

「.....I didn't want you to die though.」

It seemed that it would've been fine as long as she was just alive. But even that was suspicious if it was true or not in this situation.

「Teacher, please tell me your motive. I came here in order to listen to that. Surely, it will be meaningless, and nothing that I have lost will come back, but.....even so, I want to listen to your true feelings. Teacher-, these five years that you spent with me, with all of us, is there any meaning in it? Do we mean anything to you? The thing that you want to obtain even by betraying all of us, just what in the world is it?」

That question was said calmly, but it sounded as though she was going to vomit blood.

Weren't they a family? Didn't he save her when she was cornered? Didn't he love her? The five years they had spent together since that day, when she was welcomed as family, was all that a lie? Was it something so light that he could easily betray and abandon them?

Down looked down. Her gaze toward Emily was calm, but there was a darkness somewhere in it. He kept aiming his gun without letting his guard down. And then, he answered.

「What I want to obtain, is it? Indeed, it's a meaningless question. But, if you want to know that, then I'll tell you. You see, Emily, I merely want to leave

behind my name in history.」

「Leave behind your name, in history?」

「That's right. Some people have their name entered into the textbooks to be read by the future generation; I want to become that kind of human. I want to stay behind in the memory of the people forevermore as a historically great character. Do you understand?」

「For, for something like that.....」

「As I thought, you don't understand.」

Perhaps, there was some kind of reason that left him with no choice but to do something like that. Perhaps there was no other way but for him to abandon them for the sake of something important which he couldn't let go of no matter what. Those kinds of fleeting thoughts were now splattered with mud and thrown away by Emily.

Emily trembled, perhaps from anger, or perhaps from frustration. Down made a troubled smile.

「Surely you don't understand. The fear of being a human that doesn't matter whether they exist or not, or the emptiness of being forgotten, or the hopelessness to vanish without leaving behind any proof of leaving.」

「Such a thing-, that kind of thing-. There is no way that teacher is a person who doesn't matter whether you exist or not! Just who in the world can forget you!? Me!? My seniors!? Lizzi-nee!? Everyone in the Down classroom, they are going to forget you!? There is no way such a thing will happen! Aren't we who have received your teaching-, the proof of your life!?」

A scream that sounded like pleading reverberated. But, even those words only made Down give a troubled smile; he then shook his head slowly.

「It's not something like that Emily. It's not that kind of a small story. I said it, right? I want to leave my name in history. It's no good with only the personal memory of you all. Something like that cannot erase this terror, this despair, this emptiness inside me.」

「You are.....」

Her words, her feelings, they didn't go through. Emily understood that from seeing Down's eyes.

Just what in the world was driving him like this? Emily couldn't understand that.

The person called Reginald Down was born in an average family, graduated from university with an excellent result, entered the path of a researcher, encountered his wife, became a lecturer, his wife died from a sickness, he welcomed distressed students and sent out a lot of excellent disciples to the outside world. Emily heard such a story from Down.

Was there any factor somewhere in that life that drove him to madness?

「You cannot understand? I guess that's how it is for you. Even if other people can understand, Emily, you surely cannot understand it.」

「Why, do you say that?」

「Because, you are a genius.」

「Eh?」

Emily Grant was a genius. That was why it was impossible for her to understand Reginald Down for eternity.

Emily was dumbfounded after hearing that statement from Down. She felt as though her whole self was denied. Emily who was lonely because she was a genius, the one who taught her that such a thing was irrelevant was none other than Down. But now he discarded Emily because she was a genius.

「You won't understand the feeling of a mediocre person who saw off the back of a genius. That what someone can achieve is decided by the ability that person is provided with from the start.」

「But, but teacher, you are an excellent educator even throughout the university, even the other professors respected teacher——」

「That's because I'm a mediocre person. Because I'm mediocre, I understand just what it is that someone doesn't understand. I understand what needs to be done so that they can understand. I have kept searching, that's why I understand what other people search for. I understand what makes anyone

happy, and what I need to do to push the back of others. That's because all of those were also paths that I myself had gone through. That's all.」

Down sighed deeply and looked at somewhere far away with empty eyes while continuing his words that sounded like he was talking to himself.

「No matter how many efforts I piled up, the geniuses are clearing over all those efforts easily. When I thought of one idea, they will already create a hundred ideas and produce results. Just how much emptiness I felt each time that happened, is surely something that they don't understand.」

Surely what was reflected inside his eyes, was the figure of his students who were already graduated and had been recognized in society.

Emily didn't understand. Every time teacher saw the seniors that came out on television shows or in magazines; he would make a proud expression. He would be happy as though it was about himself. Was all of those just acting?

Was he actually boiling with emotions of hatred and jealousy, that he should be the one that got praised, that he should be the one that was granted with glory?

「Even so, they would say that I am their teacher and that somehow consoled my heart. Having all of them, including you Emily and everyone in the Down classroom, adoring me as “the educator Reginald Down”, it supported me. It gave me acceptance and a small satisfaction that it's enough with this.」

His affection was the real thing. His feeling of wanting to become other's strength was true. Even if he couldn't stand on the front stage, Down was able to maintain his self by doing that. The trust and gratitude of his students somehow diverted Down from his dirty vanity that should be called a deep-rooted delusion.

「Then, why?」

「Isn't that obvious? That was because【Berserk】was created.」

A hitch leaked out from Emily's mouth.

「【Berserk】, was?」

「Yes,【Berserk】. Emily, you are without a doubt a genius. That is a miraculous

drug. It changes humans into something that is not a human, aa, that's right. It's a miracle! Just how many applications can be found from it if it's continued to be researched!? The result is clear! It will be a revolution of the world!」

「Te, teacher.....」

Down put one hand on his temple in excitement and laughed loudly. That figure was truly abnormal. The figure of the kind and gentle Down inside Emily's memory was vanishing.

「There is no doubt! This is a great exploit that will leave the name in history! All those results left behind by all my students until now are just like trash in front of【Berserk】! You will become a historical character! And I am the father of that! I will leave my name as the father of a revolution! Do you understand!? —No, surely you don't understand. That's why in front of this miracle you were able to say bullshit like『This is dangerous so let's destroy it』-」

「-」

pan- With a dry sound, the floor nearby Emily burst open. The excited Down unconsciously shot. Down went 'hah' at the bursting sound he made and readjusted his breathing, and then he made a gentle smile with a disgusting easiness.

「I got flustered at that time. No matter how much I explain to you about the “possibility” of【Berserk】 you won't change your decision to destroy it. If I tried too hard at persuading you, I'd lose your trust and my standing as “father”. There also wasn't any leeway timewise. After all, I didn't know when you would erase the data.」

「That was why, you took it out?」

「That's right. There is my disciple at the leadership of Gamma Pharmaceutical, and I relied on him. But never in my wildest dream would I have thought that it would be an underworld organization that has this kind of facility though. I thought it was the will of heaven. Finally, the time to be rewarded has come even to this me who continued to only perform services for other people.」

But, it couldn't go that easily. No matter how much he researched the stolen

data and drug, he was unable to create the antidote. The research about【Berserk】's use as a weapon was producing data and application methods to some degree, but the plan of Kaysis and others to scatter【Berserk】themselves before selling the antidote was quickly coming to an impasse.

They also could only do extremely simple things with the application too; he was unable at all to create something that would shake the world as a “miraculous drug”.

No matter what, he lacked the decisive something to create those.

Yes, he lacked the existence of Emily Grant who was the creator.

「The first incident, those police officers, and then agent Warren too, they were all people under Kaysis. Isn't that, right? Everything was all to corner me and direct me so that I could only rely on teacher. In order to make me research and develop【Berserk】by my own will.」

「Exactly. It was going well until the middle, but..... Really, they were all doing needless things. Whether it's the security bureau, or Rod and Dennis too.」

pakit- There was the sound of something snapping. It came from inside Emily's chest. It was the sound of something important, something really important snapping and then breaking.

Scenes were resurrected in her mind. The nightmare that she absolutely couldn't forget.

——Milo-oniichan died. He was run over by a berserker, as though he got hit by a truck.

——Sam-oniichan died. He was reduced into a berserker in the end.

——Jessica-oneechan died. Her neck was snapped by the gentle Sam-oniichan.

——Dennis-oniichan died. In order to avoid being transformed into a berserker, he shot his own head.

——Rod-oniichan died. While he was apologizing ‘sorry’.

And then,

——Hendricks-oniichan died. In order to protect Emily and everyone else.

She thought of him as her real older brother. He was slow in some areas, but he was sincere and gentle; a person that was like a pleasant breeze. There wasn't anyone that could ease the heart by being at their side like him.

——Lizzie-nee died. In order to hide Emily. She made herself as the bait.

She was someone Emily idolized. Sometimes she wasn't honest, but there wasn't any other woman that was as gentle and lovely as her. She saw a dream. The scene of Hendricks and Lizzie who she liked very much getting wedded together, smiling with happiness.

She believed.

That everyone in the Down classroom would someday be able to witness such a lovely sight.

All of those——

「So it was I, that pulled the trigger.」

「Hm?」

Emily averted her gaze from Down who tilted his head and slowly stood up. Vanessa called at Emily with a small voice that was still pained, but Emily only smiled fleetingly and averted her eyes from her.

「Do, Doctor, Grant-. You, cannot. That's-」

「I'm sorry, Vanessa.」

Vanessa couldn't hope for a complete recovery with bullets still remaining inside her body. Her internal organs that received four shots, although the bleeding could be stopped, her broken bones still weren't healed. Therefore, it was the best she could do to reach out her hand that was trembling from enduring the intense pain. Yet she failed to grasp Emily's hand.

「Can you not move, Emily?」

Down aimed the gun muzzle at the standing up Emily once more.

「If possible, I don't want to kill you. Even what happened with Hendricks and the others was just an unfortunate accident, it wasn't something that I wished

for. That's why, you obediently——」

「I, pulled your trigger.」

Emily's mutters cut off Down's words. Her figure with her head hanging down looked really sorrowful. Her worn-out lab coat seemed to be the representation of her heart.

Down seemed like he didn't understand the meaning of Emily's words and tilted his head once more. Emily continued her heavy and dark words toward him.

「You, weren't simply a virtuous person. Inside your heart, there was a madness nesting there all this time. A conceit that is far, far stronger than other people. A heart that is wishing for praise, was gnawing inside you.」

「.....」

「Everyone suppressed those down. The many seniors, everyone in the Down classroom, your family. Despite so, I broke that. The trigger that you wanted to pull but you managed to hold back from, I pulled it——I awakened, the Berserk that was inside of you right from the beginning.」

「So, there was a Berserk in me right from the start. Now you really said it, Emily.」

It was unclear just how the expression of Emily who raised her face slowly should be described as. She looked troubled, she looked as though she would cry anytime now, and she looked like she was resolved about something——it was a strangely transparent expression.

「I was the one that pulled the trigger that awakened the monster, that's why——that's why, I will be the one that pulls the trigger too for ending it.」

「.....You will, shoot me?」

There was a small handgun in the hand that Emily lifted. It was Vanessa's spare gun. It seemed that Emily pulled it out when she was standing up. From behind her, Vanessa yelled「You must not, Doctor Grant!」with a hoarse voice.

「Emily. You will shoot me, who you saw as a father? This me who rescued you?」

「Yes. I'll shoot. I, will end you.」

「For revenge?」

「No. It's for your own sake. And then, for my sake. Surely.」

「.....I see.」

The two who once called each other as father and daughter were now aiming a gun at each other.

There wasn't any undulation of great emotion that could be seen from their crossing gazes. But, surely they were holding back emotions that couldn't be expressed with words like an explosive that was on the verge of exploding. Perhaps it wasn't just Emily who was like that, but Down too.

「Then it can't be helped. Sayonara, Emily.」

「Yes, sayonara. Teacher.」

The triggers were pulled. Dry bursting sounds thundered.

At the same time, a shadow sprang out in the air. *kin-* A metallic sound resounded.

The bullet was bisected into two. The split up bullet greatly diverted from the target and pierced the wall behind.

「Ko, Kousuke?」

A shadow landed down lightly. That was without a doubt, the catching up Kousuke.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It will finish with just about two more chapters.

It will make me happy if you readers can enjoy it until the end.

Arifureta Chapter 221

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Kaclick, Like That

AN: This is the second posting for today.

I also posted a chapter before this, so for those of you who didn't read the previous chapter yet, please pay attention.

Part 1

With a short sword in hand, Kousuke stood between Emily and Down.

Kousuke was staring at Emily from the *front*.

Yes, Kousuke split apart the fired bullet in midair, in order to protect Down behind him. What he cut was Emily's bullet.

「Ko, Kousuke.....why-」

Emily questioned with the gun still raised in her trembling hand.

Kousuke slowly walked forward without any words; he didn't even glance at Down behind him. And then, when he arrived right in front of Emily who was shaking her head left and right, he put his hand softly on the gun barrel and gently lowered it down.

「Stop it, Emily. This is not your role.」

A calm voice and a composed gaze enveloped Emily.

But, Kousuke felt a slight resistance at his hand that was put on the gun barrel. Emily was rejecting it. He could see a tragic resolve in the eyes of Emily who was shaking her head left and right.

Kousuke didn't know about the words exchanged between Emily and Down.

Even so, he was able to guess. Just what kind of feeling caused Emily to pull the trigger. Just what kind of feeling caused her to direct killing intent at the man who she thought of as a teacher and also a substitute father.

Surely, she felt hatred. Surely, she also felt resentment. But, her action didn't come only from being captured by those kinds of negative emotions and madness.

Inside her eyes, there was a sense of purpose. Or possibly, a sense of duty. And then a sense of responsibility.

Kousuke smiled wryly in his heart, thinking that it was just like Emily. Even so, his hand didn't let go of Emily's gun that refused to be lowered.

「Kousuke-, this is something that I started, that's why-. That's why-」

「Is that really so? I don't think so though. Well, even so, if that's what Emily yourself thinks, then I won't really deny it. However, the end of this path is no good. It's not a destination where Emily should go.」

He wouldn't let her go down the path of a murderer. Kousuke responded with a feeling that was as equally strong as the feeling Emily held.

Even so, Emily was about to object further, but Kousuke added his words.

「Because, that's something that runs counter to the wish of Emily's big brothers and sisters, right?」

「-」

Yes, no one was demanding this kind of conclusion from Emily. Even though Kousuke had never met them, even though he had never exchanged words with them, just from hearing Emily's story it was something obvious to Kousuke.

There was no way those who risked their lives to protect their important little sister would wish for this.

「Emily's dream is to save those who are suffering from sickness, right?」

She wished to heal her grandmother. Emily's steps that were starting from such a wish, surely it was them who were rooting for it more than anyone.

「They should believe, more than anyone. Emily's hand, it isn't something to hurt others. It's something to heal, to save others.」

That was why not a single one of them blamed Emily for creating the drug of madness. They didn't escape by saying that it was unrelated to them. They understood that it was an outrageous situation, yet they didn't leave Emily's side by any means.

That was why.

「My bad, but I'm not going to allow this, yeah? I absolutely won't allow only this. No matter how strong Emily's will is, I'll stop you with my all. Endo

Kousuke, the right-hand man of the demon king and also your protector, this me will stop you with my whole body and soul. Emily Grant has reached this far by doing her best to save others. Something like the closing of a curtain by such a girl murdering someone who was family, I won't let that happen.」

「Kou, suke.....」

Strength left Emily's hand. *gatan* A sound rang. The handgun that slipped unhindered from Emily's hand fell to the floor.

Surely, there wasn't any way to express the overflowing emotion inside her. All the words that existed in this world were too inadequate for that. She wondered, just how many times this body, this heart had been protected. When she needed it, help would be given to her without fail, by Emily Grant's hero.

Softly, Emily's head leaned on Kousuke's chest. *drop, drop* The falling tears on the floor were surely the result of her emotions that couldn't be spoken aloud appearing in a definite shape.

Kousuke gently put his hand on Emily's head as she was burying her face on his chest while trembling. He exchanged glances with Vanessa who was relieved while still lying down on the floor and nodded to each other.

「.....So even that berserker cannot stop you. I'm keenly feeling the irrationality of your existence thoroughly.」

Down said that with an astonished expression. He wasn't running away or shooting while Kousuke and Emily were talking. Kousuke turned a suspicious gaze at Down who was like that.

「You aren't running away?」

「Will you let me run away?」

Down replied so while smiling bitterly. There wasn't any hostility, or fluster and desperation that were particular for a cornered person that could be seen from him. Kousuke's gaze narrowed in wonder of what this person was thinking. And what bothered him above all, was the reason why Down *didn't shoot*.

At that time, Kousuke only cut Emily's bullet. He used gravity magic to suck in the bullet toward his blade and slashed the bullet that shifted slightly. Naturally, he planned to use his kunai to repel the bullet that he thought would approach from behind him but.....

In the first place, Down didn't pull his trigger at that time. Down had no intention of killing Emily.

「Just what in the world you are planning?」

「Of course, I'm thinking about myself. I have been thinking only about myself since I stole【Berserk】.」

Kousuke thought that perhaps, by some chance Down actually hesitated to shoot because of his affection toward Emily, but it seemed that wasn't it. Down's calm and composed gaze and voice seemed even eerier.

「.....I don't know what you are thinking, but for now, surrender.」

「Oho, you won't kill me?」

「I just don't want Emily to lose another person close to her.Even if that person is only “formerly” close to her, or even if that person is an unforgivable traitor.」

If Kousuke had to say more, he also had the calculation of wanting to hand over the case's ringleader to Chief Magdanese. Kousuke thought that it would also be necessary for Emily's life from here on that there was the result of “the culprit was captured” regarding the【Berserk Case】that had shaken the world.

Kousuke's words caused Emily to raise her face from his chest, and she looked at Down. Her gaze was certainly wishing not for Down's death, but for him to be judged by the administration of justice.

Down listened to Kousuke's words, and then he saw Emily's gaze before he sighed deeply.

「Haa, really, nothing has gone well at all. Perhaps this is also because I'm mediocre.」

Down took one, two steps back. Kousuke leapt out without any question. He would hold him down and rob him of his consciousness. With the danger

of【Berserk】, it was a great concern even to just speak to him.

When Kousuke stepped on the second floor's passage, it was at the same time as when Down fell into the water reservoir behind him. Emily reflexively yelled「Teacher-」.

Kousuke jumped in to overtake Down and caught him in midair. But, when he tried to hover in midair, his body lurched forward with a jerk. Kousuke launched a steel string from his sleeve in a panic to seize the handrail of the passage, and he dangled down.

Kousuke's movement was lacking in luster. Originally, he should've been able to make Down unconscious before he could jump down, but he was unable to do that because of the effect of the previous battle.

The rapid Limit Break by using Last Zell. Naturally, he was unable to escape from the side effect. Currently, Kousuke was in the middle of a remarkable weakening. He was unable to create a clone, and his physical abilities decreased by sixty percent. He was being assaulted by fatigue that made him want to just fall asleep right now. Honestly, he already felt his consciousness getting farther away when he used gravity magic to suck in the bullet.

「You plan to suicide huh!」

「That's right. Though actually, I wanted Emily to kill me. After all, I understand that I won't be able to escape. If that's not the case, do you think I would talk that long even after understanding that a monster like you is here?」

Down spoke about his own end really easily while dangling in midair after being seized by Kousuke.

「Although, I didn't think that that berserker would be defeated this quickly though.」

「Teacher-, what are you doing!? Didn't you want to leave your name in history!?!」

Emily's words caused Down to answer with a mysterious expression that was a mixture of resignation and madness.

「That's right. I'll leave my name in history. If I cannot escape anymore, then

I'll leave my name as the tragic father who tried to stop the girl that scattered disaster in this world!」

With those words, Kousuke finally guessed the thinking of what Down was trying to do. And then, he said「This stupid bastard-」while trying to throw Down on the floor.

But, before he could,

「If even that cannot come true then-! Aa, fine then. I will become that very disaster itself! I'll leave my name in history not with a great achievement, but with a great sin!」

Saying that he exploded the moment Kousuke threw him.

doon- The moment that muffled sound rang, Down's stomach exploded. Naturally, his blood and flesh scattered. Emily became unable to move due to the abnormal situation that was too gruesome.

Kousuke desperately maintained his creaking body and his distant consciousness. He activated gravity magic while leaping toward Emily right away.

Even gravity magic that was unable to completely display its effect was able to at least knock off the approaching blood and flesh.

But, for the current Kousuke that was his limit. Down changed his route using the impact and fell into the water reservoir along with his scattered blood and flesh.

A grand spray of water rose to create a fierce ripple in the water reservoir. At the same time, the clear and transparent water was dyed red as though ink was spilled into it.

「.....」

「Damn it-, he got us-」

Emily was dumbfounded without any words while staring at the water reservoir that was dyed red while Kousuke laid bare his irritation.

「Kousuke-san-, this is!」

The lying down Vanessa threw a radio at Kousuke. Kousuke guessed what she meant and received the radio before speaking into it.

『Bernard! Can you hear me!?!』

『Mu, Aby. What's the matter?!』

『Berserk spilled into the waterway! The water gate is open, and it's flowing somewhere! Anywhere is fine, just stop the flow before it can go through the water supply facility!』

『-. Wait a second! ——Control room-. Seal all the waterways!』

Bernard who received the contact gave instructions to his subordinates that suppressed the control room.

Just as Kousuke said, Down didn't just blow himself up. "Scattering disaster" ——just as those words meant, he wasn't trying to transform himself into a berserker, but he exploded himself to scatter the【Berserk】that was stored inside his stomach and spilled it into the waterway.

Most likely, this aberrant plan was hatched because of the irregularity that was Kousuke. This was Down's final attack from thinking of the possibility that anything he did would be prevented.

No matter what place it was, no matter what reason it was for, a person who staked their life on the line was terrifying. Kousuke, who got outwitted, painfully realized that once more while he grit his teeth.

Then, it was at that time that a voice that sounded like a shriek rang from the radio.

『Captain-, the control doesn't work! Both the clean water facility and the water supply facility, all of them won't move from the opened gate state! The control is completely on the fritz!』

『What did you say-. What's the meaning of this!?!』

『Those guys, perhaps they are inserting a virus into the computer-. If I have time, then I think it's possible to recover the control though.』

『How long that will take?』

『.....Ten minutes. No, if I have just eight minutes, I'll somehow.....』

『Tsk, get on it right away.』

『Yes Sir-』

Silence ruled over the place for a while. At this rate, the irrigation that was polluted by【Berserk】would flow into the city. Even before that, it would pass through several towns. If that happened, a wave of berserkers would be spreading as though eroding the country from the edge.

Most likely, it wouldn't take five minutes until the polluted water passed through the water supply facility. The time limit until the overwhelming tragedy, was just five minutes.

「Kousuke.....」

「Kousuke-san.....」

Emily, who was staring at the water reservoir in a daze, and Vanessa, who had a grim expression, were calling Kousuke.

Kousuke thought of something with a grim expression, then he suddenly smiled bitterly, and strength left his shoulders. And then, he ran his gaze toward Emily and Vanessa while taking the radio into his hand.

『Bernard. I'll do something about it. Well, it will become flashy, so don't let anyone get near the water supply facility.』

『! Aby. Got it. I'll leave it to you-. Please, save this country!』

Bernard's trust and slight entreaty reached Kousuke through his voice from the radio.

The same thing was also dwelling inside the gaze of Vanessa and Emily.

Kousuke kept smiling bitterly while opening his mouth to those two.

「Actually, I didn't want to rely on him. At the very end, it became a pathetic story like this but.....I'll ask a bit, for help from his majesty the demon king.」

Emily and Vanessa looked puzzled. Kousuke's bitter smile deepened at that.

Part 2

Kousuke and the others came out to the rooftop of the clean water facility while lending a shoulder to Vanessa.

There was a water supply facility downstream, and even further downstream they could see a town.

「Kousuke, what are you going to do?」

Kousuke said「I'll do this」to Emily's question and took out his smartphone. And then, he called. After a few call tones, there was the sullen voice of the speaker on the other side coming out from the phone.

『.....What is it, Endo——』

「Nagumo! My bad but there is no time! Don't ask anything and blow up the water supply that is near my position!」

『.....』

The call partner was his majesty the demon king who was currently spending an enjoyable time making dinner with his beloved daughter. His majesty the demon king was wearing the frilly pink apron that was created by Myuu for him, spending an enjoyable, enjoyable time while Yue and the others were holding down their laughter!

Normally, if someone was suddenly phoned, and then requested to destroy a public facility without even getting told the reason, that person would either doubt the sanity of the other party, or they would cut off the phone without delay thinking that it was a joke before returning back to the happy family time.

But, the other party here wasn't normal. Rather, this person was the synonym of abnormal irrationality.

Therefore,

『'Kay. Don't move from where you are.』

「-. I'm in your debt, Nagumo!」

A presence of a wry smile was transmitted from the other side of the phone.

At the same time,

「E, err, Kousuke? Who are you talking to? Or rather, what are you doing? Or rather, there are various things I want to ask but, anyway, can I ask? ——What is, that?」

「Kousuke-san.....I cannot believe it but.....」

Emily was looking up to the sky with a completely cramping expression while asking Kousuke as Vanessa was also similarly staring at a spot in the sky with a flustered expression that was rarely seen from her.

Kousuke shrugged his shoulders at them who were like that and said.

「There won't be any airborne infections from【Berserk】. Even if it is in a liquid state, it will become invalid if it is vaporized. Then, I'll blow it up all together with an overwhelming heat. ——Well, that kind of thing can only be done by the demon king though.」

It was right after he said that.

Far high in the sky, a dot of light was starting to shine brilliantly as though a second sun was born. It could be seen clearly even through the clouds. It then looked as though it swelled up instantly before suddenly a pillar of light descended from the sky.

The cloudy sky was blown away, an enormous hole was created in the sea of clouds in the sky, and the atmosphere was burned down. That pillar which pierced the water supply facility along with a thunderous roar instantly destroyed the facility with a brilliant light, melted the ground, and created an outrageous crater in the blink of an eye.

The light flooded the world.

The world that was gloomy from the cloudy sky was being dyed pure white. The heat wave and shockwave were spreading like a ripple and turned the area surrounding the facility into a circular-shaped piece of empty land.

——Sunlight convergence laser “Burst Hyperion”

The demon king detected the location of the water supply facility using the “Compass of Crossing Guidance” with Kousuke as the reference point, and then he teleported the “Burst Hyperion” to the satellite orbit above the facility using a space substitution artifact.

Next, the demon king pushed the button *kaclick*, like that. Just with that the laser cannon that converged sunlight annihilated anything and everything.

It was truly heaven’s judgment. The manifestation of myth.

Though the person who pulled the trigger was currently wearing a frilly pink apron at home.

「.....」

「.....」

The faces of Emily and Vanessa turned into something that really couldn’t be shown to other people. Their eyes opened wide with their mouths gaped open unmoving. Drool was trickling from the corner of their mouths, and not a single word leaked out.

While they were in the middle of being like that, the water supply facility was eradicated entirely. Next, the light pillar that changed even the topography was getting thinner bit by bit, and before long it vanished as though melting into the air.

Color returned to the world, and the sound of a waterfall flowing into the deep crater resounded.

『How is it, Endo? Is it okay like that?』

『Yeah, thanks, Nagumo. Sorry that I suddenly made an outrageous request.』

『I understand that you are trying to not rely on me. And now someone like you came to rely on me without even saying the reason. You must have a reason that is that important, right? Well, I’ll trust you on that. That’s why I don’t need your apology.』

『Hahah. As I thought, the demon king is just too doting on his relatives yeah. That’s why I cannot rely on you too much.』

Kousuke scratched his cheek awkwardly while making a wry smile. And then,

he reported that he meant to return to Japan in a few days, and he would speak about the circumstances when he went back and cut off the phone.

Kousuke let out a long exhale.

Putting aside if it was related to a request from Hajime, Kousuke had promised to himself that he wouldn't rely on Hajime for anything in a matter that he poked his nose into by his own collision. But now he relied on him in the end. His shoulders dropped in dejection while he patted down his chest in relief that they had avoided a great disaster (excluding the crater).

And then, his gaze slowly turned toward Emily and Vanessa who was still petrified wordlessly.

「Aa, Emily, Vanessa——」

「Hyyuwa!?!」

「Afuh」

The moment he called to them, Emily jumped in surprise while raising her voice as though she was liberated from a binding curse before she became unable to stand up from shock and fell down. At the same time, Vanessa who was borrowing Emily's shoulder also fell down, and her butt impacted the ground.

Kousuke thought that their reaction was understandable while he was about to lend a hand at the fallen two——and he stiffened.

choro choro choro~

Slipping through the sound of the waterfall, there was the sound of water from right nearby.

The source was, of course, the Emily-chan who kept lying down on her butt while shivering all over. It seemed that her bladder loosened up completely from witnessing the situation that surpassed human knowledge. 'Come to think of it, she gulped down a lot of coffee before riding the helicopter because she was nervous huuh', Kousuke recalled.

「.....Kousuke-san. It feels like I'm going to leak out too. Is it fine?」

「There is no way it's fine.」

Vanessa who noticed Emily's disgraceful behavior and made a wry smile while talking to Kousuke. There Emily finally seemed to recover her sanity. Naturally, she also noticed her current situation— —

「HiiiiiiH. STooooooooop-. Or rather, DON'T LoOOOOOOK-, DON'T LOOK AT THIS KIND OF ME, KOUSUKEEEE-」

Emily was on the verge of tears while tightening her bladder. She was desperately hiding within her lab coat while her hands held her head down and she turned small.

While Emily's shriek was echoing,

『Oi, Aby! What was that just now!? Something came out there you know!? From the sky! Something came out!』

This time Bernard's voice was transmitted from the radio. It seemed that Bernard and others also witnessed the light of “Burst Hyperion”.

「DON'T LOOOOOK-! PLEASE, STOPPPPPP!」

『Oi, Aby! Respond! Explanation please!』

「Kousuke-san, instead of “pi—”, the bleeding is not stopping. My wounds seemed to open because of falling just now. Please help.」

Emily who screamed while turning small. Bernard who yelled together with his subordinates from the radio asking for an explanation. Vanessa who was on the verge of death.

Kousuke sighed again in a different kind of manner this time.

「Now then, what to do about the clean-up I wonder.....」

He looked up at the sky during this scene that was chaotic even when everything was over.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Really, thank you very much for following this extra compilation for so long.

In the next chapter, the epilogue will be the end for this extra compilation.

Those people are also planned to come out you know~

I will talk about the detail of my plan from here on or the epilogue's afterword on my activity report.

The next update, surely perhaps, can be finished by 6 P.M. Saturday, I think.

Arifureta Chapter 222

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Epilogue First Part

AN: Even though this is the epilogue, there is a first and second part.....

I'm sorry. I couldn't finish it.

But, I'll upload the second part within this day!

TN: The segment above was a note from the author, not from the translator.
Sorry, but please wait for two or three more days for the next chapter.

Part 1

The sound of a deep sigh leaked out in a room that boasted of its excellent soundproofing. The wooden desk and leather chair that was overflowing with a high-class aura were originally there to add to the dignity of the owner, but right now, the owner of the sigh was enveloped in a tired atmosphere that made such a thing be meaningless.

「Aa~, chief? Are you okay?」

The room owner——the state security bureau's chief Sharon Magdanese was addressed by Allen while he was smiling wryly.

Chief Magdanese was putting both her elbows on the desk with both her hands joined together supporting the forehead of her hung down head. She lifted her face slightly and replied with a slightly exasperated expression.

「Isn't that my line instead? Allen, are you really okay?」

「Ahaha, I'm really fine. I more or less received "healing", so my health is not as bad as my appearance.」

「.....A "healing" that cured both arms that had the bones pulverized in less than a day until they became usable again, is it? Haa~~~」

She once more sighed not just deeply, but dee~ply. Allen's wry smile deepened in proportion to that.

Chief Magdanese felt Allen's gaze that seemed to say that he understood her feelings while her face turned toward the large display hanging on the wall with an expression that didn't even try to hide her sullenness.

What that display projected was the manifestation of the mystic. An unimaginably abnormal spectacle.

She wondered just how wonderful it would be if the image was just a scene that was cut from a movie.

「The devilish hand of the demon king that is fired from the sky.....I wonder, since when did this world get eroded by fantasy?」

「Oh maaan, chief. That's a really poetic expression there. It's just like Aby-san——buberah!?!」

Chief Magdanese's paperweight bullet burst out. Allen pleaded「I'm an injured person! An injured person! Be gentler to me, please!」with teary eyes.

Chief Magdanese easily ignored that as her eyes fell toward the display on her hand. She read the analysis result that was written there with a powerless voice.

「A satellite that is able to fire a laser of converged sunlight.....the point of it, that it was just a simple thing that merely focused heat. It's more or less theoretically possible to be constructed using the present-day science, it said.」

「However, it's impossible to make it the size of the silhouette that we captured for an instant. If we try to make it, then the result will be on a really big scale. What's more, this one was able to not only blast away a whole facility, but its power was even able to change the topography. Considering it, such a thing is——」

「It's impossible for such a thing to not be noticed by our nation.....no, by all the nations on earth when it was in the satellite orbit. In addition, for it to be able to fly to the position for a pinpoint sniping at that timing, that is even more impossible.」

gii The high-class chair raised an unpleasant sound. That must be because it was pressed with a weight from an unnatural stance aided by the body's stirring. Chief Magdanese noticed how she had tensed unconsciously and took a breath.

It wasn't unreasonable. The image of the light in the sky was captured by the aircraft monitoring the operation area. It was launched suddenly from the satellite orbit by an orbital weapon that appeared without any advance notice, and as soon as it blew up the surface, it then abruptly vanished without any trace.

If that was the joker of the unfathomable power that was possessed by

Abyssgate, then Chief Magdanese would instead feel her stomachache softened because she could believe that she had confirmed the bottom of his strength.

But, that was a weapon. Certainly, it was overflowing with mystical aspects like how it was ignoring technological problems or how elusive it was. But, even so, that thing was without a doubt a weapon that was created by human hands.

It wasn't something unfathomable and unique that could be recognized to be owned just by a person, but a weapon that *could be used by anyone if they wanted to*.

The cold reality that was contained within that fact, even while it possessed fantasy aspects in it, was causing Chief Magdanese's blood to run cold. She felt a blunt terror that was far closer to herself more than when she witnessed the mystery of Lord Abyssgate.

「.....His majesty the demon king is it. I knew that around him there must be people with the same power assembling but.....」

「To think that Aby-san is really just someone in an underling position. Hahah, there is nothing to do but laugh here. Even though I cannot see the future where we will be able to stand a chance against even just him alone, there is still the demon king-sama waiting behind him who can go *kaboom* just with a phone call. What the hell.」

「If we believe his talk as it is, the best he can do is just scratch the demon king even when fighting with his whole body and soul on the line. Furthermore, he also said that it's unclear whether he can even match the wives or not.」

「Chief. The instant I saw that light in the sky, I understood just why the person who exterminates a demon king in a tale is called as a hero. Indeed, that person must be a hero. For that person to be able to challenge something like that」

‘Certainly, that’s so’, Chief Magdanese nodded deeply. At the very least, she who shouldered a part of the national defense really couldn’t fan up any thoughts of trying to stand against that.

Chief Magdanese sighed deeply for who knew how many times already while she suddenly took out a USB memory from her breast pocket. She toyed with

that using her fingers while leaning on her elbow.

「What's the matter, chief?」

「.....No, nothing really. It's just, I think that perhaps this thing is a Pandora's box.」

「Aah. Certainly, that's a perfectly fitting phrase. By the way, is Aby's faction the calamity? Or the hope?」

Chief Magdanese floated a vague smile as her answer to Allen's question. Even Allen didn't understand what she really meant.

However, the one thing that was definite was what was inside of that USB memory——the research data of【Berserk】, and if they tried to use that for evil, then a calamity would descend upon them without a doubt. That didn't merely refer to the fact that berserkers would be created once again, but in the meaning that they would enrage the bearer of mysteries by doing that and turn them into enemies.

「Oh man~. Even so, if it's known by Aby-san that the security bureau is hiding【Berserk】, it would absolutely be bad news, wouldn't it? All the data and drugs from every facility were completely destroyed, and in some places, they were destroyed along with the facility.....That is a bomb in a sense you know? I think it's better to destroy it right away though.....」

Allen didn't even hide his disgusted expression and said such a thing to Chief Magdanese who was still toying with the USB memory with her fingertips.

After that infiltration into the clean water facility, Kousuke, who was greatly exhausted, took a rest at a facility the security bureau prepared, but.....after resting for half-day, he temporarily disappeared, along with Emily and Vanessa. Without permission, they borrowed the pilot and helicopter that were with them during the mission.

The security bureau fell into an uproar from that, but because they guessed the reason that Kousuke vanished, they waited until they were contacted.

As a result, it became an uproar with how all the【Berserk】that was recovered from the facilities that were stormed by other special forces (including the army's special forces) were wholly destroyed by someone unknown. Like that, it

became clear what Kousuke and co were doing.

The feat of completely destroying the data and drugs by easily breaking through the strict security of the army caused the members of the security bureau to make a dry laugh altogether.

After that, they started taking independent actions for a while before there was a contact that came through Vanessa in order to confirm whether the【Berserk】that was recovered by the army had really been destroyed with nothing left. Chief Magdanese offered her full cooperation and exchanged various information with Vanessa.

If it was known that Chief Magdanese was in fact shrewdly collecting the research data of【Berserk】that remained from the university's research building.....

Allen couldn't stop his trembling.

Chief Magdanese made an exasperated expression at such Allen.

「Please don't say anything thoughtless. I'm not hiding this or anything.」

「Eh? But, the fact is chief is carrying that right now though.」

「Look here, after Paradis and Doctor Grant escaped from the research building, just who do you think cleaned up there?」

「That's of course, us the security bureau.....there was also the matter about Hughes-san and others there.」

「Yes, that's right. And then, Doctor Grant and Vanessa who barely escaped from the research building with their life didn't have the time to bring the research data with them. They, and also Abyssgate, understand that.」

In other words, it was clear as day that the security bureau who went there for cleanup would recover the extremely dangerous drug and data.

Although, even Allen understood that much. In short, Allen was thinking that exactly because everyone understood that, Kousuke and co should be thinking that the【Berserk】possessed by the security bureau was destroyed already. But contrary to that they still possessed the data. Wouldn't that be bad for them, he wondered.

Chief Magdanese who guessed Allen's unexpressed fear shook her head and answered.

「There is no way that person will swallow what I say as it is. I destroyed the data, ok thanks, you think it will be like that?」

「That, well..... Then, chief will destroy it. But, then why are you still carrying it like that?」

「For caution's sake, I want to destroy it in front of his eyes, so that he won't be able to just vanish compared to if I destroy it at a distant place from him.」

From Chief Magdanese's viewpoint, she was thinking that Kousuke might just return home to his country without even showing his figure anymore in front of them. If it was with his profoundly mysterious power, then doing something like sneaking into the security bureau without anyone noticing and destroying the data before disappearing should be a piece of cake.

But, Chief Magdanese wanted to talk with Kousuke eye-to-eye no matter what. It would be unbearable if she let Kousuke go home when their relationship with Kousuke, who was able to do that much, and the demon king faction behind him was still vague like now. Chief Magdanese who had the self-awareness that she was already really old didn't want to have her stomachache get worse than this.

And so, even if with a roundabout meaning, a conversation was indispensable. The fact that she hadn't destroyed the USB memory stick yet and walked around carrying it was also a move for that, she wanted to destroy it in front of Kousuke's eyes to help in building a relationship of trust between them.

Surely, perhaps, there wouldn't be that much of an effect that could be expected from doing that, but it was Chief Magdanese's principle to not make light of even the small moves.

Allen nodded with a look of 'I see'. Chief Magdanese sent a sidelong glance at Allen with her fingertips holding the USB memory stick before she suddenly threw her gaze to a space of empty air and opened her mouth.

「That's how it is, so if you want to destroy it then do as you please, Abyssgate.」

「Eh? Chief?」

pachin- The chief put the USB memory stick on the desk with a sound like a shogi player putting the piece on the board. Allen's eyes turned into dots. For a moment he thought「Is she finally turn senile?」, but he got a gaze of absolute zero turned to him instantly, so he straightened his posture in panic.

Right after that,

「.....How surprising. To think that you are able to feel my presence.」

「Oou!? Aby-san!?」

Allen jumped to his feet reflexively from hearing the voice that resounded from the room's corner.

When Allen turned his gaze in a fluster, there he saw the figure of Kousuke leaning on the wall with his arms folded. His expression was displaying a clear emotion of admiration.

「A, Aby-san, since when were you there? Or rather, how did you enter.....」

「I have been shadowing right behind you all that time you know? I entered this room together with you.」

「I, I didn't notice at all.....」

Kousuke turned his gaze to Chief Magdanese while putting aside Allen who was plainly shocked. His gaze was filled with admiration and a question of since when she noticed him, and also a little bit of happiness mixed there.

Chief Magdanese displayed a wry smile at Kousuke's gaze while she shook her head.

「I didn't notice you or anything. However, thinking of the number of operating forces, their affiliation, the base's location, the information sharing with Paradis, and so on, I thought that you would be coming soon. I'm glad you are really here. If not, then I would be a pitiful person who is talking to empty air there.」

「.....As expected from the chief. You completely got me there.」

Kousuke smiled wryly while his back moved from the wall. Surely, his face

looked very slightly regretful because his hope of「By any chance did the number of people noticing me increase!？」had crumbled away.

Kousuke walked up to the front of the desk and took the USB memory sticks. And then, he crushed it inside his fist without confirming its content.

「Is this all the data?」

「Yes, that's right. With this, it means that the data of【Berserk】only remains inside Doctor Grant's head.」

「You are sure?」

「You can just make sure, can't you? I believe you have the method to know with certainty whether the data and drugs of【Berserk】still remain or not in this world if you feel like it. I don't plan to be an idiot that makes a bluff to that kind of opponent.」

Indeed, if Kousuke hypnotized the authorized people and asked them the information, he would be able to ascertain the truth. Also, Chief Magdanese didn't know, but if he relied on that person to have him use the “Compass of Crossing Guidance”, then the truth would be ascertained in an instant.

Chief Magdanese seemed to be resolved even if she got hypnotized, so she stared straight at Kousuke. Kousuke who received that gaze shrugged and shook his head.

「I'll believe your words chief. Besides, I don't want to do something really cruel to the side that will protect my friend and her family from here on.」

It felt like a threat was mixed into it just for a bit. Chief Magdanese scowled while asking back.

「.....You are telling us to protect the Grant family?」

「Even if the chief advocates that【Berserk】is unnecessary to the VIPs, there surely will be those who question the uproar this time. If the Grant family is aimed at and Emily meets misfortune then.....yeah? This too is for the sake of the nation's defense, isn't it?」

「Because if that happens then what we will face won't be the people of that side or even the very【Berserk】itself, but the “abyss lord” huh. Indeed, this is

the most important matter that concerns the nation's defense.」

‘If something happens to the Grant family, then it's not gonna end well’——Chief Magdanese made a slightly tired expression at that veiled warning, but even so, she promised that she would protect the Grant family from the stupid bunches.

Surely, within a few days, there would be pairs of lovers or spouses with a lot of friends moving to the neighborhood of the Grant family. Those people would watch over the Grant family with handguns hidden in their pockets while rousing up themselves with「Whether the lord will rampage or not is hanging on our shoulders!」.

「Well, I'll agree to the matter of protection. However, I have one condition——no, a request.」

「.....I don't think that this is a situation where there will be a condition attached normally. Just as I thought, as expected from the chief.」

「It's an honor to receive the praise. It's not like I plan to ask for anything excessive. Just, if you are going to do something in this country, or if by chance someone related to this country is going to do something, I wish you will contact us beforehand.」

This was the promise that Chief Magdanese wanted to extract from Kousuke by talking to him. It was too dangerous to leave him without supervision. But, it was impossible to attach a collar or anything to him. Then at the very least, she wished to know what he would do and where. She wasn't telling him to ask for permission, but at least she wanted him to keep them informed.

「Depending on the situation, surely there will be a time where it will be better for me to be the one that takes care of it. I believe that you are able to take care of most things, but surely it won't be troubling to have a connection to the authorities.」

「Hm~m. Well, as long as that authority doesn't reach out their hand to us. There would be nothing more depressing then having someone move to try to get our information even if just non~chalantly.」

「The consideration of that area would be something we wish for you to trust

us with.」

Seeing Kousuke hesitate with a ‘h~m’, Chief Magdanese muttered a few words.

「.....The cleanup was really difficult this time.」

「.....」

「We got severely criticized by the intelligence bureau, and then the water supply for that area and also the information control..... After this, we have to falsify the written report about the Berserk Case in various things, and surely I will be severely criticized again when I advocate that【Berserk】is unnecessary at the meeting.....」

「.....」

「I don’t want to say this, but I’m really past my prime now. Recently, it’s become hard to endure my stomachache. Do you know that medicine is not effective anymore? Perhaps this is already time for me to think of retiring. Well, I don’t know whether my successor, whoever he is, will be able to build a connection nicely or not though.....」

「.....」

「Come to think of it, my arm that got shot really hurts. Even though Allen got healed, I need to normally depend on modern medical care here. As I thought, perhaps I should just retire. The motivation necessary to win the argument against the intelligence bureau at the meeting is just.....」

「Got it! I got it already! I’ll contact you properly if I’ve business or something in this country okay! That’s why stop suddenly looking far away with an expression like an old man that has sensed his time of death like that! Feels like your image is crumbling down!」

「Wonderful. Then, leave the protection of the Grant family and the cleanup of the【Berserk】case to us of the security bureau. I will hand over a private line to Abyssgate that connects to the staff under me, so if there is something, please exchange information through it. ——I wish that from here on the security bureau can continue a good relationship with the demon king faction.」

Even though just now she had been pretending to be like an old man that was going to be led away by the death god, Magdanese instantly returned into the face of the chief of the state security bureau clad in a dominating aura and concluded the talk. Inside his heart, Kousuke's cheeks were twitching while thinking「As I thought, I'm no good with this person huh」.

After that, they talked for two, three more minutes. And then hearing Chief Magdanese added a terrifying request like 'if there is a chance, please let me talk with his majesty the demon king no matter what', Kousuke once more felt admiration that this woman was really a big shot before he put his hand on the doorknob.

And then, just before he exited the room, Kousuke suddenly recalled something and turned around.

「Come to think on it, thanks chief-san. I planned to confirm it myself before this, but it helps that you told me.」

「?Aa, about her you mean.」

Chief Magdanese tilted her head for a moment thinking just what was Kousuke talking about, but she immediately realized and then surprisingly smiled. Allen was taken aback.

「Thanks is unnecessary. Although it's a fact that we had no breathing room due to the situation, if only we could confirm it quicker, it would be a relief for that girl's anxiety.」

「I wonder. There is no use talking about 'what if'. If she can think of it as a prize for working hard, then the world can be a little kinder to her, that won't be bad won't it?」

Perhaps feeling a little embarrassed by his own speech, Kousuke scratched his cheek awkwardly after saying that. Chief Magdanese looked even happier at that while she nodded.

「I don't have the qualification to answer thatbut if that's really the case, then certainly, it won't be bad. I think it's great that there is a salvation for her even if just one.」

Those words from the great woman of iron and blood that shouldered the

country's protection sounded like her true opinion which she showed in the end. Kousuke also nodded back to her with a calm smile and exited the room.

Allen who saw the chief's smile was petrified throughout all that until the end.

Part 2

It was at a café located in a place that could confirm the high-rise building of the state security bureau by sight. There was a girl with her blonde hair put in a side-tail—Emily, looking absentminded inside.

Her hand kept holding the cup of steamy coffee latte in front of her. However, she showed no sign of drinking it. She was only staring blankly at the rising steam.

Other than emotions of sadness and pain, her side profile also contained various other things. There were people who were mysteriously charmed with that. In the first place, Emily was a beautiful girl, yet right now she felt like a “woman” rather than a girl of her age. Surely, that was because the experience she had gone through these few days was an unusual experience.

The young men and male employees inside the café kept sending glances at the beautiful girl that was sitting alone in melancholy. That was the proof of the charm Emily was emitting.

Her long and slender legs wrapped in black stockings were crossed. Finally, a young man whose gaze was attracted to that resolved himself and stood up. It appeared that he would call out to Emily.

But, right after the young man took a step forward, his foot stopped still.

That was because Emily suddenly lifted her face. It seemed that was because she noticed the young man’s secret intention. Her reaction looked as though she was called by someone. Yet, he couldn’t hear anything that called the girl’s name other than the sound of car engines.

The young man tilted his head in wonder of what happened, but even so, he was about to step forward again—

「Ah, Kousuke! Over here!」

He saw a flower blooming proudly. The melancholy until just now

disappeared like a lie, and in its place was a dazzling flower that was blooming in full. Emily made a full smile and waved her hand, which caused the young man to stop walking once more. However, this time he was purely fascinated.

「.....Emily, looks like you have become able to notice me normally huh.」

The one who appeared while saying that was of course Kousuke. The young man too finally noticed after he heard that voice that there was a male that had approached this spot nearby without anyone noticing. The male was Japanese without any particular characteristics that stood out.

For a moment, the young man compared himself with Kousuke and he self-assessed himself that he won, but he instantly withered when he saw the trust and affection that emerged on Emily's expression. His shoulders dropped in dejection while he returned to his seat with heavy steps. The other customers and male employees were looking at the young man with a complicated expression.

「I guess. Somehow, when Kousuke comes near, the area around my forehead goes tingling.」(TN: Imagine in Gundam when the newtype sense danger or a formidable enemy)

「You are awakened to a strange ability huh. Well, I'm happy though so it's fine.」

Kousuke saying that he was happy made Emily smile even happier instead.

「So, are you finished? Did it go all right?」

「Yeah, everything went well. With this, 【Berserk】doesn't exist anymore in this world. Looks like the security bureau has also worked hard.」

「I see.....thank you, Kousuke. Really, saying this is not enough at all but, thank you.」

Emily leaned her forehead on Kousuke's shoulder naturally. Seeing that, several males including the young man just now clicked their tongue. Surely, they wanted to say 'damn show off'.

Kousuke reflexively smiled wryly while hearing those clicking tongues. He then gently tapped on Emily's back while urging her to exit the café.

Kousuke started walking on the street. Emily asked him where they were going.

「H~m, there is a place I want to go for a bit. Can you come with me?」

「Yep, it's fine. But Kousuke's plane schedule is.....it's fine because it's in the evening, isn't it?」

Today, Endo was going back to Japan. He had finished reserving a ticket for an evening flight. Naturally, Emily was feeling lonely, but there was no way she could neglect her parents who were piling up mental worry due to the attacks against their daughter, so she was planning to spend her time in her home for a while and couldn't go with Kousuke.

Although, there would be a clone body staying with her for a while to guard her, and Kousuke also firmly promised to her that this separation wouldn't be forever, so she wasn't that sad.

「Which reminds me, what about Vanessa? Midway she said that she has a business, so she went somewhere but, is it about the security bureau's business?」

「No, it's another matter. Vanessa is also going to the place we are heading to right now. There is something I want her to check on just in case.」

「Hm~m. You are speaking ambiguously.It's just me that is out of the loop here.」

Emily's lips pouted a bit sullenly. Kousuke reflexively almost said「How cute」, but the body blow of his heart made him shut his mouth decisively.

「That's not it though..... Rather, this is about Emily. Well, you will understand when we go there. Depending on the situation, perhaps it will be necessary for me to go on ahead for various measures but.....you know, there were things I wanted to take care of first at the security bureau. Just in case.」

「I don't really get it but.....fine then. If that's what Kousuke and Vanessa think is the best then okay.」

Emily smiled gently. The height of her trust toward the two could be seen from that.

It would take about thirty minutes of walking, so the two didn't use a taxi or anything and walked there while strolling at the same time.

There was no talking; however, the atmosphere wasn't awkward by any means. Both of them were walking at a relaxed pace. After a while, Emily leaked out some words in a mutter.

「You see, I'm thinking of teacher even now.」

「Hm?」

Kousuke tilted his head. Emily continued while slightly looking up at the sky.

「He betrayed us, did inhuman things like that, and in the end, he tried to take along a lot of people with him in death.....even so, I cannot hate him. Even now, somewhere inside me, I'm thinking of that person as "our teacher".Do you think it's strange?」

「I wonder. After all, I don't know what has been accumulated between Emily and Down.」

Emily smiled a bit happier knowing that Kousuke didn't make any denial.

「Yep, there are a lot of things that we had accumulated. I cannot forget them. Whether when he reached out to me, or how he saved me, or the warm place and important teachings that I received, I cannot forget them.」

「Because, those weren't a lie, right?」

「.....Yes. Those weren't a lie.」

At that time, the young Emily who was cornered by the environment was saved, it was a fact. The fact that she was given the warmth of a family, and also everything else. The important things residing in Emily's heart weren't a lie.

A shadow of melancholy fell on Emily's expression once more.

「That's exactly why, I feel it's scary.」

「.....」

Emily kept looking down without showing any sign whether she noticed or not the gaze of Kousuke who was looking at her from the side. She continued talking in mutters.

「Surely, Berserk is inside everyone. Just a little impetus, something that is trifling for other people will become the trigger, awakening it. Surely, it's easy to occur on a particular field. That's what I think.」

Everyone had the seed of madness at the bottom of their heart. Kousuke couldn't deny that. The face of the classmates that didn't manage to go home together with them passed through Kousuke's mind. The binding of their hearts slipped off under a unique situation.

Just as Emily said, even in a situation that wasn't that unique, it was still something that could possibly occur. And then, her remark that meant that the binding of the heart was easier to come off for those who tried to walk through a path to the extreme was likely to be an accurate statement.

「Even now, I'm thinking it. If teacher didn't meet me, perhaps teacher would be able to live normally as an excellent educator.」

It was a meaningless what-if. Emily also understood that. But, she couldn't help but think about it. She thought and thought, but even so, she continued to wander the labyrinth of her pondering, of what she actually should do.

It was terrifying. Thinking that perhaps ahead of her path she would once more pull the trigger of someone's Berserk. She didn't have any intention of giving up her dream, but even so, no matter what, when she thought of the future ahead of her path of research, her hands and feet stiffened, and something cold and heavy was sinking to the bottom of her guts.

Kousuke averted his gaze from Emily and looked up to the sky. It was likely that Emily wasn't asking for anything from Kousuke by talking about this. The proof of that was how the light of determination could be seen inside her eyes that were tinged with melancholy, that even if that was the case, she wouldn't draw back, she couldn't draw back. Therefore, why she was making Kousuke hear her heavily agonizing thoughts even just for a little was merely her depending on Kousuke.

Kousuke scratched his head awkwardly at Emily who was showing such awkwardness in depending on others. And then, he started a strange talk.

「In the past, at a certain place a long time ago, no wait, it wasn't that long ago, it was something relatively recently, anyway, at a certain place, there was a

single hero.」

「Heh? Err, Kousuke?」

‘What’s up so suddenly?’ Emily tilted her head. Ignoring that, Kousuke continued to talk.

「The hero was super handsome; he excelled in both brain and physical aspects. He was fair and kind, overflowing with a sense of justice, and a super popular male. He made others feel ‘just explode’, but anyway he was a really good guy.」

「Yo, you wanted him to explode even though he was a good guy?」

「Nn, well, just ignore that. Anyway, one day the perfect superhuman hero was summoned to another world together with his comrades. He was kidnapped along with the people around him by a damned shitty god somewhere just out of curiosity.」

Seeing Kousuke who was talking in annoyance caused Emily to go ‘hah’ in realization. The fairytale that Kousuke was suddenly talking now was surely not a fairytale. It was a part of the tale of the beginning when this profoundly mysterious hero was born.

Emily closed her mouth and concentrated on her ears. The person she loved was trying to tell her something by going as far as disclosing his secret. She focused so that she wouldn’t overhear even one word.

「Putting aside the intention of the shitty god, the people of that world said to the hero and his group. Save us they said. Defeat the enemy they said. The hero responded, that if there are people in trouble then, of course, they should help. The hero and his comrades who had crossed through worlds had managed to obtain great power, so surely it will go well he thought. But——」

It didn’t go like that.

「Bit by bit, bit by bit, something black was starting to pile up inside the hero.」

「Something, black.....」

Emily could guess. That must be the seed of Berserk. Something everyone possessed, a negative emotion.

「The justice that the hero believed in, it didn't work on anything. He lost his fairness and became as though he was possessed by the deep-rooted delusion that he should be the correct one. His comrades and childhood friends also remonstrated him, but the hero who was instigated by the enemy——betrayed everything.」

「-」

Emily had her breath taken away. Emily didn't know what happened to the hero. But, she could somehow see her teacher overlapping with the hero. Just what did the hero feel at that time? Just with what kind of feeling did the hero betrayed his comrades? And then——how did the hero end up in the end?

Matching Emily who came to a stop, Kousuke also stopped walking and continued while staring at Emily.

「The hero pointed that tremendous power of his toward us. He pointed it toward his childhood friends who should be important to him. He pointed it, toward the people that he said should be protected. At the time of the decisive battle when that guy was needed the most, that guy was on the enemy's side. Everything was in order to prove that he was exactly the correct one. In order to take back the time when everything went well for him.」

「.....What happened then, to the hero?」

Emily asked by squeezing out her voice. In response to that Kousuke,

「Yeah, he got beaten up black and blue by a girl, his childhood friend until he apologized tearfully. He came back with his face swollen up so much it made us feel 'seeerves you right you handsome'.」

「Eh?」

This was the aftermath of a grand betrayal. Emily thought that surely this would be a tragic story but with a bit of salvation in it even then. But seeing Kousuke laughing casually while talking「Oh mann~, at that time that guy came back with a pathetic face! He apologized while looking like he was going to cry, but his front teeth were some broken up that it made everyone almost break out laughing! That was seriously a serious breaker y'know!」, Emily's face went blank in a daze.

Kousuke who noticed Emily who couldn't follow at all then cleared his throat *cough* once.

「Well, what I want to say, that.....sorry. I couldn't save your teacher.」

「Eh? E, ah, no, that's not-. I, don't mean something like——」

Emily tried to make an excuse in a panic, but Kousuke stopped her with his hand and smiled wryly. However, he then directed a strong gaze at Emily that made her heart jump.

「I know. But, even so, I swear here, Emily. If ahead of this path Emily is walking through someone gets their madness awakened, that time I won't let you lose them. Even if I have to sock them in the face, I will drag them back to you without fail.」

「u, a」

She was at a loss for words. While Emily's mouth was opening and closing wordlessly, Kousuke gifted her with words that illuminated her path.

「That's why don't make that kind of pained face and just advance ahead through your path.」

Emily leapt. Where to? That was obvious. Toward the chest of her beloved hero. Emily leaked out sobbing 'hics hics' from something hot filling inside her chest while Kousuke gently caressed her hair.

It was unknown how long they were like that. Before long, Emily lifted her face. Kousuke pulled her hand and began walking once more toward the destination.

Silence was descending once more, but this time it was with a really awkward atmosphere. Emily kept glancing at the side of Kousuke's face with moist eyes while Kousuke being Kousuke was writhing inside from his own speech.

Trying to change the atmosphere a little, Kousuke spoke a proposal that he actually had been thinking about since some time ago.

「Hey, Emily」

「Whaaat, Kousuke」

Her voice was sweet. It was dripping sweet. The sugar content in the air was increasing. Kousuke went「I, I might have really done it now.....」while sweating coldly.

「About your research from here on.」

「Uh huh. Continuing it in the university.....will be hard I think. But, somewhere else——」

「About that, if you want, how about trying to go to another world?」

「Another world.....」

Inside Emily, it already had become a fact that Kousuke was summoned to another world together with his comrades. She didn't think that his story was fiction. Rather, she comprehended that Kousuke's mysterious power had its root from there.

And now, she might be able to go to the world where Kousuke obtained his power of a hero. That was enough to fill Emily with happiness.

「Is it okay?」

「Yeah, you more or less need the permission from the demon king to go to the world over there, but well, surely there won't be a problem. You see, on the other side, there are a lot of mysterious plants and minerals that don't exist here. There is also something like a pharmacy study there more or less, and if Emily learns that and puts it into use for your research, won't that become a shortcut for a breakthrough?」

「Pharmacy study of another world.....certainly, that is really interesting. That healing medicine is also made from there, isn't it?」

「H~m, I guess. Though it's roughly not pure chemicals but a magic medicine though.....」

Emily's eyes were sparkling bright with the idea of going to Kousuke's world, and also that it might be useful for her lifework. Her gaze looked far better than her enraptured gaze before this. For Kousuke, it was a poison in various meaning. Though it was him reaping what he sowed.

「Also you see because there is magic in the world there, the technology there

is not that developed. Currently, I'm studying medical science here, but I'm doing that with the objective of wanting to heighten the medical technology there without magic.」

「.....Kousuke, by any chance, are you planning to go to that other world in the future?」

Emily looked up anxiously at Kousuke. He nodded in response without hesitation. A shadow fell on Emily's expression.

「Well, currently, the demon king is taking measures so that it will be easier to come and go from here to there, so I'm not going to be on that side forever without coming back though.....」

Hearing that, Emily began pondering something. Kousuke went「Hm?」seeing that and tilted his head. And then Emily suddenly snapped her head up and declared to Kousuke.

「Then, at that time I will accompany Kousuke too! At that time, I'll show you that I can develop the other world's pharmaceuticals more!」

Seeing Emily declaring 'I absolutely will be useful to Kousuke!', Kousuke was thinking from the start that he wished for Emily's cooperation in improving the medical treatment without using Tortus's magic, so he accepted immediately. However, he somewhat felt a strange weight from the word「accompany」that Emily said.....

No, let's stop lying to himself. Kousuke was convinced. That word absolutely meant「accompany」in that meaning. Kousuke was sweating coldly. Emily's cheeks were dyed red, and her eyes were sparkling fierily perhaps from thinking of the future. There was no doubt that in her brain she was surely imagining the development where the two of them were examining patients at the clinic in another world.

Even though she would be in another world, if there was a method to return to earth, then it would be safer to do her research in another world rather than on Earth where there was a possibility she would be targeted. She would also be able to defeat Alzheimer with the result of that research.

For Emily, immigration to another world was completely a good thing.

「He, hey, Emily. There is also something that I have to tell you.....」

Kousuke was opening his mouth to speak about the matter that he missed the chance to say until now because of one thing or another. Right now, he was going to say it loud and clear. But it seemed that the goddess of fate was quite detestable.

A familiar ringtone interrupted Kousuke's words. It seemed that Vanessa was the caller. Kousuke cursed「Vanessaaa」inside his heart, but thinking of the thing that he asked her to confirm, he couldn't ignore this.

Like that, what entered the ear of Kousuke who took the call was good news that came in with a truly miraculous timing.

AN: Continue to the second part

Arifureta Chapter 223

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Epilogue Second Part

AN: This is the second part of the two parts epilogue.

There is the first part before this; please pay attention.

「Hey, Kousuke. Is this the place you wanted to take me to?」

「Yeah, this place.」

The Emily's gaze couldn't hide her perplexity and was wandering around without any calm. That was reasonable. The place Kousuke brought her to at a fast pace after the call from Vanessa——was a hospital.

The question of「Why?」was whirling inside Emily's head.

「You see, this hospital is under the influence of the security bureau. They make use of it for the criminals and the victims of a case, or people with circumstances.」

「Security bureau's.....eh, wait, then」

「Yeah, the people related with the【Berserk】case are also hospitalized here.」

Emily gulped. The people who got【Berserk】stored inside their stomach but didn't have it explode yet, the people who were confined for experiments but luckily could be rescued just in time, and the research facility personnel who got injured during the suppression operation and so on, they were all here.

Emily looked around with a sorrowful expression, but she suddenly noticed something. Even with all those people here, it wasn't a reason to bring her here. If someone turned into a berserker, then it was too late for them, and in the case that they hadn't turned into a berserker, then it would completely be the domain of a doctor. There wasn't any reason for Emily who was a researcher to

be here.

Yes, if there was a reason for her to be brought here, then it would be the same reason as the families of the patients who were gathering in the patients' room or corridor even now——

With a shudder, an indescribable emotion that was different from a chill was welling up inside Emily.

「Wa, wait, wait Kousuke! By, by any chance, in, in here.....but, I, definitely remember that everyone was-」

「It kept bothering me all this time. In Emily's story, it was only your parting with her that was different. I didn't say anything because I thought that it was a slim chance, but I believed that the possibility wasn't zero.」

“Her”——Emily understood who that word referred to.

That's right. Indeed it was right. It was only her who Emily didn't see directly. When they parted from each other in the end, she lured away the immediately approaching berserker and vanished. But Emily didn't confirm her last moments at all.

The repeated death, the overwhelming presence of death of【Berserk】, the heavy tremor that was chasing after her, all of those pushed Emily into despair. That was why she thought that must be the last moment for that person, yet.....

「I was thinking about confirming it by myself, but before I could, chief-san found her and contacted me. It looks like she hadn't recovered her consciousness yet, so just in case, in order to confirm it directly and find out the details of her condition, I asked Vanessa to go ahead.....」

There was already no more words. The hope rising up inside was making Emily's heart quiver.

「The call from Vanessa just now. ——She said that she was awake. She was heavily wounded and needs complete bed rest, but there is nothing threatening to her life.」

「a, a.....」

Emily covered her mouth with the hand that wasn't being pulled by Kousuke,

and then her blurry gaze caught the figure of Vanessa talking with a person who seemed to be a doctor.

Vanessa, who noticed Kousuke and Emily, then lowered her head to the doctor before turning her gaze to the two of them. Her expression was a gentle and relaxed one that they had never seen until now. Just from that expression, Emily discerned that there wasn't anything bad at all. She grasped that her hope wasn't a lie.

「She is all right, Doctor Grant. She is also really lucid, and the doctor also said that there would be no problem if she is going through treatment. Now, she is waiting. Please meet her.」

「Vanessa.....yes, yes-」

Kousuke let go of the hand he held and gently pushed Emily's back. Vanessa sent her off with a gentle smile. Emily couldn't endure it and tears were trickling down her face while she opened the door to the patient room and entered inside.

pi-pi-pi- Other than the resounding sound of medical equipment, the patient room was enveloped in silence. The sunlight poured in through the window that had its curtain opened, illuminating the patient room brightly.

With staggering steps, Emily approached the bed slowly. There, she saw the woman whose both legs were fixed in place, her head bandaged, and her hand was receiving an intravenous drip.

Perhaps that woman noticed Emily's presence because she slowly opened her closed eyes.

And then,

「.....Emily. Aa, I'm glad. You are safe.」

While sleeping on the bed with wounds all over her body, the words that came out the very first time from her mouth were words that rejoiced of the safety of her little sister——

「Lizzie-nee-!!」

With her mind still pure white, Emily only surrendered her body to her great

joy and leapt into the chest of her big sister— —Lizzie Ashton. Lizzie, who received the embrace of her beloved little sister, naturally,

「Ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Wait-, it hurts, it hurts I told you, Emily! Your big sis is dying! I'm dying for sure this time!」

「Fueah!? So, sorry-, Lizzy-neee!」

She fainted in agony. A person who was in a total bed rest mustn't be jumped at. This was important. Emily was flustered and all shaken up while Lizzie smiled wryly「What a hopeless girl」with teary eyes that endured the pain.

「It's fine if you do it slowly. Look, come here, Emily.」

「Lizzie-neee」

Softly, as though she was touching a delicate artwork, Emily timidly embraced Lizzie, and then she began to leak out sobbing 'hics hics'. Lizzie partly closed her eyes at her little sister that was like that while caressing Emily's head with a gentle hand manner.

「Fufu, you really have become a crybaby while I fainted just for a bit, didn't you? Just where has the usually obstinate person gone to I wonder.」

「Fho, fho cares.....hics, sniff-」

Emily grumbled while hugging tightly without any signs of letting go. Lizzie's smile was getting increasingly broader.

「I heard about the matter this time, just for a bit from that cool female agent. Looks like you have gone through a great adventure.」

「I'm, not. It wasn't, adventure..... I just, needed to do, something somehow.....but, I couldn't, do anything.....I only, kept getting, helped.....」

「Yeah. That Paradis-san also said that she wanted to protect Emily because you were working very hard. Also, there is one more hero-san? I heard that he too lent his strength because Emily worked really hard.」

Emily stirred restlessly and lifted her face from Lizzie's chest, and then her face that turned terrible because of the tears and mucus distorted.

Lizzie wiped up Emily's face that became like that while she proudly gifted

Emily her words along with a gentle smile that Emily idolized.

「You have worked hard haven't you, Emily? As expected from the little sister of us all. Surely those guys, and Rick, and also teacher, they must be proud of you.」

「Lizzie-neee-」

「Ah, ah, geez. Even though you are a beauty, it is wasted like this.....come one, blow your nose, blow」

Emily blew her nose just as she was told. And then, she restlessly buried her face into Lizzie's chest once more. Right now, she only wanted to earnestly feel her beloved big sister.

And then, Lizzie also embraced tightly such an Emily. She was only showering her love to her little sister who survived and gritting her teeth against the loneliness toward the person she loved and their comrades who had protected them.

Part 2

The airport's lobby was really bustling with people waiting for their departure and people waiting for the arrival of flight passengers. At a waiting place where there were several rows of bench seats in place, Emily, whose eyes were still red, was staring at Kousuke apologetically.

「Sorry, Kousuke. Because of me, there is barely any time left. In the end, you cannot go buy souvenirs or do anything else.」

「No, it's fine. That was a special reunion for you. I'm not that boorish that I would be a nuisance with that.」

In the end, after Emily, who had transformed into a sticky burr on Lizzie, was finally pried off after the nurse noticed that Lizzie was almost fainting with the white of her eyes half exposed. (TN: A burr is prickly seeds or seed heads that stick to fur and clothes)

However, even with that, it seemed that Emily hated to exit the room, and when she was scolded by the nurse and got dragged outside, Emily

spontaneously yelled「ONEE-CHAAAN!」and reached out her hand. Lizzie, whose eyes snapped open in a flash hearing her little sister's shout, then reached out her hand「EMILY——」, which got the intravenous drip torn off from her hand which turned it into even more commotion. The two of them were really sisters that were similar to each other.

The nurse, who was treated as a mafia member who was trying to tear apart the loving sisters from each other because of an unpaid debt, then got a throbbing vein on her forehead. Even then, the nurse kept treating the situation. It went without saying that Kousuke and Vanessa then earnestly apologized to the nurse.

Because of this and that, in the end, they arrived at the airport with barely any time left until the departure, which caused Emily to be apologetic.

「Well, at any rate, it's great that Lizzie-san is alive.」

「Yes-」

It was a blunt topic change, but Emily responded with a broad smile. The lost things wouldn't come back, and the wounds from that time wouldn't vanish for her whole life. But, even so, there was salvation, even if it was just one. It was really as though the world rewarded a little to someone that had done their best.

And, at that time, Vanessa, who left them for a bit because she received a call, returned to them.

「Kousuke-san. Bernard is coming to see you off.」

「Yoo, Aby. I came as the troops' representative.」

It seemed Vanessa had gone to the entrance to welcome Bernard who came to the airport to see off Kousuke.

「Coming expressly here like this, is your work okay?」

「No, it's not okay. That's why I need to go back right away, but it will be no good if we don't give even a single parting salute when you return home to your country like this. Besides, you see, here is a souvenir from the guys in the troops.」

「Eh, my bad, troubling you like this. But, if that's the case, then I'll accept gratefully——」

Kousuke got a bit shy while he peeked inside the bag before his cheeks convulsed. Inside there were various combat knives and bullets that were carved with strange letters. There were also hand grenades that were written with obscene jokes, a Zippo lighter, and a high-class cigar crammed inside.

「Are you an idiot!? There is no way I can bring this back!」

Kousuke turned into a straight-man reflexively, but Bernard replied with a puzzled expression.

「Eh, but, you. You are normally carrying something like this, right? Remember, that small katana, or the knives.」

「Ah.....yeah, I guess. Sorry. Also thanks.」

He had no words to retort to that. Like that, Kousuke put the souvenir into his rucksack. He planned to throw them into the Treasure Warehouse later.

Bernard, who finished handing over the souvenirs, then nodded in satisfaction before he swiftly turned around. It seemed that it was true that busy.

「See ya, Aby. When next you come here, show your face no matter what. I'll introduce you to a delicious restaurant.」

「Aa, thanks. Bernard too, don't be too reckless.」

Kousuke smiled wryly while saying his thanks to Bernard who he could only think of as someone that was loved by the death god and the goddess of luck simultaneously. And then,

「What are you saying? I have a wife and a cute daughter waiting at home for my return. No matter what happens, I will go back home for sure.」

「That's why-, don't say those kinds of lines so easily like that!」

「Just you wait Annie (the six years old daughter). Father will get home soon.....」

「Wai-, Bernard! You, seriously be careful! There is absolutely a death god right behind you there!」

Bernard so easily built a dangerous flag as naturally as breathing like always. And then his figure vanished into the crowd.

「What should I say, in a sense, it feels like he is the one nearest to Kousuke-san. I cannot help but feel amazed that he doesn't die with that.」

「I can agree with that.」

Vanessa, for some reason, was staring at Bernard vanishing into the crowd with a gaze that seemed like she was looking at a rival while saying such a thing.

「Kousuke, it will be time soon.」

「Oh, is that so. Then, perhaps I should go soon.」

Kousuke stood up and shouldered his rucksack. And then, he was about to walk toward the boarding gate. But then his sleeve got pulled.

「Hm? Emily, what's wrong?」

「.....」

While staring at the floor, Emily pinched at Kousuke's sleeve tightly without showing any sign of releasing it. Kousuke reflexively looked at Vanessa looking for help, but Vanessa only shrugged and didn't say anything.

「Eeer, Emily. I'm leaving behind my clone, and I also told you my contact number, right? We will be able to meet again soon, don't look that reluctant; it's embarrassing somehow.」

「.....」

Kousuke said that kind of thing with an exaggerated gesture a bit jokingly, but Emily's state didn't change. No, her ears that could be seen from between her blond hair were in the progress of changing. They were gradually getting redder. Looking closer, her neck and cheeks were also dyed red.

Kousuke then grasped the situation「Come to think of it, in the end, I failed to say anything of it! Not good!」, and he opened his mouth to say something. But, before he could,

「Yo, you see-. You see-, Kousuke! I, I actually-, that, about Kousuke I——」

The Emily's face snapped up in a flash and was truly that of a bright red apple.

Her eyes were moist, and inside them, there was an immeasurable heat. At a glance, it was obvious that she was about to liberate into words the flame that was already blazing up thunderously inside her chest currently.

The Emily's voice unexpectedly reverberated loudly and stopped the activity of the surrounding people and the people from walking along. Their attention gathered at the two of them. The onlookers guessed the atmosphere between the two「Oh my? Could this possibly be.....」and their eyes sparkled with deep interest.

And then, Emily-chan, who was already at her wits' end, was about to carry out her first confession in her life, and her mouth formed the shape of saying「Io」, it was at that instant,

「Ah, there you are! Kou-ku~~~n-≡」

A dignified and clear voice rang through the lobby. That voice was so refreshing, and also vaguely contained a sweet sensuality, that everyone spontaneously searched for the owner of the voice.

Naturally, Kousuke, who was familiar with that voice, thought「Don't tell me-」while he reflexively averted his gaze from Emily and turned his face toward the direction of the voice.

It was in the middle of her once in a lifetime confession, yet Kousuke turned his gaze toward the other. That caused Emily's expression to turn 'funya' into a pitiable look. But, it was no good for her to be like that. Emily had to take her battle stance right away before it became a sorrow for her.

After all, right there, the person who would become the fated enemy of Emily was approaching near.

「Kou-kun!」

「Rana!?!」

Emily and Vanessa also turned their gaze when Kousuke called a name. There, they could see a super beautiful onee-san running toward them from the other side of the crowd.

Two hills were jiggling up and down with each step of the run. Beautiful dark

blue hair. Tight waist and beautiful legs that looked unreal. With a beautifully well-proportioned body that was 8 times longer than the head, which was realized in real life. And looks that harmonized both cuteness and beauty perfectly.

That beautiful onee-san was rushing toward them with an attractive movement like a rabbit hopping forward *pyon pyon*. She decided that the crowd was a hindrance and shifted her route a bit.

And then, while the people were paying attention to her in various meanings, she leapt and used the nearby pillar as a foothold to easily fly over the crowd with a beautiful rotation in midair. The onlookers unconsciously raised admiring voices「Ooh」seeing that acrobatic performance, but the beautiful onee-san Rana Hauria ignored them and leapt toward Kousuke with a *pyon*.

「Kou-kun, long time no see. I wanted to meet you.」

「Eh, ah, yeah. I also wanted to meet you but, no, before that, why are you here!?!」

Kousuke asked with his eyes darting about in surprise. Rana chuckled seeing that while answering.

「You see boss opened the gate for me. He said that it was for an experiment. And then the boss said that it seems Kou-kun is in trouble, so he asked me if I wanted to meet you for a bit and helped to send me here.」

「So, this is Nagumo's doing.....」

「Yes, I'm grateful for boss's consideration. But, it's strange you know. For some reason, boss was really impatient just now. 『It's no good if you wait until he comes back. Go there right now. Right now! It's better if you ambush him at the airport. Perhaps there will be someone near him, but don't worry of it and just jump at him!』boss said.」

『Tha, tha, that bastaaard-. He knew and still did this!』

Kousuke guessed the reason why the demon king sent Rana here. It was complete harassment. Or perhaps, he did this from a sentiment of「Comrade♪ Comrade♪」.

In any case, Kousuke was swearing inside his heart while trying to separate himself from the clinging Rana for the time being because of the attention he was showered with— —

「Kousuke, that woman, who?」

「Hih」

He could hear a broken language. It was a voice without any emotion in it, a mechanical voice that sounded like a machine. Kousuke moved his gaze with a crude motion like a machine that forgot to be oiled. Toward the girl who was about to confess to him.

「Hih」

And then, he shrieked for the second time. Because Emily-chan's eyes, they were completely a single color. She was smiling faintly, but the pupils of her largely opened eyes were opening. It was a face that must not be shown by a beautiful girl.

「Kousuke? Who. That woman?」

「Hm? Ara, nice to meet you young lady.」

The one who reacted first to the repeated question was Rana. It seemed that Rana noticed Emily's existence for the first time when she separated from Kousuke. She then smiled sweetly. And then, she guessed from how Emily called Kousuke's name that she must be his acquaintance, and so she introduced herself.

With the decorous method, Hauria-style.

First of all, the sunglasses were necessa~ry!

「Mine name is Ranainferna Hauria! The wind shadow of the head reaper clan, and the lover of the right-hand of the demon king Lord Abyssgate! If you are a friend of the lord, then I welcome you without any reservation. However, please never forget that I'm a woman that belongs to darkness. You won't get away with just a mere scolding near me.」

There was a rotation. There was a cool pose! From the sunglasses that was slightly lowered, there was a perfect wink *pachin-*.

It was done. The perfect greeting was done toward the friend of her beloved lover. Rana in fact—Rana went「fuh」and her face turned into a triumphant look.

Kousuke crumbled down. The onlookers couldn't catch up at all with the development! Vanessa was nodding「Hohou, so there is a lover already」with an expression that was somewhat admiring.

And then, as for Emily,

「Lo ve r? Lo ve r.....Lo ver.....Lover!?!」

She recovered her sanity. And then, she turned her face toward Kousuke with a motion just like Kousuke before this; it felt like there would be a *gigigi* sound ringing out from her neck with how crudely it moved. And then, with an expression that looked half-smiling, or perhaps it was half-crying, on her face, Emily asked.

「Kousuke.....you have, lover?」

「.....err.....yes.」

The onlookers were starting to make the noise 'A carnage, it's a carnage'. Kousuke glanced at the commotion with a cold sweat while searching for words. Rana was looking alternately at Kousuke and Emily with a puzzled gaze while Vanessa was staring fixedly at the transition of the situation.

After knowing the fact that Kousuke had a lover, Emily's body was trembling all over while her eyes were looking down.

「He, hey, Emily? I thought many times of telling you this——」

「WHYYYY! WHY DO YOU HAVE A LOVER! WHYYYYYYYYY-!!」

「Whoaa!? Ca, calm down Emily!」

「UWAAAAAAAAAAN-, this is just strange-. Just why didn't you tell mee! I would still absolutely fall in love even sooo-, but all the same, this is just too much-. UWAAAAAAAAAAN-」

The loud scream echoed in the airport lobby. Even the staff of the airport were approaching in wonder of what was going on.

Kousuke, who got his collar grasped and was shaken back and forth, tried to

stop Emily, but Emily, in her deranged state, was unstoppable.

In that chaotic scene, Rana was holding her chin with her hand while thinking of something「Uu~n」, then she clapped her hands *pon-* and walked closer toward the two briskly.

「Yes yes, Emily-chan, can I call you that? How about stopping at that, and talk a bit with me?」

Rana, who took off her Hauria mode, talked to Emily consolingly.

By the way, Hauria mode referred to the chuuni mode in full power. It was always on 24-hours when she was together with the Hauria clan. But, at the time when she was just alone with Kousuke, and at the time when there was no Hauria around, Rana had become able to talk normally in a normal mode!

Rana was taught that this was the decorum on Earth by Shia. It was a secret art that she learned desperately for the sake of greeting Kousuke's parents!

「Uu, what do you want? Is this where you tell me to not approach your man-?」

「No? I just want to confirm to you, Emily-chan.」

「Just whaaat」

「You like Kou-kun? Not as a friend, but as a man?」

「Uuh.....that's right-, I like him! I love him! I'm sorry! FUEEEEEEEN-」

Emily confessed that she loved him by throwing all caution to the wind, and then right after that, she thought that she had done wrong to Rana and apologized, and she wailed once more. Seeing that, Rana judged that Emily's feelings were a serious one——

For some reason, her eyes were sparkling brightly. And then, she tightly hugged the wailing Emily *mugyu-*.

「You did it, Kou-kun! The wife is multiplying!」

She blurted out such a thing.

「Eer, Rana-san? Just what could you possibly be talking about desu?」

Kousuke's speech was turning polite language, for some reason, while he

asked with convulsing cheeks. In response to that,

「Eh? That's why, 'finally the second wife get!' I said.」

Rana responded back with a puzzled expression.

The surrounding fell silent. Kousuke also fell silent. Emily's wailing stopped.

Kousuke's expression looked like he was enduring a headache, and he asked while massaging his temple.

「Wh, what's with multiple wives? Isn't the premise strange? I'm planning to marry Rana though?」

「Eh? It's not strange, is it? Kou-kun marry me, then marry Emily-chan. After that, you need at the very least five more people!」

「Why!? Why do I need seven wives!? Polygamy is forbidden you know! Or rather, normally a wife is just one person!」

Kousuke shouted. Toward that, Rana tilted her head with an expression that was confused as expected,

「That's if it's in Japan, isn't it? Kou-kun will come to my place, right? Besides, one day you will become the clan head, so having just one wife——that's no good, right?」

「Ka, Kam-san only has one wife, right!?」

「That's true, but the elder folk usually have multiple wives you know? Don't you know that? Besides——」

「Besides?」

While hearing the sound of his common sense crumbling, Kousuke asked Rana timidly. Rana clinched a broad smile and a thumbs up while she responded.

「Even though our boss created a harem, if Kou-kun, who is his right-hand man, only has one wife then you will get looked down on! It's fine! You don't need to be that worried because I have arranged so that I can get along well with the fellow wives!」

「That's not the proble——m-」

Kousuke cradled his head in his hands. In Kousuke's mind, he had imagined a future where he and Rana would be a husband and wife like a pair of swans as the head of the clan, yet the Rana in question was actually having expectations of 'won't the next wife get found out soon already'. Somehow, Kousuke felt like various things inside him got smashed.

He felt like he could vaguely hear the voice of the demon king「You too, have a taste my feelings, my bosom friend」. He got the mood of wanting to punch him flying very much.

「Wai-, just wait a second. You, you are saying that it's fine even if I'm included?」

Emily somehow managed to pull out from Rana's chest and asked in agitation.

「But of course. Let's support Kou-kun together, okay?」

「No no no, that's absolutely no good! Something like that! That's just, im, impure! As I thought, a married couple has to be a pair that is being the best partner for each other.....」

Emily, whose head was messed up already, was talking about what a married couple was. But Rana was directing a meaningful expression「Fu~hn」at such Emily. Seeing that, Emily bluffed「Wha, what is it」to which Rana smiled complacently.

「Then Emily-chan, you can just give up on Kou-kun. If you say that it's no good unless there is only one wife, then that position is mine. There is absolutely zero chance for you to replace me.」

「-. Tha, that's.....」

「Fufuhn', Rana showed a fearless smile. Emily was plainly flustered by that. Rana wore her sunglasses once more and made a rotation.

「Hmph, it's absurd to believe that you can win against this me. The heart of Abyssgate is the prisoner of my hand of darkness. There is no hope for anyone to liberate it from me. Fufufu-」

Well, in other words, it seemed that Rana was saying 'Kousuke is deeply in love with me, and I also have no intention of letting him go at all~'.

Emily saw Rana sharply pointing her finger at her, and she understood one thing.

「.....I got it. So you are the cause.」

「Hm? What are you saying I wonder? Oh, cute little kitty?」

「That's why-, I'm saying that you are the cause! That speech and act of Kousuke that was painful to look at, that's because of you, right!?!」

「Gafuh!?!」

Kousuke was shot. A girl said that she loved him, but it seemed that actually, she thought that he was painful to look at. Cracks entered his heart.

「Actually, he is a cool and lovely person! Yet the moment the battle starts, he becomes strange! It's you who made Kousuke become like that, isn't it!?!」

「Gofuh!?!」

「Fuh. Indeed, it's not an exaggeration to say that it was me who awakened Lord Abyssgate. And? If that's the case, then what are you going to do? Do you think that a kitty like you can do anything?」

Rana chuckled 'ku-ku-ku-' looking really crooked. She was in high spirits. She was in super high spirits.

Not noticing Rana's mood which was absurdly enjoying this, Emily-chan, who was resolved to rescue her beloved, proclaimed a war declaration.

「I swear, I swear that I'll turn Kousuke back into a proper human!」

「Gahah!?!」

「I wonder if you are able to do that?」

「It's not about being able to or not. It's about doing it or not! Besides, I also won't let you get away.」

「Me?」

「That's right. Even though you are this beautiful, you are doing an embarrassing act like that! It's unforgivable as a fellow woman! I swear I'll turn you back into a proper human too!」

「Ku-ku-ku-, you can howl really loud, small hero! Then just try it! I won't run or hide anywhere! However, never forget. When you peek into the abyss, the abyss will also peek back toward you!」

「I won't lose! I will not lose! Just watch Kousuke! Because I won't let you be that kind of pitiful human!」

「.....」

Rana's loud laughter that couldn't hide her feelings of 'This is super fun!' was reverberating, and the war cry of Emily's, who was threatening like a cat going *fushaa-*, that was echoing caused Kousuke to feel like his heart died.

The airport was enveloped in chaos.

In the middle, Vanessa appealed「This loyalty, is higher than a mountain. This love, is deeper than the sea」while announcing her candidacy as the third wife. Hearing that, Rana said「You-, are pretty good! I warmly welcome you!」, to which Vanessa said「My greatest thanks」and fell on her knee theatrically. It was at that time that the security of the airport finally arrived.

While everyone was taken to the security office cordially, Kousuke took out his smartphone powerlessly and made a call.

『Ou, Endo. What's——』

「Just you wait, Nagumo.」

『Ha? Ah, you had met Rana already? From that sentence, it looks like it became something interesting huh?』

The voice of Hajime cackling loudly could be heard from the other side of the phone.

Kousuke spoke with a deeply held resentment.

「This time I'll sock you on the face! I'll make you regret handing Last Zell to me!」

『Eh, wai-, you——』

Kousuke cut off the call.

In front of him, there were Emily and Rana who were still continuing to

quarrel with each other even while receiving the exasperated gaze of the security staff. Sure enough, a new objective that was added into Emily's lifework— the grand objective of stopping the chuuni of Rana, and also the Hauria clan. Would the day it was accomplished come in the future?

「Kousuke-san. Four more wives left. They should be somewhere in the world. Let's do our best from here on. I'm feeling excited for some reason.」

「Which RPG is that huh? Just stay quiet a bit, Danessa.」

Kousuke averted his gaze from Danessa, who was staring at him with an excited gaze just as she said that and let out a deep sigh.

「Come to think of it, I'm not studying at all throughout this holiday.」

It seemed that Kousuke's dream was still far ahead.

The strongest assassin who nonchalantly saved a country, or possibly even the world, was worrying about the national mock exam that would be carried out on the first day after the holidays, and then he breathed out a deep sigh once more.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Finally, it is finished.....

This is really an extra long compilation. Shirakome never thought that he would write this much (wry smile).

Really, thank you very much for accompanying me to the very end.

It will make me happy if this can become a good thing for you to kill time with.

The development after this is completely undecided.

I also want to write about the characters that weren't written about in the Afterstory, like the hero or Shia. I want to try writing an extra for the others too.

However, I think I want to rest a little due to my circumstance in real life and so on. I'm wondering whether to rest for the whole of August.

I might nonchalantly update again when I raise my spirit, so at that time, it would make me happy if you readers would come read again.

Then, let's meet again later.

I pray so that lovely chuuni will be with everyone who loves Narou.

Arifureta Chapter 224

Arifureta After II The Obstinate Princess Lily

AN: The title is different from my advance notice?

Yes, when I noticed that I had written too much, I couldn't reach the part-time work leader Lily part in one chapter.

Part 1

tap tap tap tap- The sound of a typing keyboard resounded. The force of that typing was fierce. It was as though it represented the typing person's fury, or perhaps their desperation. That sound ruined the chic atmosphere of the office that was consolidated with wooden furniture.

「Uu, there is work today too. Tomorrow will be work too. The day after tomorrow too, and the day after that too, and the next day after that will be work too-! Even though, I'm not a princess anymoreee!」

The sound of *tap tap tap*- finally became a *da-da-da-da-da-da*- sound that resembled a shooting machine gun. Right now, the fingertips striking the keyboard were leaving behind afterimages.....such a thing didn't happen, but the force of the finger taps was to the degree that gave such an illusion.

The one who was skillfully using the modern earth device as a matter of unpleasant necessity with teary eyes, for some reason, was the beautiful girl who once was the princess of the Hairihi Kingdom in the other world Tortus——Liliana S. B. Hairihi, that person.

Liliana was fourteen-years-old when the other world summoning was carried out, with a face that still had childishness remaining in it at the time. But now she was about to reach twenty. The six years, and also the rich experience she went through during that time, had polished her beautiful face even further.

Her hair that was like flowing gold threads, her eyes that were overflowing with gentleness and intelligence, her rose-colored cheeks, her gracefully moist lips, and then her elegance and personality that were oozing out even without her particularly doing anything, all those factors were enough to captivate anyone regardless of gender.

In fact, Liliana who accepted the invitation of her beloved and migrated to this earth had been receiving immense fame——no, rather than fame, it was

more accurate to call it worship from a lot of people.

It showed from this.

knock knock, a knocking sound resounded a bit loudly, and when Liliana responded, a woman entered the room.

「Excuse me, your holiness. About the additional material for the case that will be discussed this afternoon.....」

「I had finished it-! Yes, I finished it already! After all, I was dealing with that since six o'clock in the morning you see!」

The woman who was wearing a business suit looking perfectly like a career woman was handed over the document by Liliana in a snap.

The woman, who was Liliana's secretary——Sandra Winchester, slightly opened wide her intelligent eyes and accepted the document while replying「As expected from your holiness」with a voice that was crammed with admiration.

Now then, about this designation that Sandra called Liliana with——“your holiness”.

Yes, it wasn't “your highness”, but “your holiness”.

They were on Earth, where there was only a limited number of people who could introduce themselves as royalty, so naturally, Liliana had abandoned her title as a princess in this world, but the title “holy woman” then clung to her as though in replacement.

This was exactly the reason why Liliana was teary-eyed since six in the morning as she exhibited her typing skill that was like a storm while discharging grumbles of complain.

「Your holiness. About the inquiry from the several countries that will question regarding the standing of “Hairihi Faith” at the conference today.....」

「It's not “Hairihi Faith”, it's “Hairihi Volunteer Association”!cough-. Anyway, give them the answer as indicated in the document. This is the draft. Please send it to the media correspondence department. I'll entrust them to proofread it to a certain degree, but please caution them earnestly that they are not to use any words that will endear to any faction.」

「Acknowledged. After all, this will affect the hundreds of thousands of believers from here on. I will enforce your holiness's will thoroughly. Also, the madam chief of Britain's state security department has called so about that.」

「It's not "believer", but "association member". Please delegate the whole thing with Magdanese-san to Kousuke-san. Also, I think that the Vatican will also come with the attempt to make contact, but delegate that to Kousuke-san too. He has a relationship with the leaders of both organizations, so delegate it wholly to him even if he comes crying or complaining. If he tries to escape, please tell him that I'll tattle to demon king-sama then.」

「Yes. Aa, also, about the secretary general that will be our conference partner, it seems that he has already arrived.」

「Uguh. He, he arrived really quickly. I guess that goes to show just how much expectation and suspicion he is holding. If the conference this time recognizes our "association" formally as an "international volunteer group".....then we will be able to clear the strange misunderstandings, and I too will be able to throw all the work wholesale to someone e——*cough*, to reach out my helping hand to a lot more people. No matter what, we have to sweep away the perception of our association that see us as a suspicious "newly rising religion".....」

「That's right. By using that kind of official stance to make use of the UN, we will permeate into every religion, and someday the teaching of your holiness's sublimity will spread to the whole wor——」

「It won't spread-. I'm not someone like a certain scheming demon king somewhere! Our association is purely a volunteer organization to the end; it's not a religious organization I tell you-. Or rather, recently I tended to ignore it, but don't call me "your holiness", but "chairman"!」

「Yes, chairman-sama(your holiness).」

「Hey you. Just now, you were attaching brackets there right!? It's plain to see you know! Ah, wait, what's with that expression that seems to say『It's fine, I understand everything clearly』! You completely don't understand anything!」

While Liliana's voice, which was mixed with straight-man retorts, was reverberating, Sandra was directing a gaze that was filled with affection and

respect toward the holy woman who was also modest today, and then she reverently bowed before taking her leave.

Inside the office that was filled with silence once more, the *tic tac* sound of the clock was echoing excessively loudly.

Liliana dropped her waist powerlessly on the chair and hung her head down while holding it with both hands.

And then, she muttered briefly right from her heart.

「How, did it turn out like this.....」

Now then, Liliana was supposed to be a normal girl without any titles whatsoever on Earth, but in less than two years her believers swelled up to the hundreds of thousands, and she got worshipped as the founder of a new religion——a “holy woman”. The government of every country and other religions were unreasonably cautious toward her, she had overcome brutal events like schemes behind the scenes and assassinations, and now she was preparing for a conference with the top brass of the United Nations in order to turn her association into a publicly recognized volunteer organization. Wherein after that, a press conference that would be broadcasted to the whole world would be opened up. In the end, just what kind of sequence of events made her end up falling into such a situation.....

Liliana put her hand on her stomach that was making a cute sound「kuu~」in protest of her failure to eat breakfast while her gaze was looking at the faraway scenery outside the window. And then she began to reminisce about the happenings in these two years and few months.

Part 2

Inside the office where there was silence and bright sunlight shining in, the sound of a moving pen *scratch scratch* and the sound of the clock that sounded like a chirping bird *chirp-chirp-chirp-chirp*- resounded.

It was a really calm atmosphere that was optimum for doing paperwork.

But the owner of that room was in a state that couldn't be said to be calm at all. The hand moving the pen didn't stop, but her gaze kept glancing briefly at the clock many times over. She then looked at the mountain of paperwork and sighed; her shoulders dropped after measuring the height of the paperwork..... then she started reducing the mountain of paperwork diligently, got fidgety, and got dejected.....

「Liliana-sama.....I understand your feelings, but no matter how many times you check the clock, the time won't progress faster you know?」

「-, I, I'm not, worrying about anything you know?」

「No, I'm not fooled at all. Because you are already fidgety like that.」

Liliana moaned「Uh」having that pointed out by her exclusive maid.

「Today is the day your beloved husband can cross over here, isn't it? Starting from that “Kouki-kun is abducted too many times-Case”, demon king-sama seemed to be busy with various things and got dragged into turmoil, so it has been five months since he could properly take time to meet you. That's why, isn't it fine even if Liliana-sama doesn't force yourself to do your duty just for today?」

「I cannot do that. If I shirk off my duty by using that person as an excuse, then there will be no meaning to my resolve that decided to be left here in this world.」

The maid suggested so; however, Liliana rejected it while smiling wryly.

A month after the legendary decisive battle. Even though at that time Liliana

was worked to death with the revival of her motherland, she still fiercely appealed to Hajime firmly. Perhaps that also worked in her favor because after many twists and turns (especially with the first wife), she managed to be accepted by Hajime along with Aiko who was also fiercely appealing like her. She then spent a brief time of happiness with him, but.....

Liliana was a princess.

Furthermore, his majesty, the king of the country, was absent, and her younger brother, which would be the next king, Randell was still immature. Although Liliana's mother Luluaria was working hard, as expected, there was a limit to the situation wherein the kingdom's capital was annihilated. The postwar processing that was done by Liliana, who had gathered much sympathy from her great effort as the commander-in-chief at the decisive battle, became something indispensable for the kingdom.

Therefore, although Liliana was conflicted, she made the decision to not abandon her position. It was unknown whether Hajime and others who would return to their home would be able to open the gate to Tortus once more. And so, there was even the possibility that it would become a parting for their whole life.

Even so, Liliana couldn't abandon her motherland.

Liliana told Hajime that she would stay behind with the resolve for everything. She declared that resolve of hers, however, Hajime smiled happily instead. Liliana remembered that smile clearly. Of course, that smile wasn't because Hajime was happy that he could part with Liliana. If that was actually the reason, then Liliana might've thrown herself off the tower regardless of her resolve or anything.....

Anyway, that determination became one of the great reason, and there was no doubt that she had accomplished joining the wives group. The night before the return to earth, it went without saying how the resolved Liliana was blazing more than usual.

「.....Princess. Please come back to reality. And please wipe up your drool. Your face has turned into something that must not be shown toward other people.」

「Hah!？」

Liliana had gone completely into a trip from recalling the passionate night she spent with Hajime. The exasperated voice of her exclusive maid caused her mind to return to reality with a ‘hah’. And then, she took out her handkerchief and thoroughly wiped the saliva trickling from the corner of her lips.

「Princess and Hajime-sama’s relation is really harmonious, isn’t it? The voices of envy among the maids also still hasn’t stopped. Similarly, I also feel really envious.」

「It, it’s not that great.....」

The words of her exclusive maid caused Liliana’s cheeks to go red, and she began to deal with the paperwork in high-speed to hide her embarrassment. For her to hide her embarrassment with high-speed paperwork processing, perhaps it was just as expected from the talented princess of the kingdom.

「.....Princess. At the “gate opening” this time, what will you do?」

「What do you mean?」

The exclusive maid who was gazing smilingly at the embarrassed Liliana then went through a complete change and asked with a serious expression.

「With the help of the artifacts that Hajime-sama exclusively left behind for the craftsmen, the royal capital reconstructed at an astounding speed. Seventy percent of the whole capital has been finished in this year and a half. The plan for the new royal capital’s formal ceremony of the revival proclamation has also begun.」

「.....That’s right. Certainly, with the help of everyone from the empire and the beastmen, the truly new royal capital is in the process of being built by also taking in the style of many nations. The functional beauty of the empire’s capital, the natural beauty of Fea Belgen, and then the traditional beauty of the Hairihi Kingdom.....it’s a wonderful city that harmonizes all of those.」

「Yes.」

「It will become a symbolic city that is worthy of the new era that has freed itself from the rule of the mad god. The ceremony has to be a grand celebration

that indicates a fresh start toward the new era.」

Liliana's gaze was directed from the window to the outside. Ahead of her gaze, there was a beautiful townscape taking shape. If she sharpened her ears, she would be able to faintly hear the hustle and bustle of the reconstruction and work activity.

Liliana's cheeks loosened, and her eyes squinted fondly at that. She felt like it was worth it for her to work so hard in which there was barely any time to sleep for her.

「Yes. This matter should be almost fixed already with the agreement of the empire and beastman clan too. And above all else, as long as Liliana-sama's spouse is that "Goddess's Sword"no, the "Godslaying Demon King", there won't be any problems that can occur that easily.」

「.....What is it that you want to say?」

Liliana returned her gaze from the window toward her exclusive maid. A suspicion dwelled inside her eyes. The exclusive maid told her master that she respected with a voice that was filled with gentleness and sympathy.

「Isn't it enough already?」

「Enough.....」

「Yes. His highness Randell-sama has grown remarkably; he also has excellent retainers with him. The reconstruction of the capital and the relationship with other countries, they have reached a point where we can take a breather. It's my humble opinion that even without Liliana-sama leading in the front, the kingdom is already able to keep advancing forward even then. Then, Liliana-sama, don't you think that it's better for Liliana-sama to start chasing after your own happiness?」

「.....」

‘Is that really the case?’ Liliana questioned herself while staring once more at the new capital outside the window.

Even so, certainly it was the fact that recently the work that absolutely needed Liliana to handle had decreased remarkably. And then, at times where

she could relax, her thoughts would run toward her beloved every time. She would think of him especially vividly at night when she was all alone by herself, constricting Liliana's heart painfully.

「Hajime-san.....」

「Fufu, isn't that the answer, Liliana-sama?」

「-」

A voice that wished for her beloved unconsciously leaked out. The exclusive maid that caught that voice laughed merrily with loosened cheeks as though she had seen something delightful or perhaps something charming. Liliana felt somewhat awkward getting seen through like that, and she averted her face with her cheeks reddening.

The exclusive maid chuckled even more from seeing Liliana like that. Surely, if in this place there were other servants who were serving under Liliana, every one of them would surely have made similar smiles from seeing their master's cuteness.

Everyone was holding really deep thoughts of respect and gratitude to Liliana.

Liliana was already loved by the servants and the people due to her personality. And yet, she didn't stop just there, when the capital was once attacked, she slipped out of the palace by herself and went to call for help. Such an event was well-known due to a certain merchant with a name that was similar to an energy drink.

In addition, it was also known how she tried to offer her body to the empire in order to save the kingdom that was weakened by the attack.

And then, in that legendary decisive battle.

While the people of the capital were sent to evacuate toward the empire, they asked what she would do with unease in their heart. To that, Liliana said with a smile.

——“Even though the royal capital will become a battlefield, if I, the princess, don't fight, then who will fight.”

She became the commander-in-chief and took the command of hundreds of

thousands of warriors in the battle that staked the existence of mankind. That gallant figure was spread far and wide by the surviving soldiers, mercenaries, and adventurers.

Her fame had risen up with a momentum that pierced the sky. Regardless of man or woman, young or old, in spite of race or occupation.

That was why the exclusive maid could say the words「it's enough already」with conviction. It was the general consensus of all the people.

Liliana threw her gaze outside the window once more, at the reconstructed city. She felt the warm gaze of the exclusive maid while wearing an ambiguous expression, unable to be convinced whether it was really fine for her to be liberated from the responsibility of royalty and chase after her own happiness by crossing over the world.

But, at that time, *ri—n* a sound that was like a wind chime rang. That was a signal from the room in a corner of the palace that was used for “gate opening”. The sign that the door to another world was opened.

「-. Hajime-san!」

Her gloominess until just now vanished elsewhere. Liliana's expression bloomed brightly in a flash like a child. She said to her exclusive maid「I'm going to welcome him!」before going out of the room with energetic footsteps without even waiting for a reply.

The exclusive maid was silently bowing toward the door that was opened vigorously.

Hajime, who appeared from the gate, was jumped by Liliana with obvious happiness. And then without stopping she pulled Hajime's hand like a kid and guided him to her own room.

Midway, they passed by the servants of the palace and several nobles, each time they faced Hajime with unconcealed respect while their expression greatly softened seeing Liliana who kept tugging on Hajime's hand in her grasp as though to say「Hurry-, hurryyy」.

Every time Liliana passed by someone, she would greet them politely, but it seemed she didn't notice their warm expressions. Surely, after some time passed and she calmed down, she would become like a ripe apple then.

Hajime was wearing a troubled smile seeing such a Liliana while he was getting dragged cutely. In Liliana's room, he received black tea that was personally brewed by her.

「Nevertheless, today Hajime-san comes alone then. I thought that Yue-san and the others would surely come too though.」

Liliana was placing a tea snack that looked like a cookie on the table while asking Hajime with her head tilted. Hajime made a smile that vaguely looked mischievous and asked back.

「What? You don't like being alone with me?」

「Suc, such a thing.....couldn't possibly be true.」

Liliana cheeks faintly reddened and she dropped her waist on the chair with a thump. Hajime's gaze that was oozing a bit of S aura caused her gaze to wander, and her body to fidget around without any composure. And then, Liliana became unable to endure Hajime's atmosphere that seemed to enjoy her state and changed the topic.

「And, what about Hajime-san? It seemed that you were really busy from “Kouki-kun is abducted too many times-Case” though.....」

「.....That naming, it really caught on?」

「Yes, well. After all, after that other world summoning, Kouki-san was further summoned again and dragged Hajime-san then, right? I heard the story that during the third summoning Kouki-san got dragged in with teary eyes while also dragging in Hajime-san. That story is already spread around here. Ryuutaro-san and others were telling that story looking really amused.」

Hajime half-smiled at Liliana's words.

Just as Liliana said, Kouki went into an atonement journey in this Tortus, but in the middle of his journey when he stopped by in the palace, he got summoned into another world somewhere.

There, Kouki faced his own way of living, and through many twists and turns, he saved the world but.....

At that time, when Hajime who was begged by Kouki's childhood friends and his wife rushed to where Kouki was for assistance, just when the series of event was resolved, and they were going 'no, let's go home', another summoning assaulted Kouki as though to say「Next one, please take care of ii~t」.

Kouki was on the verge of tears while yelling「I don't want anymoreeeee~~~」 and wasted no time clinging tightly to Hajime who was nearby. Demon king-sama got flustered「Wai-, you-」but it was already too late.

While the childhood friends and wives were staring in a daze, both of them intimately went through another world summoning for the third time.

To tell the truth, after various things were happening in that world, they got summoned for the fourth time. Kouki was a softhearted person, but as expected, it seemed that he snapped toward the goddess that requested「I want you to save the world」, and in front of the watching Hajime he,

「You stupid idiot-. Why are you giving up like this! Do your best-, do your best! You are a goddess right! If it's you then you can do it-. You can do it by yourself! You surely can! Believe in me who believes in you! If you give up, then it's the end of the world y'know!」

Like that, entrusting himself to the momentum, Kouki insisted「Please manage it somehow by yourself」. In a sense, he had done something astounding. It was a heartfelt insistence to the degree that it made Hajime to unconsciously admire him.

As a result, currently, there was her majesty the queen of the second world and the materialized goddess of the fourth world on both sides of Kouki, staring at each other with sparks scattering between them.

Back to the story.

Hajime recounted the experience with a bit of a faraway look. He then noticed Liliana who was staring at him in wonder and coughed before returning to the topic.

「Well, it has calmed down somehow. Right now, I'm going to college while

trying to expand my business. Well, even though I say that, on Earth there are also dangerous bunches and guys with dozens of loose screws in their head as it is, so I'm busy there in its own way.]

「Is that so. Come to think of it; I heard that Kousuke-san is running around to resolve that kind of case. He introduced several women who will be living on this side.」

「.....Those Hauria bunch are sprinting to even weirder directions after obtaining Earth's knowledge. It's tiring already thinking about those guys.」

The 'hyahha' life of the head-reaping rabbits that exhausted even the demon king. Just where in the world were they going toward? In a sense, it was worthy of admiration how a certain girl in a lab coat with a side-tail hairstyle was still working hard. And then, as for a certain agent who recently became obsessed with wearing a rabbit ear hairband and in a mistake forgot to take it off and casually went into her workplace, surely she was completely beyond hope.

Hajime was about to get a faraway look once more. In order to make him return to reality, Liliana opened her mouth with a slight panic.

「Even so a college student is it.....how should I say it, I have some doubt if there will be anything that Hajime-san and others can learn in college after this far.」

「Well, I cannot deny that. But, you know, the college students all over the world are relatively noncommittal don't you think? We too. It's not like we took the examination seriously thinking of wanting to learn something. It will be a long life after all. We just thought that it wouldn't be that bad having the experience of being a college student.」

「I, is that how it is? I heard that what is called a college in the world over there is the highest institute of education, so I thought that it would be a gathering of those who are serious with their studies.」

「Of course, there are also the serious bunches there, and that's also the correct way of going through college. It will be a different story if I'm using my parent's money, but I'm paying for everything, the tuition and also the living expenses with the money that I earned myself. Whether anyone will do it seriously or loosely, it depends on each person. What I'm saying is, just what is

bad about going there in order to enjoy the student life?」

Hajime said that with a shrug. His feeling of wanting to experience university was true, and it was also a fact that he was learning the major of archeology and folkloristics because he was interested in them.

Although, his biggest reason was something that couldn't be helped; that was "wanting to see the female college student Yue". The experience of hearing a lecture while sitting side by side with Yue with the appearance of a twenty-year-old really satisfied Hajime. Of course, he wouldn't say it out loud.

By the way, just like always, his harem situation and the wives' beauty caused a university somewhere to still be in the middle of chaos and mayhem.

「Enjoying school life.....is it.」

Liliana let out a small mutter. It wasn't like there was particularly great emotion filling that mutter, but the small hope that was implicitly included in that mutter couldn't be hidden.

Because she was a princess, Liliana was unrelated with student social status. Something like the springtime of life in the middle of school life like a normal girl was something that she only knew from books. She had a longing for it, and she also dreamed about it.

It was possible that she could experience high school life with Hajime and the others if she acted selfishly in the past. If she abandoned the kingdom and her status as princess and shook off everything, then perhaps such a dream could've become a reality.

After thinking that far, however, Liliana thought「How stupid」with a self-depreciating smile and shook her head. Abandoning the people to run toward the dream with a man, that kind of woman wasn't herself.

——I am Liliana S. B. Hairihi. The only princess of the Hairihi Kingdom.

She had a longing for being a normal girl. But, if she discarded being a princess for that, then the brilliant soul of Liliana would die out. It would be none other than Liliana herself that wouldn't forgive her if she abandoned the people and ran away from her obligation. If she did something like that, surely Liliana would continue to scorn herself for her whole life.

Just when she thought about her own personality as「What a difficult personality」, a small laugh suddenly reached her ears. When she raised her gaze in puzzlement, there was Hajime with a smile on his lips staring fixedly at Liliana while resting his chin on his hand. His gaze was awfully kind in contrast with the smile on his mouth.

「E, err, what is it?」

For some reason, she couldn't look at Hajime's eyes and turned away slightly while asking. Her heart was beating fast, hammering in her chest.

「No, nothing. I'm just thinking, that you are proud as usual.」

Liliana tilted her head from not understanding what Hajime wanted to say. Hajime's smile was turning increasingly kinder seeing that while he spoke the main topic that he came for today.

「Enough about me for now.....what about the kingdom? I more or less let out reconnaissance planes right after I arrived, and had a look at the situation. Based on what I see, it seems that the reconstruction is going along well.」

「That's, right. I also talked about it just now with my maid, but even the plan for the celebration ceremony of the new royal capital completion has begun. I also haven't heard of any serious problems with the empire, the beastmen, and the rebirth of the holy church. I believe that we will be able to proclaim our revival in less than half a year. Of course, the new capital has the concept of “an open city to other countries and races”, so there is a huge mound of small problems.」

Even while feeling perplexed with the radical topic change, Liliana answered like that with a wry smile. She also said「Come to think of it; I came here after leaving a mountain of paperwork that I have to go through」with her tongue playfully sticking out.

But, Hajime only narrowed his eyes at that joking gesture of Liliana without particularly laughing back, and he then asked quietly.

「About that, is that a problem that cannot be resolved without Lily here——without princess Liliana S. B. Hairihi here?」

「Eh?」

Liliana lost her words hearing Hajime's question. The content of the talk was similar to her conversation just now with her exclusive maid.

「Is this country unable to progress forward without Princess Liliana? Will it mean that you abandoned “the responsibility of royalty” by leaving now? Is it crossing over worlds that will hurt your pride?」

「Pl, please wait a second. Just, what is this about.....」

Liliana waved around her hands from being unable to understand the surge of questions and asked Hajime to stop.

.....Of course, she actually understood just what Hajime was saying to her. The fast beating in her heart didn't show any sign of stopping. Her face was so heated that she was aware of it herself.

But, honestly, she also felt perplexed. She had been a princess since she was born. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that it was her identity. Even though she understood that her happiness lied in another place, it wasn't easy for her to make the decision.

As though seeing through that perplexity of Liliana's, Hajime smiled wryly「You are thinking too hard on it」while further adding on to his words.

「I'm not asking you to abandon being a princess. This is just a matter of the order of priority. Leave the role of being royalty to other people for a bit and live for your own sake a bit more——won't you be like that any time now? That's what I mean.」

「I, I am.....」

‘Is it really fine?’ Liliana tilted her head again with such doubt.

Hajime's expression turned half concerned, and half exasperated from seeing the princess who was still conflicted with the feeling of reluctance and guilt to leave her country *for her own sake*.

And then, he scratched his head a bit roughly as though he had finally grown impatient.

「Good grief.....you really are an obstinate princess.」

「Hajime-san?」

Liliana who understood what was the intention of Hajime giving her that kind of question gazed anxiously at Hajime who was looking like that thinking「By any chance, has he fallen out of love with me?」.

Hajime also returned an exasperated gaze at that gaze of Liliana while replying,

「Stop acting like this already, if you won't act at least a bit selfish.....I'm going to kidnap you, you know?」

「Hee!?!」

He said such a thing.

Liliana raised a hysteric voice while jerking her body which caused the chair to make a bumping sound. Hajime then grinned broadly while making an additional blow by saying「A demon king kidnapping a princess.....that's not strange at all, right?」.

Naturally, it caused Liliana's face, no, all of her visible skin to be dyed bright red to the degree that it looked like she might explode.

Liliana kept opening and closing her mouth wordlessly. Hajime shrugged at that, and then, thinking that there wouldn't be any progress like this, he suddenly took out a crystal ball from “Treasure Warehouse II” that looked like the item used in fortune-telling and put it on the table.

「If you are that doubtful whether it's okay for you to live for your own sake, then let's just ask directly instead.」

「Wha, what are you planning to do?」

The demon king took out an artifact——that fact caused Liliana to feel a bad premonition blaring in her mind, and her cheeks twitched. The princess laid bare her wariness in a complete change while the demon king activated the artifact with a really nice smile.

And then, he took in a deep breath facing toward the crystal ball that was faintly shining and,

「AT~~~~TENT~~~~ION-!!」

He yelled really loudly with that kind of voice. Instantly, there was exactly the

same voice and word『AT~~~~~TENT~~~~~ION-!!』resounding from outside the window.

Liliana turned her startled face to outside the window, and while her mind was in chaos「E? Eee!?', the demon king-sama who was also in perfect form today raised his voice uncompromisingly toward the people of the new capital projected inside the crystal ball, where they were also similarly looking around at the surroundings with their minds in chaos.

「This is too abrupt but——I'm the demon king!」

「Certainly it's just too abrupt!」

Liliana acted the straight-man from her heart. From the crystal ball, there were also the voices of several people who similarly acted the straight-man, resounding inside the room.

It seemed that this artifact had the function that connected the image and voice. Just now, Hajime said that he launched reconnaissance planes over the new capital right after he arrived, so surely this artifact was linked with those countless planes by a two-way connection to broadcast the voice.

Hajime smoothly ignored Liliana's retort and sent his voice to the middle of the capital.

「People of the new capital, I'm asking all of you. ——Do you still need Princess Liliana?」

「Ha, Hajime-san!？」

The capital people inside the crystal ball were showing a bewildered expression. The amplified voice that was reverberating everywhere caused the people indoors to come outside too, and they all looked at each other's face. Hajime told them that he was using an artifact to talk all over the capital and that if they answered from where they were, their voice would reach his ear.

Liliana who guessed what Hajime was trying to do went 'awa awa' in a great panic.

「Right now, I'm in the middle of courting Liliana. I told her, just come with me to my world right away. But, the situation is unfavorable. It seems that this

princess-sama is worried about you guys, she is really worrying so much that she cannot bear it. ——What do I do now? At this rate, I'm going to get dumped like this, even though I'm the demon king.」

「REA~~LLY, JUST WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUTTTTTTT-」

The demon king-sama was venting his anger「Because of you bastards I'm about to get dumped here, asshole」to the people all over the capital. Liliana was getting teary-eyed from shame and everything while screaming at such a demon king. She stood up so quickly the chair fell down and then she kept hitting repeatedly *poka poka* at Hajime's head to make him stop.

His head was shaking all over *ka-kun ka-kun*, however, the demon king-sama didn't stop.

「Therefore, I'll ask, one more time. Does all of you, does this world, still need Princess Liliana? Are all of you toddling chicks that are so helpless that she cannot take action from worrying about you guys?」

The people looked at each other after hearing that question thrown at them once more.

And then, with a bewildered expression on his face, a stern-looking uncle that seemed to be the foreman of a construction site,

「No, even if I'm asked that.....Liliana-sama, she is still staying in the palace until now?」

He said such a thing.

Hearing that voice resounding from the crystal ball, Liliana went「Heh?」with a really strange voice. Even while she was astonished like that, the voices of the people of the new capital who were talking to the people beside them in a mood like gossiping were starting to reach through the crystal ball.

「Oh dear me. I was completely under the impression that her highness has been living happily in the other world since a long time ago already.」

「Eh, how strange. I heard that she already has a child with his majesty the demon king already though.....」

When the wife of an ingredient shop said that, the shop's owner the husband

cocked his head in puzzlement and replied like this,

「If I'm not mistaken, the demon king-sama has been living in the world over there with his other wives since a long time ago I'm told. By any chance, our princess-sama, she got left out?」

「Eh, Liliana-sama, she is alone?」

「No, wait. The relationship between the wives should be great. Yet, for Liliana-sama to be still here means.....by any chance, she didn't get along with her mother-in-law.....」

「Princess, she got bullied?」

In front of the new main gate, when the soldiers of the kingdom were talking to each other, the male and female adventurers nearby were looking to the sky with sympathizing expressions.

Liliana's cheeks were starting to twitch uncontrollably. She had never imagined even in her dreams, that during the time she was desperately taking care of the works day by day, the people that she worked for actually thought that she had eloped since a long time ago. Furthermore, her still being in the palace was starting to make strange misunderstandings spread!

「Wai-, wait everyone~~! I'm not being left out and also not being aloneee! I even get along well with my mother-in-law Sumire-sama! A, also, something like chi, children.....I don't have them yet. I am just doing my work pro~~perly here!」

Liliana reflexively gave an explanation with a loud voice, but that voice was picked perfectly by the artifact that was pointlessly high-spec and was sent to every corner of the capital.

The pathetic sounding explanation of their beloved princess caused the people to look at each other for the third time, and then they laughed with each other as though they had arranged it beforehand.

There wasn't even a shred of emotion that was poking fun in their laughter. That laughter was overflowing with warmth.

The foreman of the construction site whose voice got picked up first tensed

his dirty face while sending his words.

「In that case, there is only one answer to that question of his majesty the demon king.」

The foreman then glared all around him, there his several dozen subordinates made similar expressions. And then, with their voices matched together,

「「「「「We don't need the princess anymore!」」」」」

The wife and husband of the ingredient shop just now, and the surrounding people were,

「「「「「We are fine already!」」」」」

The soldiers, adventurers, mercenaries,

「「「「「Please don't treat us like a helpless chick!!」」」」」

Liliana's eyes were nailed toward the crystal that kept changing the projected image with the voices of those people getting through.

The people of the capital right now were facing the palace, and they raised their voices.

The people who were in the middle of working stopped moving their hands, the people indoors got outside, regardless of adult or child, they all were saying things like「Just how long is the princess going to keep working」or「Her highness worries too much」or「If princess does nothing but work, then his highness demon king will fall out of love you know」that pierced relatively deep into Liliana without batting an eyelid.

But, their expressions were uniformly warm, that was why the heart of the people was conveyed toward their beloved princess Liliana with nothing to spare.

Namely,

——Enough with the tedious talk. It's fine already, so just chase your happiness right away.

That.

The warm, lovely thing overflowing out from Liliana's heart turned into tears

that trickled through her cheek. She leaked out a sobbing voice and formed her words desperately even while her voice stuttered many times.

「E, everyone! Thank, youuu!!」

The formed reply became a ripple that spread throughout the new capital. Whether those words of gratitude were conveyed or not, the expressions of the people that seemed to say「That's our line」gave the answer more eloquently than anything.

Hajime hugged the small shoulder of Liliana who was letting out large drops of grateful tears. That small shoulder had been continuously burdened with the country until now. Hajime circulated his words of conclusion through the artifact.

「You guys, that really helped. Even the obstinate princess finally folded. This is sudden, but I'll take Liliana right away.」

「Eh? Eeh? Hajime-san!?!」

Liliana turned bewildered feeling her body floating lightly, and then when she noticed that she was being held in a princess carry, her face turned red instantly.

Liliana turned small in Hajime's chest from shyness and happiness. Hajime gave her a glance while taking back the crystal, but his movement suddenly stopped from remembering something.

「Aah, that's right. I'll say this in advance to the people of the new capital. Liliana, in the end, cannot stop being a princess, she is a woman with kindness, sincerity, and love. Therefore, from here on too she might unexpectedly come home here to take a look at your situation. At that time, if you guys show Liliana a predicament that makes her sad.....know that my 108 harassments will rain down on you all.」

「Wait, what are you saying there!」

A demon king was someone unreasonable. And this one here was an extreme one.

Liliana retorted with a convulsing face at the demon king's proclamation of

disaster, and the faces of the new capital's people were also convulsing all at once. And then, the people swore in each of their hearts. 「Let's live seriously with our all」like that.

It was the day that people would live with their all, half threatened.

On that day, the princess who had continued to devote herself to the kingdom and the people was kidnapped with a princess carry by the demon king to another world.

.....By the way, regarding Liliana's personal effects, thanks to her exclusive maid standing by in front of the room of "gate opening" with complete preparation, they were crammed into a large bag, so there was no problem at all.

The bag of Liliana's personal effects that was presented right away was received by Hajime like it was only natural along with a praise「Good work」while the exclusive maid acted humbly saying「It's a great honor」like it was only natural. Needless to say, Liliana yelled「You act more like a servant to him compared to when you're with me! Or rather, you two absolutely plotted this behind my back already!」when she saw that exchange.

AN: Next chapter will be uploaded around seven.

Arifureta Chapter 225

Arifureta After II The Part-Time Leader Lily First Part

AN: I'll submit one more chapter for the commemoration of the resumption.

Part Time Leader Lily Second Part will be around 8 or 9 o'clock.

「Hafuu~」

That kind of sigh, which was free of tension, resounded inside the room that gave off a sense of cleanliness with its white tone.

Her own sigh unexpectedly echoed loudly causing Liliana to be taken aback, and then she frowned with a speechless expression, perhaps because she was letting out that sigh unconsciously.

For some reason or another, she kept leaning her back deeply on the reclining chair she was sitting on, and then she kicked on the floor with the bare tips of her toes and tried turning around. The good quality chair lightly rotated and the state of the room was reflected in Liliana's sight in order.

It was a room that was half the size of the room that she was using until just some time ago in the palace.

Liliana herself thought that this size was just right, but if the nobles and servants in Tortus knew about this, then they might yell「How can the princess be made to live in this kind of small dog house!」with a look like Edvard Munch's The Scream.

A few months had passed since the day when “Princess Liliana” went inactive and arrived on Earth. The more the months and days passed, the more she made in Earth accessories bit by bit.

The puppet “Dancing Davis-kun” that she received from Myuu at the moving celebration was emitting its presence excessively. Surely, the expression “quivering” suited the puppet more than “dancing”. It was vibrating *jiggle jiggle* like a dangerous person who was going through withdrawal symptoms.

Just from where in the world did Myuu obtain this Davis-kun.....

Honestly speaking it was eerie, but when she recalled Myuu’s smiling face whenever she thought of throwing it away, she was unable to throw it away.

「Fuu~~n」

Liliana was letting out a strange exhalation that lacked in tension while rotating her chair one more time. She then stepped a bit and rotated in reverse. Whirl whirl. Whirl whirl.

「Nothing, to do.」

It seemed she had spare time.

「How amazing. Liliana is now experiencing by myself that “spare time” I heard from rumors.」

It seemed she really had spare time. To the degree that she narrated the present condition of herself by herself.

For Liliana who was born as royalty, what was called “spare time” was the same as a fairytale.

After all, she was the sole direct descendant of the royalty until her little brother was born. She began going through education for the gifted ever since she was old enough to be aware of her surroundings, and even when Randell was born and her possibility to ascend to the throne decreased, the necessity for her to receive much training in her role as a spare, or in order to function as a rope toward the empire, didn’t decrease at all.

And then, when she was in her youth at the age of fourteen, she went through a year of a chain of events that was like surging waves, to which the

word dense wasn't enough at all to express that experience. And after that, she was swamped with work for the sake of the reconstruction.

From the time since she was born until the moment before this, she was in a position that was understandable for her to never experience this thing called “free time” or the like.

That was how Liliana was before, but then she was taken away by Hajime, had her official papers made in forgery, deceived the administrative official, obtained social status peacefully by slapping public safety in the face, and currently, she was going to the same college as Hajime and the others.

Before this, she had been taken to visit Earth several times, so she understood that earth was a world that was like a jack-in-the-box. Even so, the “school life” and “learning experience of another world’s college” that Liliana yearned for tickled her curious mind and gave her fresh enjoyment. It was, but.....

Whirl whirl. Whirly whirl. The princess of another world was rotating in twirls using the chair of another world. And then, she came to a stop,

「.....Davis-kun. It's nice to be you huh. You look busy quivering.」

Finally, the princess started talking to a doll. Davis-kun quivered back and forth looking troubled.

But, at that time, the sound of the entrance opening could be heard faintly.

If Liliana had animal ears growing in her head, then right now they would surely be snapped up in attention *pikon*. She wore her indoor slippers and exited her room with rhythmical steps *te-te-te*— in order to welcome the person returning home.

She went down to the first floor and encountered Sumire who was holding a large quantity of bags, for some reason.

「Welcome home, Sumire-okaasama.」(TN: The kanji for okaasama(honored mother) here is written with the kanji of mother-in-law)

「My, you are home early today, Lily-chan. I'm home!」

Sumire fixed her hold on the large amount of bags with a rough huff before Liliana went to help her in a hurry. She took several of the baggage, and when

she glanced inside them, it seemed their contents was a large number of side dishes.

「Say, Sumire-okaasama, this is?」

「You see, this is today's dinner.」

「Dinner?」

「Yes. The dishes that were served in the event had leftovers, and I pilfered them all! They were really delicious. I heard that they called a really famous cook to make the dishes. So I thought that I should let my uncute son and his cute wives to try them.」

「Is, is that so. Thank you very much, Sumire-okaasama.」

「Your welcome!」

Liliana's expression crumbled softly seeing her mother-in-law who was all smiles.

Frankly speaking, this is Sumire they were talking about, so she surely must have forcefully swiped the dishes for "takeout" without even minding the eyes of others drawing away from her. If not, normally someone would stop anyone from bringing home this much.

It seemed that today there was an event for the live-action film of the manga that was authored by Sumire, so the people there too must be only looking at Sumire who was packing up the food happily while thinking「No way we can anger sensei at this event huuh~」.

The Nagumo Family was in prosperity.

Sumire herself was a big name shoujo manga artist, and her husband Shuu had made his company bigger in these few years. And above all, the businesses that Hajime reached out his hand toward here and there were making absurd killings.

From the standpoint of royalty, it wasn't like Liliana didn't think that they had the allowance, so they could just directly employ that chef to cook directly for them.

But, no matter how much they were earning, no matter how prosperous they

were, displaying a dynamism that was not forgetting this kind of “fun” was the shared trait of the Nagumo family. It was a tacit precept of the family.

Liliana became really ticklish seeing Sumire who showed off the dishes「I came with the delicious cooking that I snatched off——!」for the sake of herself who was a daughter-in-law.

They carried the large number of dishes to the kitchen before Sumire tilted her head「Come to think of it」while speaking out her question.

「You aren't together with Hajime and the others?」

「Yes. Hajime-san and the others still have a lecture, so they are still at the college. The lecture that I was scheduled to have canceled.....」

「My, that's nice. Doesn't a sudden lecture cancellation make you happy for no reason?」

「Eh? Eer.....」

It seemed that Sumire's common feeling wasn't transmitted to the serious and diligent princess. After all, this princess was someone that would start talking to a quivering doll when she had too much free time.

「Or rather, even if you didn't come home, you could've just gone to the lecture that Hajime is going to. Even just chattering aimlessly will be fun, right?」

「No, Sumire-okaasama. As expected, thinking that it's fine to chatter while receiving a lecture is just.....」

「Eeh~. It's fun exactly because you are doing it secretly behind the teacher's back.」

「Sumire-okaasama.....」

Liliana's shoulders dropped in dejection. Her blood-related mother Luluaria was fundamentally a sincere character that was strict and diligent to herself. And so, Liliana couldn't say anything anymore to the irresponsible statement of her mother-in-law whose sense of value was completely different with her real mother.

But mysteriously, the relationship between Sumire and Luluaria was good despite this, which was why it was something mysterious.

They put down the dishes for the evening dinner with a thud in the kitchen. Sumire was moving the many dishes that were her war booty while she threw her gaze to Liliana who was helping her serving the food with similar nimbleness.

「And, how are you recently? Have you gotten used to this world? At the time when you only just came, you spent all your time studying various things, but recently you aren't like that anymore.」

「Yes. I have grasped Earth's affairs in general. The economics and politics, the religion and history, the situation of every nation, culture, fashion.....every book in this world is compiled systematically, and even if there is something I don't understand I can investigate it immediately using the internet. It's really convenient.」

「Aa~, yeah, I see.」

「Yes. Especially the more I learned about economics and the study of statistics, the more I feel how deep they are. The density and the fruits of labor that has been accumulated by the predecessors of this world are something that I cannot find in Tortus. Every day, I feel like I am shown just how behind the study of the world other there is compared to here.」

「I, I see. How amazing~」

「Yes. Right now, over there they are still in the middle of reconstruction, so even if an advanced system is suddenly introduced, I can see that it will only end in failure. It won't be able to happen right away, but someday, I believe that the kingdom has to adopt this. Regarding the field of economy, the coordination with Fhuren——」

「St, stop! Sto~~~~~p! That's enough there, Lily-chan!」

「Heh?」

Sumire hurriedly raised her voice to stop Liliana who was spouting a torrent of speech.

Liliana was lifting her face in puzzlement, but even now, her hands were moving continuously without pause and served up the packed dishes as though they were palace cooking. Her speed was twice Sumire's while her

courteousness was triple.

「Geez, Lily-chan, even though you should have left the position of the princess and came into the family when you are talking about your mind, you are only talking about the kingdom.」

「a.....」

Liliana finally noticed herself what she was talking about after getting stared at by Sumire's half-admiring half-exasperated face. Her cheeks reddened.

「When you just arrived here, you felt like 'Everything attracts my interest, so there is no time for that!', but when you calmed down after grasping the situation to a degree, as expected, you become concerned with your homeland, don't you?」

「N, no, such a thing.....is not true.」

Seeing Liliana who stuttered, Sumire put her index finger on her chin muttering「Uu~n」in a thinking gesture before she spoke something that was shocking for Liliana.

「Is that so? But recently, Lily-chan is making a face that looks like a lost child somehow you know?」

「Eh.....」

Sumire walked toward Liliana who was staring at her in blank amazement with her eyes turned round, and then she stooped down a bit to put their eyes at the same height. And then, after Sumire confirmed that those blue eyes were reflecting herself properly, she asked calmly with a gentle and kind expression.

「Do you want to return home?」

It was a gentle voice that was filled with concern and sympathy toward Liliana without any blaming tone in it.

For a moment, the questioned Lily showed an expression that didn't understand what the meaning of the question was. But right after that, she unconsciously raised her voice.

「I'm not thinking anything like that!」

「Wawah, wait Lily-chan, calm down.」

「Sumire-okaasama, it's true! I'm not thinking of going home or anything! I'm not feeling any discomfort or dissatisfaction! I love everyone! I'm happy I can come here! It's true!」

「I get it, I get it already!」

Sumire spontaneously hugged Lily tightly.

It seemed that Liliana jumped to the wrong conclusion thinking that Sumire's question had the implicit meaning of「If you are dissatisfied with the life here, perhaps it's better to go home?」

Of course, Sumire didn't mean anything like that. She was only concernedly thinking「Perhaps she is slowly getting homesick?」, thinking that anyone would be driven by their feelings for their homeland. She wouldn't say anything like 'go home' even if she got her mouth ripped open.

Because, Sumire's feeling toward Liliana was,

「A princess! The real thing! From another world! Just who would let you go! Fuhehe, everyone in the world! How can this be, this lovely princess-chan, she is my daughter! Thank you very much! Dyufu, dyufufu」

It was fixated like that.

Liliana, who knew nothing about that, was tightly embraced against Sumire's chest and guessed that she was misunderstanding and her cheeks reddened once more.

「I'm sorry, Lily-chan. Looks like I'm off the mark.」

「No, it was me who jumped to the wrong conclusion.....thank you very much for worrying about me.」

「I'm your mother. Isn't it natural for me to be worried about my daughter? If there is something, then don't be reserved at all and consult me, okay?」

「Yes-」

Liliana smiled softly at the gentle hand of the mother-in-law that was caressing her head. And then, they began moving the dishes on to the plates

once more. Liliana didn't even suspect that inside her heart, Sumire was jumping in joy thinking「No good-, the destructive power of a genuine princess's smile is extraordinary yaa~~!!」

After that, Liliana was enjoying tea with the kind mother-in-law until Hajime and co returned home.

A lively family.

A quiet time with the beloved people.

Liliana was feeling the happiness she hoped for. There wasn't any falsehood in it.

However, for some reason, Sumire's words were remaining inside her head, and it didn't vanish, like a small bone that got stuck in her throat. It caused her to have a feeling that she couldn't express in words.

That night. Liliana, who returned to her room, had finished all her preparations to retire to bed; however, she didn't lie on the bed and sat on the swivel chair while being in a daze.

The words「Like a lost child」from that afternoon were replayed many times over inside her head.

When she suddenly dropped her gaze, there was the unmoving Davis-kun there. It was unmoving without even a twitch with an expression that was like it was going to raise an American laugh「HA———, HAHAAHA-」anytime now.

「——O wind」

Liliana spoke a verse of chant. Immediately, a breeze flowed, and Davis-kun started to move *shiver shiver, tremble tremble* as though it came to life. It was really comical. As though it was making fun of Liliana who was even now harboring a mist that couldn't clear up.

「.....Damn you, Davis-kun.」

She tried hurling abuse with a tone that was out of the norm for her. Hurling abuse when it moved even though she was the one moving it herself, it seemed that Liliana was considerably “loosening”.

But, at that time, a knocking sound suddenly rang out. Liliana twitched, and in shock, she replied even while her voice slightly turned shrill.

Like that, the one who entered was Hajime.

「Yo, can I bother you a bit?」

「Ye, yes. No need to say a bit, please feel free to do as you please. But, there will be a lecture first thing in the morning, so if I can possibly be let to sleep by the early hours.....」

「This isn't night crawling. Or rather, you think I'm a really frivolous guy that will say something like "let me do it a bit" huh.」

Hajime smiled wryly at Liliana who was in a thorough misunderstanding while retorting. And then, he sat down on the bed and directed his gaze at Liliana who was red-faced from her misunderstanding.

「Well, it's also not something as big as a business or anything though.....how are you doing lately?」

「.....Fufu. I was also asked that this afternoon by Sumire-okaasama. Do I really look that unusual I wonder?」

Seeing how the mother and son were equally worried about her caused Liliana to leak out a chuckle of amusement.

Hajime scratched his cheek awkwardly while answering.

「You aren't acting unusual or anything. It's just; it's the fact that you look like you aren't energetic. And from that, it looks like you are gloomy because it seems that Lily yourself doesn't understand just why you aren't energetic.」

Liliana felt a ticklish feeling 'he really is looking properly at me huuh' while she hugged her knees on the chair. Her figure that turned small on the chair with only her toes peeking out from her largish and loose negligee was really charming.

「Thank you very much for worrying about me.」

「What are you saying. I'm your husband you know? It's obvious for the husband to worry for his wife.」

Once again it was a similar line from the mother and son. This time Liliana became so excessively amused that she chuckled a bit louder.

「I'm fine, Hajime-san. Really, it's only that sometimes I felt a bit gloomy. It's nothing big at all.」

Hajime sighed at Liliana who was saying such a thing. And then, he suddenly stood up and lifted up Liliana in a princess carry.

Hajime sat down once more on the bed. However, this time he put Liliana on his lap in his arms.

「Err, Hajime-san? As I thought, yo, you will do it?」

「I'm not gonna. The inside of Lily's head is unexpectedly pink colored huh. No, perhaps it's not unexpected. In the first place, you have a hobby of creating delusions.」

Liliana's cheeks reddened with her hand on her own clothes. Hajime directed a warm gaze at her. Liliana turned sulky.

「Don't sulk like that. Recently, I'm bothered. I'm asking not for Lily, but because I want to know. Listen to your husband's request.」

「u. That way of talking is not fair.」

Liliana groaned in a small voice.

And then, strength left her body as though she was giving up, and she began to talk about her emotions lately that she herself wasn't clear about.

According to her, the time she spent in the Nagumo family was really happy.

According to her, the lecture at the college was also really interesting.

According to her, there was nothing more easeful for her heart than this situation where she could play, learn about what she likes, and having a day where she didn't do anything.

According to her, right now, she was living just like in her dreams, without any anxiety or pressure, spending happy days being surrounded by her beloved people.

According to her, every day was really meaningful.

The more she talked, the more it felt like there wasn't any problem. But, Hajime's expression, who was staring fixedly at the talking Liliana, was gradually turning amazed, no, to speak more accurately there was a color of exasperation that was starting to dwell in that expression.

If asked why his expression was like that, it was because even though Liliana should be talking about happy things, her expression looked vaguely unsatisfied.

Liliana didn't notice Hajime's expression that was like that, and in the end, she summed up her own feeling.

「Most likely, I'm lacking in an objective inside myself. Surely, what I ought to do is find a great objective and devote myself to it just like Hajime-san and the others who are doing their best in order to manage the businesses. Yes, that must be it. It feels like I can see it while I was talking. For the time being, I'll learn economics to the end because it will be useful in the futu——」

「No, that's not it.」

Liliana finally looked up to Hajime after getting interrupted midway. And then she noticed. That Hajime's face, for some reason, was absurdly exasperated!?

「Ha, Hajime-san? Did I, say something strange?」

「Aa~, yep, what to say. You are strange. Especially in your head.」

「That's cruel-!? That's an unthinkable abuse! Just where is it in me that is strange!?!」

As expected, Liliana couldn't forgive Hajime's abusive language, and she snapped angrily while questioning him. It caused Hajime's expression to turn speechless.

Liliana guessed that somehow Hajime had noticed something that she didn't notice herself. So she waited for an answer even while puffing up her cheeks.

Hajime suddenly stood up and the, he casually tossed Liliana on the bed. Liliana bounced *poyon* and looked up at Hajime in a girl's sitting posture.

「Listen well, I'll say it starting from the conclusion. The true identity of your gloominess is “insufficientness”.」

「Err.....that's why, I said that I'd find an objective and work hard.」

「No, that's not it. Even if you do that, you won't be satisfied. It won't be enough at all. Your murky feelings won't get cleared up for even a bit. I can guarantee it.」

「Ee~. Then, what is it that you mean?」

Liliana tilted her head in wonder as though asking 'In the end, what is it that you want to say?'. Hajime opened his mouth while looking like he got a headache, as though this was something unexpected.

「Work that is forced on you.」

「Yes?」

「Approaching deadline.」

「Err.....」

「Cases that cause stomachaches. Tremendous pressure.」

「Excuse me~, Hajime-san? What are you.....」

「A problem where running away is not permitted. The word responsibility that crosses the mind.」

「A, are you listening, Hajime-san?」

「The mountain of paperwork that is piled up mercilessly despite you being on your last legs already from lack of sleep.」

「.....」

Liliana finally fell silent before Hajime yelled as though to deal the finishing blow.

「Work, work, work-, so much so that you are literally “swamped with work”!! A work with a grave responsibility that you feel like vomiting-!!」

「.....kufuh」

Liliana twitched. She looked around while saying「Just now, did you hear some kind of strange laugh?」. Naturally, there was no one inside the room except Hajime who was standing imposingly and the quivering Davis-kun.

「No, it was you just now, you.」

「Eh? What do you mean me.....」

The gaze of Hajime whose hypothesis had turned into conviction, it now had gone past exasperation and turned instead into pity while his hand took a mirror that was on the table.

「Lily. Try to confirm, just what kind of face you are making right now.」

「Hajime-san's words and actions are cryptic since some time ago though.....」

Even while saying that, Liliana obediently accepted the mirror then looked at her own face and——she stiffened.

That was understandable.

After all, in the mirror, there was an incomprehensible expression that was scowling in displeasure, yet even so, for some reason, the eyes of that expression were blazing fierily while a fearless smile was merging on the lips. If it was said without any dressing up, then it was a really creepy expression. And that expression was pasted on her own face!

Liliana tilted her head thinking「Dear me? By any chance, is there another world inside the mirror?」while she tried knocking on the mirror, turning it upside down while waving it around. But no matter what the creepy Lily there wouldn't disappear.

Liliana stared at her own face for a while before she suddenly tossed away the mirror *pei-*. And then she turned her gaze at Hajime while putting her face between her hands.

「Ha, Hajime-san! Just what have you done to me! It's cruel that you make my face turn like this!」

「I ain't doing anything. It's only Lily's real nature surfacing on your face.」

「What do you mean with real nature!?!」

For the time being, Liliana laid the blame of her terrible face on Hajime, but Hajime then pointed his finger with a snap at her.

「What does real nature mean? If you don't understand, then I'll tell you.」

With eyes glinting like a detective cornering the criminal, Hajime exposed the truth to the world!

「Lily. You are——a genuine, and what's more it's at a super level, or rather it's at abnormal pervert level, WORKAHOLIC!」(TN: Here Hajime said it in Japanese English, wookaahorikku)

「WHA, WHAT DID YOU SAY——!!No, wookaa.....what is that?」

Liliana tried to get shocked following the mood, but she then tilted her head at the vocabulary that she heard for the first time.

「It refers to work addiction. First on the list is work, second is work, third and fourth is also work with work in the fifth. Personal life? What's that, is it delicious? Hobby? It's work; you got a problem? It refers to that type of person. Furthermore, in Lily's case, it doesn't apply to mere normal work. You aren't able to feel sufficient anymore unless it's something forced on you, with heavy responsibility, and its quality and quantity are in super hard mode. You are a work addict on an abnormal pervert level.」

「E, ee!? Yo, you are wrong! Rather, I actually hate working!」

「.....Actually, recently there is this case where friction is appearing which concerns the public safety, and there might even be dead victims coming if the discussion fails. Lily, I'm thinking of leaving it to Lily——」

「Eh!?」

Lily-chan's eyes were sparkling brightly.

Hajime quickly picked up the mirror that was thrown *pei-* just now and thrust it in front of Liliana. It entered her eyes, the sight of her own face with an incomprehensible expression that looked displeased while also looking delighted. In a sense, it was an expression with a superb harmony between the two emotions.

「My, my real nature is, a workaholic.....what's more it's at an abnormal pervert level.....」

Liliana crumbled down. She fell from the bed, and then she trembled *quiver quiver* just like Davis-kun while her eyes were losing focus.

Even though she should have gotten away from the duty of royalty and crossed over worlds to chase the happiness as a normal girl, as expected, it was insufficient when she didn't have any duties.....

However, when it was pointed out to her like this, then certainly it was exactly like that. Even when she obtained the knowledge for living, even when she strived to study at the university, even when she built new human relations, and even when she went somewhere and did something, all of those were *for her own sake*.

No matter what happened, the consequence would only affect herself. When she failed, there wouldn't be any considerable loss or anything. Even if, for example, an unexpected situation that surpassed the acceptable range occurred, in front of her new family, everything would be nothing more than a trifling matter.

It was truly a life of Easy Mode.

Compared to standing at the top of a country, leading the people, and fighting a mighty enemy, this life was truly, truly.....

——Lukewarm

「Hau!？」

「O, oi, Lily? Are you okay?」

The feeling toward her life on Earth that was spontaneously welling up inside her caused Lily to crouch down with her hands pressing on her chest.

——Liliana S. B. Hairihi, 17 years old. The princess of the Hairihi Kingdom.

Since she was born, she had been continuously immersed in “things that must be done no matter what”. From that, her body had become something that couldn't be satisfied with “things that she can choose and want to do herself”!

Give more work! Work that troubles the mind so much it feels like the head's blood vessel will burst! Pressing problems that are nothing but excessive-. Paperwork that is piling up like a mountain range, that makes you hallucinate like it won't end for eternity-!

「I'm not that kind of dangerous woma———n-!!」

「Oooi-. Seriously, are you okay, Lily!?!」

Liliana held her head while writhing around due to her real nature. Even while feeling creeped out, Hajime went to soothe her somehow.

Thirty minutes later.

Liliana, who calmed down somehow, was now sitting while hugging her knees feeling dejected. While she was like that, Hajime folded his arms and wracked his brain「H~m」.

「.....Hajime-san. Perhaps it's better if I go home.」

「Hm? I somehow understand what you are thinking, but why?」

Liliana's body was stirring restlessly; she raised her chin that was put on her raised knees and spoke with a complicated sulky expression.

「As I thought, no matter where I go, I'm still a princess. No matter what I do, in the end, I'll summarize it into the point whether it will become advantageous for the kingdom or not. And then, the "insufficientness" in Earth, it caused me to trouble Hajime-san and Sumire-okaasan like now.」

Her shoulders drooped, and she delicately muttered something incomprehensible「Someone like me after all, is just a princess that cannot become a normal girl」.

Hajime smiled wryly while answering.

「Well, whether you are going home or remaining here, it doesn't really matter which one you are going to choose though.」

「That's cruel-!? Is that something you can say to your wife!?!」

Hajime's wry smile deepened saying「I'm joking」at the enraged Liliana while he continued speaking.

「Look here, I understood from the start that you could not stop being a princess, you remember? Your princess level is a bit above my expectation but.....if you want to do work as royalty, then I won't stop you. If Lily wishes for it, then I'll make it so you can even come and go there from here every day. I'll need to concentrate a bit and improve the gate, but.....well, I'll manage somehow. That's why don't say you are going home looking desperate like

that.」

「Hajime-san.....」

Of course, Liliana herself also didn't seriously say that she was going home. But, as expected, it was something joyful to be told「Don't go」by her beloved like this.

Hajime continued talking to Liliana whose cheeks loosened up.

「I told you this several times already, but Lily, speak more selfishly. After all, no matter what kind of impossible demand it is, I'll do it somehow.」

「.....yes.」

Hajime said that while patting her head gently. Liliana's body trembled as though she was in anguish. Her eyes were starting to carry heat. Hajime averted his gaze from such a Liliana and returned to the talk.

「And so. Becoming a commuting princess is also one way.....」

「Commuting princess.....it's the first time I heard that kind of vocabulary. But, I have the feeling that like that. in the end. I'll be swamped with work where I cannot stop even if I want to stop.」

「Yeah, I also think so. And so, how about doing work other than the work of the royalty? Even though I said that you will still get swamped with work, all the same, so you will be moderately busy doing things with moderate responsibility, like that little by little you will get used to “moderate work”, and eventually your body and heart will get accustomed with “enjoying free time”. Something like that.」

「So it's like, a rehabilitation then. I somewhat feel complicated.....」

‘Am I a sick person, ah, I'm an addict.....’ Liliana made a complicated expression with that thought. Hajime then suggested to Liliana whether he should leave several businesses for her to manage.

Liliana pondered for a little before she shook her head.

「No, I'll refrain from work where I act as Hajime-san's representative. I know that even by doing anything else I'll still have the sense of security that everything will be fine no matter what happens, but even so, I believe that

doing work that is unrelated with Hajime-san for my first rehabilitation will be just right.」

「Hm~m? Is that so. However, in that case, what will you do then?」

Liliana suddenly stood up, and while bouncing *poyon* on the bed, she thrust up her fist and proclaimed.

「Yes, I decided. I'll do part-time work!」

Honestly, it wasn't like Hajime wasn't thinking「Is it fine doing part-time work?」, but it seemed better for Liliana to be in a place where she didn't have the backing of Hajime, so he didn't really say anything.

And then, Liliana said「My aim, is to be a normal girl! I won't let anyone say that I'm a workaholic anymore!」with rough breathing from her boiling up motivation while Hajime was giving her a noncommittal applause「Oo, do your best~」.

Arifureta Chapter 226

Arifureta After II The Part-Time Leader Lily Second Part

Part 1

ding ding The bell chimes rang. It was a withdrawn sound that felt pleasant to the ear.

「Welcome.」

The two young male customers who entered were immediately addressed by a voice. The voice came from a small distance away, but it was a pleasant and refreshing voice that didn't lose to the bell's chimes.

When they turned their gazes due to the lure of the voice, there was a stunningly beautiful girl there. It was a blonde-haired and blue-eyed girl wearing a cute apron. Her luxuriant hair was tied on the back using a largish frilly ribbon.

Looking from the logo on the apron, the silver tray in one hand, and the plate placed on the other hand, it was obvious from a glance that this was this restaurant's employee.

「Dear guest. I will guide you to your seat right after this, so can I please ask you to wait for a bit?」

「「Ah, yes」」

The two male customers replied in beautiful harmony. The waitress-san smiled cheerfully. The two of them staggered.

The waitress advanced smoothly through the gaps between the tables with light footsteps and set down the plates she carried with a movement that even displayed elegance somewhat. The two female customers who received their orders were staring in a daze at the waitress.

After that, the waitress once more gave a stunningly beautiful bow and smiled like a blooming flower at the two female customers who unconsciously returned the bow. The two female customers were shot through.

The waitress returned to the two male customers and bowed. A sweet aroma spread gently from the swaying hair of golden threads.

「I'm sorry for making you wait. Smoking seats or non-smoking seats, which one will be your preference?」

「E, either is fine.」

「Me, me too.」

The two male customers followed the waitress as though they were being lured by the constant smile. Even after they were sat, their gazes were kept glued to the waitress who was going to bring some water and wet towels.

They were handed the menu by the returning waitress. She then said「Please call me when you've decided your order」before she was about to withdraw, but one man reflexively called out.

「He, hey. Before this, you weren't working here, right?」

It was a sudden question, but the waitress that guessed this customer had gone to this restaurant before this nodded briefly.

「Yes. I started working part-time here just recently——I'm called Liliana. If I can become the acquaintance of you honored customers from here on——that will be great.」

She cutely smiled while bowing with her fingertips slightly clutching the tip of her skirt. That gesture swiftly shot through the two males. With the way how at the end of her sentence her polite language broke down slightly, it caused a sense of familiarity to well up inside the two male customers.

「I super will become your acquaintance.」

「Rather already we are become your acquaintance.」

The Japanese of the two male customers crumbled.

After that, there was a profoundly mysterious happening when Liliana came to take their order, for some reason, they ordered things from the menu one after another, even things that they didn't feel like ordering were ordered following Liliana's recommendation. The two looked like they were satisfied on the whole.

「Yuuka-san, I'll be bringing more orders. Please take care of it.」

「Yes ye~s」

The chef who was wielding the frying pan inside the kitchen——Sonobe Yuuka replied back lightly.

It seemed that she had just finished cooking. She beautifully served the contents of the frying pan on the plate and faced toward the counter with the plate in one hand.

She was wearing a pure white chef coat and a crimson scarf on her neck. The limp beret on her head was also crimson colored.

In her student days, she had a serious character, but her appearance was showy, so she gave an impression of a frivolous gal. But right now, she was a splendid war potential of the western restaurant that was managed by her family. She was a chef who would become the second generation of this restaurant in the future.

It was only her dyed chestnut colored hair that didn't change, but the atmosphere she was clad in was somehow mature and kind. The look in her eyes that could be called as sharp, if it had to be said, also seemingly looked like they had softened. Naturally, those factors also boosted her charm, which had existed since the beginning, by several times over.

In fact, there were a lot of regular customers who frequently visited this western restaurant【Wisteria】aiming for the beautiful chef. Also, this restaurant was established just a bit before Yuuka was born, so it had already welcomed its twenty year anniversary; there were also a lot of veteran customers who extremely enjoyed seeing the growth of Yuuka who they often helped since she was small.

「Yes, this is Kuban-san's meat pie, take it, please. So, the next order is.....」

Yuuka looked at the order tag she received from Liliana, and her eyes blinked repeatedly. And then, she leaned her body out from the kitchen counter and took a look at the table where Liliana had taken the order just now.

Over there were two young male customers.

Yuuka dropped her gaze at the order tag once more. No matter how she looked at it, there was an order for about six people written there.

「.....Since Liliana worked here, the customers became really big eaters huh.」

「Yes, Japanese people are all gormandizer, aren't they?」

Yuuka lifted her gaze from the order tag and sent an unblinking stare at Liliana, but then she sighed seeing Liliana putting on a friendly smile.

「Well, they all ate the food without leaving any, so it's not a problem but..... be careful not to make them force themselves too much okay.」

「Please leave it to me, Yuuka-san. It's my specialty to see through to where the limit is. I'll use every method available and make the sales and repeaters to be double the last month's. I'll bet on my honor as a former princess!」

「It's fine even if you don't bet that. Anyway, calm down first, former princess.」

Seeing Liliana whose nose breathed roughly with overflowing motivation, Yuuka acted the straight-man while smiling wryly.

「Now then, it will soon be the time when the customers will come in force. Let's put on our fighting spirit. I think it will be fine because Otou-san and Okaa-san will also be returning soon, but until then, spare me from the number of orders that I cannot deal with alone, okay?」

「It's fine. I have finished grasping Yuuka-san's ability. I will take orders in the amount where Yuuka-san can just barely manage!」

「Ah, yep. ——This, rather than being a rehabilitation for Liliana, isn't this actually a trial for me?」

Liliana said 'Leave it to me!' while putting the meats pie on her tray and headed out to give it to the customer. Yuuka murmured so while seeing her back.

After that, the two parents of Yuuka returned from their business, and the number of customers sharply increased when it approached evening. Liliana, who made the Sonobe family scream from the number of orders that were coming in like a surging wave, then clocked out when it was time for her to

depart for another part-time job.

After that, everyone in the Sonobe family was left behind looking dead tired.

The customers also became sparse and after about an hour till it became time to close the restaurant for the day, *ding* the bell rang.

「Welco—wait, what, isn't this Nagumo?」

Yuuka had left the kitchen and was now sorting the cash register's sales slip. Just as she stated, ahead of her gaze was Hajime.

「What do you mean by 'what' when you are greeting a customer.」

Hajime entered the restaurant with a wry smile while sitting on the seat at the edge of the counter with a practiced movement. That spot was tacitly a reserved seat for Hajime who had now become a regular customer.

Since the party of the one year anniversary of returning home, Hajime, who was pleased with this restaurant's cooking and coffee and also because of the friendly atmosphere due to the management who was his classmate and her family, sometimes visited now and then.

The other classmates too, even after graduating high school they would aimlessly drop by several times a month, and when they gathered for a meal, they would mostly gather at Yuuka's restaurant, so this place became something like a hang-out place for the other world summoning group.

.....Although, Hajime was also made to feel an extremely unwilling feeling because, for some reason, he received an extremely disgraceful impression that said「He is like a man going to his mistress's place for an affair」from his family and friends.

Even though most times when he was here he would be with one or more of his wives, yet why he was still evaluated like that..... It was something that was greatly baffling for Hajime.

And then, those wives who were mostly with him when he was here, especially recently, would be staring at Yuuka with a fixed gaze; just why was it like that.....

When Hajime sat down, Yuuka's father that had replaced her to cook in the

kitchen—Hiroshi, and Yuuka's mother Yuuri, addressed Hajime「Welcome」 looking very happy.

Hajime returned the greeting and then Yuuka, who left behind the sales slips, asked him.

「And, are you coming to eat? It's rare for you to come alone.」

「No, I finished having dinner already. I came here just to drink coffee a bit and also ask about how our part-time princess is doing.」

「Aa, I see.」

When Yuuka turned her gaze to her father, Hiroshi nodded as though to say「I don't mind」. In exchange, Yuuri moved to take over sorting the sales slip. For some reason, she was giving a thumbs up at Yuuka while she was at it.

Yuuka asked while pretending not to see her mother who was like that.

「Are you okay with blended coffee?」

「Ou. Or rather, are you the one making it?」

Hajime tilted his head because if he remembered right, even though Yuuka had become able to be entrusted with cooking, she shouldn't have been entrusted with making coffee yet.

Seeing Hajime's questioning face, Yuuka showed a bit of a triumphant look while she swiftly prepared to make the coffee.

「Yesterday I finally got the okay. I also took the barista qualification test already. This is more or less the first blend that I will serve to a customer, so drink it with care.」

「What's with that condescending attitude huh?」

A wry smile leaked out once more. The exchange between Hajime and Yuuka was very relaxed between each other from this kind of visit that spanned for several years. This was related to the impression of「He is like a man going to his mistress's place for an affair」, but the two of them didn't have an awareness of that.

A fragrant aroma enveloped the space. Hajime made a wondering expression

at the coffee that was presented to him and brought it to his mouth to test how good it was. And then, a beat later, he went「Oh」with his eyes snapped open in admiration. And then, without pause, he took the second and then third gulp. From that, it seemed that Yuuka's first blend was a good work.

Yuuka made a delighted expression that was mixed with a little bit of relief while she slouched forward a bit and rested her chin on her hand above the counter. Her other hand was playing around with her crimson scarf with her fingertips twirling it, and one of her feet was tapping *ton ton* on the floor with her toes.

「So? What is it that you want to ask? Lily is doing really well here though?」

「Is that so? She is a princess and shouldn't have any experience in a service trade, but she doesn't become a bother about various things because of that?」

「Nope, rather she is serving the customer so perfectly it is wasted for this kind of neighborhood western restaurant. She is elegant and refined——and it looks like there are already customers coming here for Lily.」

「Just from two weeks?」

「Yep, just from two weeks. And not just that, she even gave advice for the management. It's to the level that it feels like we got the scale falling from our eyes. You know, she was having fun when she calculated how much the expenses this month got reduced.」

「As expected from the addict of an office job. Just why is she doing consultation even though this is part-time job huh?」

Hajime sighed in exasperation. A smile emerged on Yuuka's lips with a chuckle seeing such a Hajime.

「Well, I too was anxious at first though. Suddenly, a call came from Nagumo telling me『Won't you try hiring a former princess for a part-time job』, what's with that? I myself am still a novice, and it's the best I can do just doing my own part. But, well, now I'm glad that Lily came to work here.」

「Is that so..... I too was really worried about letting Lily go part-time at a place I don't know about at all. At that point, if it's Sonobe, then I can trust you; and so, I entrusted her here.....it's great if her being here also benefited this

place.」

「.....As always, you are overprotective toward your relatives huh. Today too, you came directly here to expressly check on her.」

Yuuka's expression turned into an exasperated one. However, her fingertips were twirling and toying her crimson scarf even more. The tapping of her foot became even more rhythmical *ton, toton-*.

For some reason, the mother who was in the middle of sorting the sales slip was grinning broadly seeing such a Yuuka.

「Well, I can't deny being overprotective but.....I'm coming today because that girl is starting to act unexpectedly, no, in a sense, it's just as expected from her I guess. Hey, Sonobe. When she was in the middle of working, did Lily's atmosphere feel like she was unsatisfied somewhat?」

「Eh?H~m, I didn't really feel anything like that. She was in really high spirits when taking orders, and she was scattering around courtesy so much it was starting to increase repeaters. Why are you asking? By any chance, did she say that working part-time here is dull for her?」

「No no, she isn't saying anything like that. Rather, she was saying that she is having fun.」

Yuuka tilted her head at Hajime who spoke evasively.

Hajime hesitated a little before he confirmed it with Yuuka「I've told you the details about why Lily is working part-time, right?」. When Yuuka nodded, Hajime continued.

「Since a week ago, that Lily, she often didn't come home.」

「Somehow, that line sounds like something that would be said by a no good husband who let her wife run away.」

「Shut up. And then. When I tried asking what she is doing, it seemed that she is also starting to work part-time with the supplier that is doing business with your place. She said the work is completely desk work.」

「Eh? Is that so?」

That fact caused the eyes of Yuuka who didn't know that to turn round. But, it

appeared the story didn't stop there.

「It seemed the fare configuration of that supplier is problematic, and then while Lily was talking about various things to the supplier, she then got scouted by the person of that company. I don't know what kind of talk she had with them though.」

「He, hee. I wonder since when it became like that.」

「Yeah exactly. But, even with that, it's unthinkable that she would be so busy that she needed to be absent from several lectures at the college and became unable to come home. I'm only guessing but.....」

「She is doing more part-time work?」

「Yeah.」

Hajime nodded while looking like he got a headache. Although it seemed he didn't have positive proof, that was why he thought of asking Yuuka, whether Liliana was feeling insufficient just working part-time in this restaurant.

「You can just ask her directly.」

「That girl is giving me the slip. I don't want to get the answer out of her forcefully. And observing her with artifacts will make me look like a controlling husband, so I don't feel like doing that.」

「Oh, really.」

Hajime drank his coffee miserly while looking really worried, or perhaps overprotective, and yet for all that, he behaved indecisively. Yuuka replied curtly with an expression that looked disappointed to that.

「In the end, what are you going to do? When she is working part-time at our place, she doesn't look like she is feeling insufficient, she looks like she is having quite some fun you know? Should I indirectly tell her that Nagumo is worrying? I don't know if the workaholic Lily will be able to restrain herself by doing that, but perhaps she will talk to you by her own initiative what part-time work she is doing right now.」

「I, see. Can I ask you to do that?」

「Yes yes. It's fine, doing just that much.」

Yuuka nodded while lazily waving her hand. Hajime drank his coffee and said thanks before standing up.

「My bad that I sounded like whining there. I feel relaxed when I come here every time. I guess it's not just for show that you are the second generation owner of the place for relaxation that lured even the demon king.」

「Even if you praise me I cannot give you anything except delicious western meals and coffee okay. There also won't be any discounts.」

「Uh oh, that's unfortunate.」

The two cracked jokes to each other. Yuuka's scarf was twirled around so much it was already starting to fray while her tapping toes were already like a tap dance.

Hajime said his goodbyes to Hiroshi and Yuuri and then exited the restaurant. Yuuka saw him off before closing the door, and when she turned around, there were her two parents there with truly nice smiling faces.

「.....What?」

Yuuka asked with obvious wariness. In response, the gentle Yuuri,

「What to do, Hiroshi-san. This daughter of us, her trait is completely a mistress.」

「H, h~m. But from my standpoint, I wish that she will marry properly though.」

「Lo, look here! Just what are you two speaking about your daughter! I'm not Nagumo's mistress, and I also got no plan to enter that guy's harem!」

Yuuka howled. However, the chain of events just now was where a man with wives and kid unexpectedly showed up; then she treated him with food, heard his complaining, and gave him comfort—those acts, even considering that this place was a restaurant, seen from the side looked enough like a mistress.

Seeing her parents who lightly deflected「We get it, we get it」toward her words of denial, Yuuka became especially displeased.

However, it was natural that her words didn't have any persuasiveness.

After all, Yuuka's toes tapping *ton ton* on the floor was her habit when she was in a good mood. And furthermore, that habit wouldn't come out just from being in a good mood; it would only come out if she also felt embarrassed at the same time.

In addition, there was the crimson scarf and limp beret that Yuuka was wearing. Actually, those items had a lot of color variety, but Yuuka only had those items in the crimson color, even including the spare. When she went to buy a replacement, as expected, she would pick crimson again. The same color as the light of the magic power of a certain someone.

And then, her habit of rolling around her scarf with her fingertips was a new habit that was formed these past several years. It was an unconscious habit that came out only when she was talking with a certain someone.

「Heey, Otou-san, Okaa-san? Are you two listening?」

「Yes yes, we get it already. We better start closing up the restaurant soon~」

「The most important thing for Otou-san is that Yuuka is happy, that's all.」

「I, told, youu~~~」

The famous western restaurant【Wisteria】. The frequently changing emotion between joy and anger of the second generation owner was also the specialty of this place.

Part 2

A month after Hajime showed just a bit of a good-for-nothing act at Yuuka's restaurant.

Currently, everyone was gathering in the living room of Nagumo residence. The【120th something of the Nagumo Family Meeting】was opened.

The one who sat at the center of the large dining table was Hajime, and right in front of him was Liliana who was sitting with an awkward expression.

「Now then, Lily. Do you know what the meaning of this family meeting is?」

「u, mo, more or less.....」

Liliana averted her face quickly to the side, but ahead of her gaze, there were Yue and the others who weren't even hiding their exasperated expression. What gouged her heart especially deeply was that even Myuu was looking at her with eyes that appeared to be looking at someone hopeless.

Hajime was about to open his mouth toward Liliana whose gaze was swimming *sui~* to the opposite side.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone's ringtone rang.

「Ah, I, I'm sorry. Please excuse me a bit.」

「Ah, oi, you」

Liliana looked the other way even when Hajime raised his voice while putting her own smartphone on her ear. And then, what could be heard after that were only words related to business like contracts or clients and so on.

Before long, it seemed that they had reached an end and Liliana cut off the call. Seeing that, Hajime sighed while opening his mouth.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone's ringtone rang.

「Ah, I, I'm sorry. Please excuse me a bit.」

「.....」

She answered the phone. This time, it seemed that there was a problem occurring regarding the shift at her part-time workplace. Liliana was listening to the phone while going 'uh-huh, uh-huh' before she quickly started to give out instructions, like who to call, who to substitute for the shift change, what to do about the lacking place such and such, and then what she wanted to be dealt with next and so on.....

Hajime wanted to act the straight-man 'Managing shift schedules obviously ain't the work of a part-timer right!?', but for the time being he endured it.

Before long, the talk came to an end, and Liliana cut off the phone. Hajime then sighed while opening his mouth.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone's ringtone rang.

「Ah, I, I'm sorry. Please excuse me a bit.」

「.....」

Liliana answered the phone. For some reason, there was a sobbing voice coming from the other side of the phone. Liliana was consoling her talking partner while sometimes also reprimanding, and then in order to deal with a grave problem that seemed to occur from some kind of miss, she took out one more smartphone from her pocket and quickly began to give out instructions.

Before long, it seemed that she finished and Liliana cut off the phone. Hajime, who got a vein pulsing on his forehead, was opening his mouth.

But, before he could, *gatari* the sound of someone standing up from a chair resounded.

「I'm sorry, Hajime-san. It seems that the section chi——cough-, a regular employee who was entrusted with an important project made a miss, and it turned out into something that a part-time worker like me has to deal with. And so, I'll go out for a bit!」

A part-time worker that followed up for a regular employee's miss. Or rather, a regular employee who came crying to a part-time employee even though it

was his miss. Furthermore, it seemed this regular employee was a section chief.

Since when did the definition of part-time work change drastically like this.

Liliana quickly put her outfit in order while saying things like「At this rate, the two hundred employees there will be out in the cold! As a part-time leader, I have to do something」before she tried to go outside.

snap- One more vein emerged on Hajime's forehead. And then a word.

「Shia.」

「Yes sir desuuu」

From behind, the rabbit-eared wife who was dancing to the same beat as the husband embraced Liliana who right now was about to exit the room.

「Shi, Shia-san? I'm sorry, but I'm going to wo——」

「Yes yes, I'll just make you cool your head a bit heree」

「Eh? Wai-, NOOOOOO-」

Liliana screamed, and then after that, she received an artistic German suplex and the floor struck the back of her head.「My head-, my head hurts like it got splitttttt-」The former princess was shouting while rolling around on the floor in agony.

「Uu, just what are you doing. After this, I have an important work.....」

「Is that, something more important than the family discussion?」

Liliana complained while rubbing the back of her head with teary eyes. Hajime asked her with a sigh mixed in it.「Uu-」Liliana was at lost for words, and Hajime said in response.

「If that's how it is, then I'll attempt to solve the root of the problem and make it so that you lose your reason for going.」

「E, err, Hajime-san, what do you mean specifically?」

「.....Today's weather is sunny, but it seems that there will be a random meteor shower later.」

「Let's have a discussion.」

Indeed, the root of the problem would be cleared. If there wasn't any troubled person, then there also wouldn't be any trouble.

Feeling how unbearable it would be if the meteor shower that once annihilated the capital of her own country was dropped on her part-time workplace, Liliana took her seat in a panic.

「Look at you, even though recently you were grieving because not to mention me, you weren't able to even converse satisfactorily with anyone in the family because of work, work, work, but then you tried to get out abruptly from the discussion to talk about that, just what's with that?」

「Tha, that's, obviously, even I am also fed up here you know, Hajime-san? I really want to yell out loudly, 'just why are they all relying on just me, please manage it somehow just by yourself.' But, before I realized it, everyone relied on me, and I was placed in a position with responsibility, and now it's really hard to break out from it.」

「Even though it's part-time work?」

「Even though it's part-time work, yes.」

Hajime sighed for who knew how many times already. He then handed over the mirror he had prepared to Liliana who was talking with a voice that couldn't hide her emotion of「I'm fed up already」.

The face that was reflected in the mirror was the creepy face of the workaholic Lily with fierily blazing eyes.

Liliana gently put down the mirror.

「This is a mistake. It's not like I'm starved or anything. This is a misunderstanding. Thanks to doing a moderate amount of work from the part-time job, day by day, I'm in the process of getting closer to becoming "a normal girl" ——」

「Including the part-time job at Sonobe's place, how many part-time jobs are you currently holding?」

「.....I, it's, seven.」

「The job description?」

「A, a bit of managing inventory and dealing with the client.」

「Other than that?」

「Something like fast food restaurant.」

「The specific.」

「.....I'm in charge of the part-time workers at the main restaurant while being entrusted to coordinate the surrounding seven branch restaurants.」

「The call just now?」

「At another establishment related with food and drink where I'm working part-time, various things happened, and I work as an advisor of the head office trade section.....It seems there was a miss at the transaction that was started from my advice where the company's fortune is at stake, and at this rate, it would get a complete revocation. If that happens, depending on the situation there, then there is even the possibility that the company will go under.」

Hajime wordlessly pushed out the mirror. It was as though he was an exorcist that was pushing out a cross toward a girl who was possessed by a devil! What was reflected in that mirror was a creepy face that seemed to say「This is a heavy responsibility you know, Lily! Gufufuh」.....

Immediately,「Stooppp——. Don't show me the mirrrrr——!!」Liliana writhed in agony.

.....She was completely like a girl who was possessed by a devil.

「Yes yes, at~~ten~~tion! Now that we have confirmed that presently Lily-chan's workaholic level hasn't improved at all, everyone, please state your opinion!」

Sumire, who held the role as the chairman of the meeting, tapped the table *kan kan* with a spoon and asked for the opinion of everyone.

「Yes!」The one who raised her hand first was Myuu. Sumire pointed with a fork at Myuu「Yes, Myuu-chan!」. Her manner was really bad.

「I think that Lily-oneechan's addiction won't be fixed even if she died!」

「Kafuh!?!」

Myuu launched her words like a bullet of an anti-material grade rifle with a cheerful smile on her face. Liliana pressed her chest and collapsed.

Next,「Yes desuu!」was Shia with her rabbit ears standing straight. Sumire pointed sharply with long chopsticks「Yes, Shia-chan!」. Just where did she take it out from?

「I think that something like rehabilitation is meaningless to fix a person's core nature desuu!」

「Guhih!?!」

That opinion actually had much persuasiveness. All of Shia's family were people with screwed up core natures. Incidentally, Shia's self-proclaimed best friend, the princess of the elves, was also a pervert at the core. Soon, she might turn from her best friend into her step-mother. However, regarding this case, Shia was averting her rabbit ears from the reality.

The next one who hurriedly raised her hand was Tio. After her, Remia also raised her hand while smiling. Sumire said「Yes Tio-chan, Remia-chan!」while pointing with a snap using a ladle. For a moment, it looked like the ladle materialized from empty air.....was that just an illusion?

「For example, if I hath mine butt spanked moderately in the name of rehabilitation, and then asked if this nature of mine can be fixed by that or not, then the answer is it's impossible! This art the same.」

「What a hardship. Even though she wishes to stop working and be together with her family, without working she will be frustrated.....it will be great if there is something else other than work that she can do.」

「Uu. I'm the same as Tio-san.....even if you ask me something other than work.....after all, I'm just a hollow person.....hics-」

Liliana lost her nerve. And then she fell down before starting to trace circles on the floor with her fingertip in an easy to understand gesture.

「Nn-」Yue raised her hand. Sumire said「Yes, Yue-chan!」while pointing with a frying pan for rolled eggs so hard it made a *buon* sound.It looked like she took it out from her cuff though.

Beside Sumire, Shuu's eyes were sparkling, 「Sumire, you, your party performance skill has gone up again!」his tension was climbing up to the sky.

「.....You want, remodeling?」

「Hiih!? No thank you!」

‘That difficult nature, want me to remodel it along with your soul?’ Yue wriggled her hands while standing up from her chair. In response to that, Liliana screamed while dragging her body backward.

Hajime gave a glance at Liliana who was trembling like Davis-kun before he scratched his head and opened his mouth.

「Well, it's positive that this nature of Liliana cannot be fixed just from doing part-time work.」

「Uu, Hajime-san?」

Liliana's shoulders dropped despondently.

Hajime's gaze ran around toward Yue and the others. He judged that they all had reached a conclusion. And then, he made Liliana sit on her chair in order to tell her that conclusion.

「Lily. Anyway, these two months of rehabilitation turned out meaningless, that's why, how about if in the next two months you don't do anything?」

「Not doing, anything?」

Liliana was bewildered. Hajime nodded「Yeah」. In a sense, this was a shocking proposal for Liliana.

「Resign from all your part-time jobs, and then, become a shut-in NEET for two months.」

「Eh?」

Like this, with the unanimous vote from【The 80th or 130th, well it doesn't matter which, of the Nagumo Family Meeting】, it was decided that the princess of another world was to become a shut-in NEET.

By the way, regarding the mismanagement of a certain trade department that made a miss, it was resolved in moderation by Hajime due to Lily's entreaty. Of

course, it was resolved using a way that wasn't a random meteor shower on a sunny day.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I uploaded three chapters consecutively for the celebration of this story's resumption, but for some reason, this Lily arc didn't end.

Unexpectedly, I had fun writing, and unconsciously the story got dragged on.

Especially how it became as though this is Yuuka's turn even though this is Lily's arc.....Lily, how pitiful.

Now then, my deepest apologies, but next week's update for Saturday will be Lily's arc too.

In this After II, I'm thinking to try to write about the wives or classmates that didn't get spotlights.

And when I finish with that, unexpectedly there are a lot of wishful voices, and Shirakome himself is also getting in the mood for it, so I'm thinking that perhaps I should try writing about the story of Kouki-kun who got kidnapped too muchhh.

Well then, please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 227

Arifureta After II I Become the God of the New World? First Part

AN: I'm sorry, the Lily arc hasn't ended yet.....

Next chapter! I will finish it next chapter without fail!

PS—

The chronological order was pointed out to me, so as soon as I have time, I'll revise it.

Until then, it will help if you readers can think that this is how it is with the hopeless Shirakome just like usual and look the other way.

Part 1

☆NEET Queen Lily

Two months had passed since that【It's troublesome already to count the number y'know, Nagumo Family Meeting】, where it was decided that Liliana had to become a shut-in NEET.

During that time, in order to rescue the workaholic former princess, Liliana, who was constantly drifting around from too much free time, was consoled by every one of the Nagumo family with every kind of amusement. It was so that she could forget the matter of work even for just a little.

Everyone was worried from the bottom of their hearts about their family member who was addicted to work at an abnormal level.

Then, specifically what kind of amusement was provided for her? For example, there was something like this.

The one who was the first to move even among the Nagumo family was Myuu. She visited Liliana's room with toys in her hands.

「Lily-oneechan, let's play this!」

The thing that Myuu brought and presented to her with a lot of energy caused Liliana to tilt her head.

「Err, what is this, Myuu-chan?」

「It's Raptor nano.」

‘I'm not asking in that kind of meaning.’ While thinking that, Liliana dropped her eyes on the thing that was handed to her——a 1/48 model of an Earth's fighter plane, multi-purpose tactical fighter F-22, alias Raptor.

Myuu nodded in satisfaction at Liliana who accepted the model even while she was in bewilderment, and then she took out another model fighter plane.

「Flanker-tan is also hard to discard, but it cannot win against the charm of the variable wing. Tomneko-tan, I pick you!」She did that while saying such a thing.

「Now, Lily-oneechan. Shut-in NEET Lily-oneechan who is only staying indoors. In order to master being a shut-in NEET, let's blast off to the sky while secluding yourself inside the room nano!」

「Err, Myuu-chan? I wish you won't repeatedly call me a shut-in NEET too much like that..... It's more or less something decided at the family meeting; it's something like a medical treatment.....」

「Shut your mouth, Warrant Officer Lily. Do you want me to beat you up? nano」

「.....Recently, you are increasingly growing similar to Hajime-san aren't you, Myuu-chan. Especially in that unreasonable aspect.」

Surely, if there was an entry for “unreasonable” in the status plate, then Myuu's parameters would surely extend out with terrific momentum.

Before Liliana realized it, Myuu, who seemed to change completely into a military personnel, was clad in something like a pilot suit, equipped with a short mustache, teardrop type sunglasses, and sharply put *sucha!* on her face.

And then, she handed over matching sunglasses and a short mustache, along with something like a game joystick, to Liliana. Perhaps for Myuu, speaking of military personnel meant having a short mustache.....

「Warrant Officer Lily. This is a flying toy that papa created. Something like a drone. A distant viewing stone is used for its cockpit screen, and its field of vision can be shared through these sunglasses. The controls are performed using this joystick. Do you understand? nano」

「Ah, yes. No, I don't understand. First of all, what's with the Warrant Officer?」

「Ah, Myuu is the flight lieutenant and is above Lily-oneechan, that's why properly call Myuu as Captain nano.」(TN: Should I use lieutenant here or captain? This is how the raw is. I don't really get the structure of military command.)

「No, that's not what I'm asking.....」

Myuu already opened the window and put her F-14 Super Tomcat in standby. Whether when she was a princess or when she wasn't a princess anymore, the point where she was ignored didn't seem to change.

「Preparation OK. Demon squadron, Demon 1 Super Tomcat. Launch-nano!」

「Eh, do I need to say that too? E, err, Demon 2, Raputar? La, launching!」(TN: When the word Raptor is Japanized, it was spelled as raputaa)

The fierce gleam from Myuu's eyes emitted a wordless demand. Liliana, who sensed that, spoke while matching with Myuu's launch sequence. There wasn't any runway, but Captain Myuu's first aircraft and Officer Lily's second aircraft floated lightly using gravity control, and then they both flew outside the window.

After that, the sight of the vast sky that was visible through her sunglasses cleared up, even if just temporarily, Liliana's gloominess, who was feeling depressed from not working.

Liliana was opening her mouth to thank Myuu for her consideration and her invitation for this wonderful playing time, but when she glanced to her side, for some reason, Myuu was making a fearless smile that was just like her father. Seeing that Liliana was assaulted by a fiercely bad premonition.

Right after that,「Finally they are coming huh. Fine then, I'll play with you nano」Myuu spouted out ominous words. Liliana was glancing at Myuu through the corner of her eyes as she became speechless from the scene that was visible through her sunglasses.

After all, there was a “real fighter plane” flying in parallel with their model aircraft.

Liliana questioned Myuu with naked agitation, but according to Myuu's careless reply, it seemed that the place their toys were flying was right above the base of the JDF.

Actually, before this, Myuu already had previous offenses of flying above the JDF base while raining down missiles that were crammed with ketchup and mayonnaise.

The vehicles and facilities on the base, and also every one of the JDF who came outside to shot down the aircraft model was dripping with ketchup and mayonnaise at that time. It seemed that they flew into a rage from that. Perhaps because of that too, this time even the fighter planes of the JDF finally scrambled just to face a small model aircraft「That damned drone came around again!」that was displaying a performance that was unbecoming when compared to the existing drones of the modern era.

The pilot of the aircraft flying parallel with them, for the time being, moved his hand in the cockpit in a pointing down gesture; he was demanding them to land down.

「Myu, Myu Myu Myuu-chan! What are you thinking! As expected, this is crossing over the limit of things that can be done!」

「Lily-oneechan. There are great sayings in Japan nano——it's not a crime if it's not exposed.」

「Hajime-saa——n! Remia-saa——n! Myuu-chan here is dashing in an improper directionnn! Please revise the education policy-! Or rather, stop her quicklyyy!」

「Fuh, naïve. Both papa and mama, and also everyone else, are away from home nano. Myuu has made no oversight!」

Ignoring the shaken Liliana, Myuu said something like「Demon 1, engage!」while controlling the plane with pointlessly refined piloting. And then, the cockpit of the startled pilot was fired at by Vulcan.

Right after that, *bichi bichi bichi*- small bullets hit the canopy of the JDF aircraft. Naturally, the canopy was dyed bright red. It wasn't the pilot's blood, but ketchup. Furthermore, there might be some kind of particular component included in it because the ketchup was clinging well without getting blasted away by the wind pressure.

The pilot's movement stopped. No, he was starting to move slowly. He was moving his hand. His hand was once more moving lower——tracing his neck, and then his thumb dropped downward. It was obvious what the pilot meant. 「Fall to hell」he gestured.

It went without saying that after that it had turned into a grand dogfight against the JDF aircraft.

Even while pleading for them to just go home already while half-crying, Liliana continued to escape from the JDF aircraft with excessively skilled piloting. Myuu said「If we escape here, it will be the shame of the women of the sea!」while displaying beautiful midair maneuvers one after another like an Immelmann turn, Cobra, and so on. She didn't stop her grand rivalry with the JDF aircraft. Naturally, even Liliana's straight-man act「Woman of the sea you say.....this is the sky!」was ignored as if it was nothing.

But, the end came so suddenly.

Because out of nowhere, the back of Myuu's head was tightly held in an eagle grip.

gi gi gi When the short mustache and sunglasses Myuu turned around, like a machine that didn't get oiled, there was the figure of her papa half-smiling.

After that, the drone forcefully self-exploded in the blink of an eye;「Aa!? Myuu's Tomneko-tan!」even such a scream echoed in vain and signaled the end of Myuu's "playing".

And then, the main offender Myuu met a punishment of a hundred strikes on her butt by Hajime from going too far in playing, and on that day a sobbing voice was echoing in the Nagumo residence without stopping until dinner time.

Liliana, who got the feeling that recently Myuu's attitude was becoming too flashy, was looking at Myuu who was reflecting with teary eyes. She thought, 'perhaps it ended all right like this'.

.....She felt like for an instant she saw a color of ecstasy on the expression of Myuu while she was rubbing her swollen red butt, but surely, without a doubt, that was just her imagination. Because if that wasn't just her imagination, then one black dragon would surely vanish from this world without a trace.

At another time, she was also invited by Yue and Shia and tried working diligently at sewing steadily.

Yue had the experience of tailoring Hajime's outfit during her period in the abyss, so by now, sewing was becoming half a hobby for her. Shia was a rabbit

skilled in housework from the start, so sewing was her forte. Taught by the two of them, Liliana's sewing skill was improving conspicuously.

There, Remia, who recently became known as an up-and-coming designer who was enveloped in mystery with an unknown face, offered up an idea, and Liliana tried to sell the clothes and accessories she created through the internet.

When she did that, it unexpectedly sold well, and Liliana was having fun more and more.....

She established the marketing and advertisement of the internet sales, and what's more, she started to investigate the procedure in order to start up a company——and got a knuckle dropped on her head from Hajime.

It was understandable why Hajime did so. After all, she got a shadow under her eyes from thinking of the prospect of internet marketing in the future from morning until evening.

Most likely, the environment where she was made to be a shut-in NEET caused her to manifest withdrawal symptoms. No matter how much work she was chased with, it didn't show up at all on her face even once. That was why it showed just how much she was starving for work that her face's complexion changed.

And in the end, at midnight, Myuu rolled out from the closet of Hajime's room looking scared because she could hear a strange voice. She was clinging to Hajime while in tears.

.....Let's put aside for now just why she was hiding in the closet of Hajime's room at midnight.

Let's also put aside, for the time being, the appearance of Myuu who was wearing adult lingerie with a black tone unbecoming for a ten years old girl.

While we were at it, let's also put aside the fact how without anyone noticing there was a hole opened in the closets of Hajime's and Myuu's rooms with a size that could be freely entered through by a child.

Even while his expression was grandly twitching, Hajime carefully wrapped Myuu inside a futon and put her to sleep. He then entered "the place of strange voices"——the Lilianna's room. When he confirmed the inside, he found Liliana

making noise from a nightmare there.

She was roughly breathing looking like she was in pain while moaning. While sometimes,「fuheh」she was raising a strange giggle. Her expression was the usual creepy face.

It seemed, even inside her dream, she looked like she was going「Ge, geez-, this is really hopeless. Fine then, I'll do it already. If I don't do it, then who else will do it☆」. It seemed that in her dream she was happily chased by work even while acting displeased.

This princess couldn't escape from work whether in dreams or reality.

Hajime devised a plan.

In the first place, Liliana had a habit of fantasizing. Especially regarding love affairs. And then, in this house, there was a leading person on that road. Yes, it was the famous shoujo manga artist Sumire.

With the work of Sumire as the first on the list, the book collection of shoujo manga that was deposited in large amounts at her workplace was given to Liliana.

Because of her seriousness that came since birth and her workaholic nature, and since Liliana came to earth, she was busy in learning various things and didn't really come into contact with this thing called manga. For Liliana, her reading was mostly thick learning books. She wasn't familiar with books that had mainly pictures in it.

Because of that, at first Liliana was smiling wryly from the really unfamiliar experience, but because it was something prepared for her with effort, she gave it a try.

And the result was,

「Munch munch-, gulp-.....puhah. Aa, what's with this good-for-nothing. What are you doing just seeing her off there? Good grief, you don't understand a woman's heart..... Nn, continue to the next volume. Eerr, the next one, the next.....」

She got addicted, and she was not just merely but totally addicted to the

world of shoujo manga.

Liliana was lying down on the bed while right beside her was a bottle of Coe Cola and a bag of potato chips constantly on standby. She brought them to her mouth while still lying down as she dragged her body forward while reaching her other hand toward the next volumes of manga piled up without raising her body at all. She had reached this kind of advanced level by now.

In addition, she was in a state that wasn't concerned at all with her rolled up skirt, generously exposing her thighs that recently had become somewhat plump; in addition, she sucked up *chupa*- her fingers that got gleamingly oily from the potato chips before wiping those fingers on her flipped up skirt.

Already, there wasn't even a shred of the atmosphere of a former princess from her.

She was an existence that shut herself inside her own room in broad daylight, equipped with carbonated drinks and potato chips, and continuously adventured to the world of literary creation without getting tired of it.

Liliana S. B. Hairihi.

Right now, she had become a genuinely splendid shut-in NEET without anything that could be complained of from her!

「How did it turn out like this.....」

Hajime who was standing beside the door of Liliana's room while looking at the state of Liliana was pressing his head with one hand looking pained.

Certainly, it was Hajime who handed over the great amount of shoujo manga so that Liliana could enjoy her free time a bit. But, while that might be the case, he wondered just why in a mere month that work addict on an abnormal pervert level could become a splendid shut-in NEET like this.

Hajime sighed while feeling troubled「Was the recoil from the work addiction too powerful?」at the former princess whose way of living was overly extreme.

And then, he approached Liliana who didn't even noticed that Hajime was right behind her while she kept lying down indulging in manga with her bare legs swinging up and down.

Standing beside the former princess whose panties visibility wasn't just a glimpse anymore but already at a completely exposed level. Hajime let out a deep sigh once more and held that plump butt in an eagle grip.

「Hinyah!? What is thisss!?!」

Liliana's butt twitched up with her panties still fully exposed. Even so, she didn't let go of her manga and also didn't even stand up and only looked back across her shoulder. She then went「What, it's just Hajime-san」in understanding and smiled before returning to the world of manga without pause.

「No, don't go back there. Look over here, butt-naked princess.」

「Bu, butt-naked princess.....that's a really cruel remark.」

As expected, Liliana couldn't just accept the way Hajime called her and raised her body squirmingly. Yet, even so, she only moved to a girl's sitting posture with her slovenly state unchanged seeing her skirt was still flipped up.

「And so, what business do you have Hajime-san? As expected, it's to grope my butt? Ufufu, even though the sun is still high up.....the love of my husband is strong.」

After saying such a thing, Liliana fidgeted around while closing her eyes and she pushed out her lips「Nn」. With oily lips that were gleaming from potato chip remains.

Hajime's shoulders were falling in dejection at Liliana who didn't have even a shadow of the proud princess in the past while inside his heart he was complaining「In a sense, Liliana might be number one if speaking about the level of things not going as planned」.

And then, he gently used a tissue to wipe up the lips of the potato chip princess who was waiting for a kiss.

Liliana felt an out of place sensation on her lips and showed a puzzled expression at Hajime who kept wiping.

「Your current appearance, I wonder what the bunches at the kingdom will feel if they see it.」

「? Won't they think, 'she is really living in happiness', like that? I'm happy you know?」

「.....You also have potato chips and cola with you.」

「No, not really, that's not.....certainly, they are really delicious though. I also think that they are the strongest combo.Want to eat?」

Liliana tilted her head thinking「Perhaps, he wants to eat too?」while she rolled her body and took a bag of potato chips that was placed beside the pillow. And then, she rolled once more and returned to her former position with a really natural motion to get back to a girl's sitting posture.

And then, when she felt the lightness and silence of the potato chip bag she was presenting, she blinked「Eh?」and confirmed its content. The inside was already empty.

「Err, I thought it still has some remain.....」

Giving only a glance at Hajime whose expression was gradually turning speechless, Liliana rolled and rolled once more to move to the edge of the bed. And then, she reached out her hand while still lying down and rummaged around under the bed searching for something.

「A, there is.Here, Hajime-san. Please take one.」

She lifted up a box with a familiar movement, and then she took out that from the bag while hiding it with her body before she held out her hand smoothly toward Hajime. Right after that, from her arranged fingers, *chakin!* a pooky flew out.

Liliana's face looked triumphant. It seemed she saw a commercial and wanted to imitate it. And then while she was at it, her other hand that was held in front of her chest also had a pooky *shakin-* flying out. She ate that one herself.

「.....」

「This is really deliciousss」

Seeing Liliana who was smiling cheerfully while wordlessly doing 'aa~n' at him, Hajime was starting to show a tired expression all the more.

「.....So, about my business.」

「A, that's right. What's the matter?」

「No, it's not really a big matter, today is exactly the second month. I'm wondering how it turned out.」

「.....Ah, now that Hajime-san mentions it.」

It seemed that she had completely forgotten the aim of being a shut-in NEET. Liliana was making ocky sticks *shakin shakin* from her fingertips while nodding in understanding.Her fingertips *shakin* was surely using magic. Truly a waste of magic use.

Liliana smiled cheerfully and spread her hands widely as though to flaunt herself.

「Please look, Hajime-san. Hajime-san's strategy is right on the mark! I am splendidly free from any withdrawal symptoms even without doing any work, and not just that, I have turned into a normal girl who can think from the bottom of my heart that I don't want to do anything like work anymore!」

Liliana proclaimed energetically. An ambiguous groan「uboa」leaked out from Hajime's mouth.

It was truly just like this princess-sama who was unable to live except in an extreme way of living. No, perhaps it was exactly because she was royalty that she could only live extremely.....

「Lily. I don't know if you remember, but in the end, this is a rehabilitation to cure your workaholic symptoms. It doesn't mean that it's fine for you to just roll around like this for your whole life you know?」

「Eh.....but, Hajime-san. If you work, you lose isn't that right?」

Hajime went「uboa」once more. This was no good; this former princess was no good already. Just within two months, she had thoroughly become a regretful princess.

「Listen, Lily. I am also an otaku at my roots, so I'm with the indoor faction. That's why I cannot unsparingly reject the saying to work is to lose. Tou-san also told me in the past, that a person who can become shut-in with their own money is the winner in a sense.」

「Hear that, just as I thought, we lose if we work!」

「Oi, are you listening to me? I said “your own money” just now.」

「Ee~rr, but, I am Hajime-san’s wife.....in short, Hajime-san’s money is my money——higyahn!?!」

An iron forehead flick burst out toward Liliana who was talking like Giant.「My forehead-, my foreheaaaad-」Liliana screamed while writhing around.

Liliana’s skirt inevitably got rolled up once more with her panties completely laid bare. A vein pulsed on Hajime’s forehead while he spit out「I’ll stop being gentle」and put an eagle grip on her plump thigh.

「Fuwah. Wha, what are you doing Hajime-san. As I thought, you are craving me right from the afternoo——」

「This thigh has become really plump huh. It feels chubby.」

「Eh? Is, is that so?」

「Yeah. Far more than two months earlier.」

Hajime was giving an unblinking gaze while「This place too, and also here too huuh」he grasped at Liliana’s butt and her upper arm.

Guessing what Hajime wanted to say, Liliana’s girl power finally reacted. Her complexion was turning drastically pale.

Hajime’s fingertip was sliding toward the most dangerous place on her body. Hajime’s eyes kept being unblinking, and he ignored even when Liliana tried to stop him and pinched at that place.

——puni-

「Stooppp——!! Don’t pinch my stomachhh-」

「Oi oi, what’s this. What’s with this flabby stomach? Hmm?」

「Tha, that’s not it! This is, there is just a bit of that going this, should I say that it’s.....」

Liliana was pressing on her stomach while her eyes were rolling round and round while she was desperately searching for an excuse, but the scattered wreckage of snacks, the remains of carbonated drinks, they all stole the

persuasiveness from her.

Hajime turned his heart into a demon king and dealt the finishing blow to Liliana.

「At this rate, in one more month.....the overweight princess Liliana will be complete.」

「O, overweight princess.」





化学調味料
無添加

おばあちゃんの

ほた：ほた：海

さとうじょうゆ

UP!
おしょうゆ感
おばあちゃんの新レシピ



Liliana crumbled down. It seemed that a sense of danger for her current situation was finally sprouting. She threw her pocoy *pei-* still with teary eyes. Furthermore, she took out Hapoy Turn from under the sheets and *pei-*. She took out a great number of gummies from under her pillow and *pei-*. She reached her hand under the bed and took out every kind of potato chip, Tongao Corn, Potaota Yaki, Dootachos, boxes of omaibou, Country o'am, Choo Pie, etc.....and threw them all *pei-*. And for the last, she hopped up and down *pyon pyon* which caused candy to fall down from all over her clothes. She threw *peeeeei-* all of them altogether. (TN: ,



, ,



,



,



The snacks built a mountain in the corner of the room. Just how much had she piled up?

「Hajime-san. It appears that I have the fate of needing to work no matter what.」

「You are going to the extreme again. Why can't you do things in "moderation" huh?」

「I am Liliana. A woman who can only choose white or black, one or ten!」

「No, even if you proclaim like that, it's still」

Liliana who was growing somewhat completely desperate caused Hajime to scratch his cheek wondering what to do.

But, at that time,

「I have heard the story!」

The closet of the room was thrown open *bam*. From there, the one who leapt out with a pointlessly refined somersault was the mother of the Nagumo family——Sumire. Just what was going on with the closets of the Nagumo residence? It was terrifying because it felt like it would access another world at

this rate.

Hajime ignored Sumire and investigated inside the closet. While he was doing that, Sumire made a cool pose while pointing with a snap at Liliana.

「Lily-chan! Become mine(my assistant). If you do that, then I'll give you half the work!」

「Yes, happily!」

In response to that sentence of invitation that was like a certain demon king somewhere, the former princess replied swiftly like a certain pub worker somewhere. (TN: Anyone know the reference here?)

「Saay, Okaa-san. Just from where in the world did you enter this closet from? There is no hole inside, and there is no way I won't notice if it is hidden.....」

Hajime turned around while his head was cocked in puzzlement. There was already no one else there.

「What.....the.....」

Hajime who didn't notice their presence exiting the room at all was astonished.

Hajime couldn't suppress his shudder against his mother who recently seemed to learn the skill of appearing at unexpected places and at unexpected moments. Actually, in the world of publishing business, there was a rumor that Sumire-sensei was a real-life Doraeon though.....

It was a story for a bit later when it was finally known that it was because Sumire was using and applying the artifacts that Hajime created in preparation for the worst case, or artifacts for making the daily life convenient.

Hajime, knowing the fact that his mother was using the artifacts even more skillfully than himself, fell on all fours. It was also a story of a bit later.

Part 2

☆Shoujo Manga Artist Lily

「Thank god~, you really saved me, Lily-chan. I thought that you could become a battle-ready force because your fingers are dexterous, but this surpassed my expectations.」

「I'm honored that I can be useful. I myself am having fun getting involved with the creative work of manga.....」

It was about a week after Sumire took away Liliana without Hajime even noticing to become her work's assistant.

Because several of Sumire's assistants who were working with her until now suddenly got sick or had family problems, she became shorthanded all of a sudden and was in need of substitute assistants in a hurry.

Of course, because Sumire was a big-shot manga artist, the publisher would prepare excellent assistants even in such a situation. But, Sumire who knew that recently Liliana got really addicted to shoujo manga thought that this was a good chance, and she tried making Liliana become her helper.

As a result, Liliana, who was skillful and possessed uncommon concentration power from the start, managed to learn the skill, that wasn't inferior even when compared with veteran assistants, in just a week. Now, she had become a very satisfactory battle force.

It appeared that manga creation work suited Liliana. The work also had a moderate pressure where she couldn't bear to make a mess of the manuscript that was drawn by Sumire, who was someone she loved, it needed precise attentiveness, it had a clear time limitation that was the deadline, and the work amount was also quite much.

And then, the best thing for Liliana above all else, was that this work "wasn't a

work that she was forced to do”. It was a work that Liliana liked, where the factor that she was helping Sumire was strong.

In a sense, it could be said that this work was fit for Liliana to a T.

「Fufu, Lily-chan. Right now, you are making a really good face you know? You have a shadow under your eye, but it feels more like something healthy and fulfilling.」

「Yes. Perhaps this is the first time that I’m getting absorbed in work with an excited feeling like this.」

They had just somehow finished the manuscript in time right before the deadline. Now, they were talking to each other leisurely while drinking café au lait that was filled with a lot of milk. The other assistants were also unanimously praising Liliana’s work attitude.

Here, she wasn’t standing in the lead. They were all working hard together where everyone was praising their peers. It was something really fresh for Liliana and gave her a great sense of fulfillment.

「So Lily-chan. I asked you to come help for the time being but what will you do after this? If it’s okay with you, I’ll employ you formally.」

「Sumire-okaasama—no, Sumire-sensei, if it’s fine with you then please, by any means.」

The two exchanged a firm handshake with each other.

Like this, the workaholic part-time leader had gone through being a shut-in NEET and finally become a shoujo manga artist’s assistant.

Half a year after that.

「Haa, Sumire-okaasama. As I thought, it’s just no good. It’s fine already, so please go back to your own work.」

「What are you saying now. There is still time. It’s too fast for you to give up.」

「Uu, but.....」

Liliana dejectedly turned her eyes to the clock on the wall. It was just a bit more until the time limit.

Well-balanced meal and the fierce and violent battlefield that was the approaching deadline had shaved off the excessive fat from Liliana's body. However, in reverse, her body build became just right—even though she was slim, her style became voluptuous and her sensuality increased considerably. There was also how her age had turned seventeen years old, and her charm as a woman was increasing by far and away.

Liliana, who was putting on such an adult sensuality, was now in a state that was being down, for some reason, which caused anyone who was looking at her to harbor various desires without reason.

「Come on, don't be that down. Lily-chan is the prized pupil of this Sumire-sensei, that's why you need to hold yourself more confidently.」

「Sumire-okaasama.....that's right. Besides, even Hajime-san is a person who won't give up until the end. It's no good if I give up now.」

Liliana clenched her small fist and made an appeal of not giving up.

Now then, if it was asked what Liliana and Sumire were waiting together for, they were waiting for a call.

In this half a year, Liliana, whose heart was completely stolen by the world of literary creation, had increased her skill by a great margin. And then, she made her superabundance delusion to erupt and secretly drew her own shoujo manga, but Sumire knew that and invited her to apply for the Rookie of the Year Award.

Today was the day where the winner would be announced. If someone won a placement, then they would be told by phone. If there wasn't any call until the appointed time, then that meant that their work was rejected.

The work that she poured her heart and blood into got evaluated by other people. This experience that was the first for her was heightening Liliana's nervousness to a new level.

Seeing Liliana who was staring fixedly at the needle of the clock, Sumire thought inside her heart「The nervous face of Lily-chan who recently grew into a completely lewd body—not that, she recently looked like an adult.....it's unbearableeee」and unconsciously reached out her hand squirmingly, it was at

that time,

——pururururururu-

「!？」

「I'm sorry-, it's just a sudden impulse! Forgive me!」

The resounding ringtone caused Liliana to stand up in a flash. She left behind Sumire who, for some reason, was apologizing while making an excuse and took her smartphone into her hand.

She answered the phone timidly, and a beat later, her expression turned bright in a flash. She expressed words of thanks「Thank you very much-」many times while bowing her head repeatedly as though she was a pure Japanese person.

Like that, after Liliana cut off the phone, she leapt toward Sumire who was smiling broadly from guessing the result.

「I did it, Sumire-okaasama! I, I did it!」

「You see, it's just as I told you, right? I told you it would be fine if it's Lily-chan. And, which place did you win?」

「Yes, it's the first place! The number one! The grand victor!」

「Oh my. I thought that it might be possible, but you actually really took it. As expected from Lily-chan.」

It seemed that Lily's submitted work took first place.

After that, the work of Liliana who took the Rookie of the Year Award obtained explosive popularity and sold out like hot cakes.

Surely, her being a relative and also a prized pupil of that famous shoujo manga artist great Sumire-sensei was also one of the factors of her high newsworthiness.

By the way, the story of the manga was about the journey of a talentless young man who was summoned to another world, where he brushed aside adversity until he defeated an evil god, and in the process of that journey, the main character was connecting his heart with the princess of the kingdom. It

was a really common love fantasy genre.

In the middle of the journey, the vampire princess, rabbit-eared girl, dragon onee-san, a widow and her daughter, the teacher, and girl classmates who were summoned together with the young man made their appearance and had a nice atmosphere with the young man, but the young man's heart was leaning toward the princess of the kingdom. Like that, there was also the desire of a certain someone laid bare in the content of the story.

It went without saying that Liliana was given a cool chilly gaze from the wives who were reading the manga.

Even though the story was something common, the emotion of the characters, the story's development, and the scene depiction were something overflowing with realness as though the creator had seen it with her own eyes. It seemed that caused it to be received well by the readers.

Now then, Liliana, who had discovered something for her to live for, became Sumire's second gen, and took a seat in the manga world; inside such a person there was a trait that couldn't be ignored by the people related with the business world.

That was her elegance as royalty that she had recovered from discovering something to live for. And then, her personality and beauty that once in the past charmed millions of people. In addition, was the refined sex appeal that she was clad with recently.

In short, she had the appearance and personality that was extremely appealing to the media.

Because of that, once she showed up in things like autograph sessions or interviews, her popularity exploded greatly separated from the manga.

After all, because she was a former princess she was used with going out in front of a lot of people, she also had the full knowledge of what kind of expression, along with the impression, she needed to give to others. Compared to probing the gut of each other against foreign negotiators or nobles, just making herself to be received favorably by the masses was just too easy.

Because she was recognized as the prized pupil of the great Sumire-sensei by

society, there was no way she could smear mud on the face of her treasured mother-in-law. She also wanted to respond to the feelings of her fans who said to her that they liked her manga.

Liliana, who was thinking like that, displayed her princess skills in full without holding anything back.

As a result, a year after Liliana started her activity as a shoujo manga artist, at the time when her manga was decided to be turned into an anime at an unprecedented speed, Liliana was,

「Everyy~~one! Thank you very much for coming today! Anime decision☆ Congratulations! This is Lily who will sing the theme song as the work's creator dee~~su! I'll sing with my all, so please enjoy it okay!」

——WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!!

While a thousand fans raised their loud cheers (because the tickets were limited, only a thousand people could enter), Liliana stood on a stage wearing a cute outfit like an idol, and then she sent a wink *pachin-*.

The former princess, former part-time leader, former shut-in NEET, and the popular shoujo manga artist, was now turning into an existence that was laying her hand on the seat of the top idol.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm sorry that the Lily arc turned out to be so long.

I'll end it in the next chapter, and after that, I'll write a bit about the wives who didn't get a spotlight. I'm also thinking of trying to write about the Getting Kidnapped Too Much Case.

Incidentally, in the main story, is there any section that feels like「This part is written vaguely, more detail please」? Sometimes in the middle of writing, I often think 'I want to try writing it in more detail someday', but the 'After' and 'extra story' are too fun, and those things are becoming a distant memory.

If you have a request, then please don't hold back and tell me whether

through a review or message.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 228

Arifureta After II I Become the Deity of the New World? Second Part

AN: This chapter is a bit late, I'm sorry!

Part 1

☆Top Idol Lily

In the center of a dressing room that was quite large, Liliana, who was buried in bouquets, presents, and letters from fans, was moving her pen with a terrific momentum *scratch scratch scratch scratch scratch* while still dressed in a cute stage dress.

Without even feeling bothered that her fingertips were dirtied with ink, she kept moving her pen with a momentum that felt like it would even produce afterimage. The reason for this was of course in order to draw her manga.

There weren't even thirty minutes until her next show. And then once she stood on the stage, she wouldn't be able to make it to the deadline. Therefore, she had to finish her manuscript in less than thirty minutes!

whoosh Liliana's left hand reached out. What that hand grasped was a Calory ote. It was a really excellent ration if you ignored how it would turn lumpy inside the mouth. She'd had no time to eat since the morning, so she replenished her nourishment with this. (TN: I never ate Calorie Mate before, and the author here is using a word ぱっさぱさ(passa pasa) that I cannot find the meaning, to describe the sensation. I just put the word lumpy as a placeholder. Anyone know how to describe the sensation of eating Calorie Mate?)

And, at that timing, regardless of how Liliana had asked the staff so that no one entered the room until the decided time, the door of the dressing room was knocked upon.

Liliana, whose princess skill was lively even at this kind of time, was replying brightly with a voice that would make anyone who heard it feel happy despite how Liliana's eyes didn't even look away from her manuscript, and how her hand also didn't stop moving.

「Ye~~s. The door is not locked~.」

「Eerr, excuse us.」

「E, excuse us for the intrusion.」

After seeing the people who entered, then indeed, they were people who weren't a problem even if the staff let them enter.

「Ah, Kaori! Also even Shizuku! You two really came for me!」

Just as Liliana said, the people who timidly entered the dressing room were Kaori and Shizuku. The two of them were making a really speechless expression toward Liliana who was surrounded by bouquets and many other things, wearing a showy dress, and yet her fingertips were dirtied by ink while diligently drawing pictures.

「Somehow, you really feel like an entertainer here..... Eer, so, Lily. You suddenly sent that kind of mail, 『Emergency! Emergency! Hee~lp-. Especially Kaori!』, just what in the world was with that?」

Just as Kaori said, Liliana sent a reinforcement request to the wives.

It seemed that she especially needed Kaori's reinforcement, the reason for that was,

「Yes, I'm glad that it's Kaori who arrived first. I'm sorry for the hurry, but please use the magic to prolong time. Also, it has to be finished in about twenty minutes.....for now, please expand the time difference to ten times. Ah, Shizuku, sit over there, and please help with the inking.」

「「Eee~~~」」

It seemed that this former princess, at last, found herself lacking time, and she now attempted to solve the problem using magic. Asking to use magic that even interfered with the principle of the world in order to finish a manuscript——it was a special bargain sale of an age of god magic. In a sense, it could be said that this was really fitting for a wife of the demon king.

Kaori and Shizuku couldn't hide their complicated faces after hearing the reason they were called here.

「I understand that you are really in trouble but.....somehow, I don't really feel it at all.」

When Kaori unconsciously muttered that, Liliana lifted her face and showed a crisp expression.

And then,

「Kaori.」

「Eh, wha, what is it, Lily?」

「I am Liliana. A woman who will do anything if it's to protect the deadline.」

「Aa~, yep, that's right.」

Kaori went「Well, isn't it fine」and sent a half-smile at the crisp Liliana while releasing her age of god magic. With this, a ten-fold time difference was created between the inside of this room and the outside.

For a while, the sound of *scratch scratch scratch scratch scratch scratch* and the sound of *splat splat, plop plop* resounded inside the room. Putting aside the content of the manga, both Kaori and Shizuku knew very well that Liliana was working hard, so they seriously endeavored to help her.

After around an hour, some more reinforcements arrived. It was Hajime, Yue, and Shia. Even while they too showed an exasperated face at the reason they were called here, their thoughts toward Liliana was already like「Good grief, just go until as far as you can go」, and so they began to participate in helping her.

「Hey, Lily. When we passed by the stage just now.....」

「Yes? What is it?」

While Yue and Shia were obediently helping, Hajime suddenly started talking.

「Somehow, two people who I recognize really well were wearing black suits and sunglasses while doing otagei with really smooth moves. That wasn't just my hallucination, right?」(TN: Otagei=Fans who were yelling and dancing at pop concerts)

「Aah, about Shinji-san and Yoshiki-san.」

「.....As I thought, it's those two huh.」

「Yes. You don't know Hajime-san? Those two right now are starting up a security firm and working as bodyguards that specialize in protecting celebrities.

This time, they are accepting to guard my concert also because they are acquaintances.」

Liliana was tilting her head while saying incomprehensible things like「Since they became a hot topic due to “the otagei of the black-suited bodyguards is godly”, it seems they are also undertaking the role of the captain of the groupies」.

Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki.

Those two who were the bunch who once were engaging in spiteful harassment toward Hajime, after the death of Hiyama Daisuke and Kondo Reiichi who they often hanged out with, they began to change little by little. They displayed a desperately earnest fight in the legendary decisive battle even when facing the apostles and right now they didn't hold any antagonism even against Hajime.

Such Shinji and Yoshiki, after graduating from high school, they were living aimlessly without doing anything in particular; but just recently, they started up a security firm that specialized in guarding celebrities.

They were wearing uniforms consisting of a black suit and sunglasses, which would make anyone want to give them a straight-man retort that they watched too many movies, but their skill as bodyguards was super first class. Their experience in facing monsters and god's apostles in another world was something that couldn't possibly be surpassed by the likes of suspicious people, so it could be said that this was only natural. They had already piled up many achievements and received deep trust from the world of show business.

And those two, from piling up many days of being the security of idol concerts, saw the groupies who were doing an otagei activity, and it seemed that, for some reason, they got triggered. While those two were standing at both sides of the stage to keep a watchful eye for anyone suspicious, they generously displayed the physical ability their body was blessed with and completely and thoroughly copied the otagei moves.

Since a video of two bodyguards wearing black suits and sunglasses doing otagei with really smooth moves was uploaded on a certain video site, they were treated as gods of the otagei world and won a popularity that wasn't

inferior even against the idols at present from a part of the community.

Rather, their fame was so much that there were even people who came to the concert just to witness the “dancing black-suited bodyguards”.

「Nn, their dance was really amazing.」

Yue said that while lifting her hand midair. She connected spaces using space magic and tried to secretly have a look.

Like that, a hole manifested in midair, and the spectacle on the other side of that hole was——

「Lily-, Lily-! Fuuh, fuuh, fuuh, fuuh!!」

「You guys-, put more of your soul into it! Heat up the concert with your whole body and spirit! Here are the audience seats. But this place is also another stage-」

Shinji was waving around a light stick with really smooth moves while inciting up more shouts of support for Lily. Yoshiki was showing a movement that was completely synchronized with his partner while passionately leading the groupies.

「Ca, captain. The movement is just too intense; my stamina is already.....」

「These dancing bodyguards.....they are monster.」

One person, then one more person, the group of otakus was collapsing before the concert was starting. By the way, the captain referred to Shinji, while Yoshiki was called as the demonic vice-captain.

Shinji, who was single-mindedly dancing while dressed in a smart black suit, shouted at the collapsed otakus.

「Is this fine with you? Ending it here like this.」

「Eh?」

「Are you fine with this, giving up on everything.」

「Cap, tain?」

The group of otakus who was heaving and drenched in sweat, turned their eyes toward Shinji who was smoothly dancing.

「We are, the people who protect the idols. We protect their body, their heart, we are the people who offer them our lives so that they can shine!」

The smoothness of Shinji's dance was gradually increasing. It was truly a master-class otagei that was filled with soul and spirit!

「Stand up you guys! Never Give Up! If someone doesn't give up, then they will surely be able to reach the summit of their dreams! A man taught that to me!」

The gazes of Yue and the others turned toward Hajime. Surely, if they were talking about a man who exerted a strong influence on Shinji and others, then it could only mean Hajime.

Shinji's words that were overflowing with spirit caused one of the collapsed otaku to ask in amazement. Even during that time, Shinji was drawing a beautiful trajectory with the light stick in the air while demonstrating an artistic dance.

「Captain. Just what is your dream? Just what is it, that makes you go this far!?!」

It was a heated question that came from an otaku who was somehow swallowed by the place's atmosphere. Right now, the people who collapsed, and also the people who didn't, everyone was drenched in sweat while directing a serious gaze at Shinji.

「What is this for, you ask? That's obvious.」

Shinji looked at them, and then he looked at his pal, then he declared powerfully!

「It's to-, HAVE A SHOTGUN WEDDING WITH AN IDOL-!!!」

DOLL DOLL DOLL~~, the proclamation of Shinji was echoing inside the concert venue that was in the middle of preparation. It echoed really clearly.

.....It seemed that was the main reason why they founded a security firm that specialized in celebrities. Yoshiki beside Shinji was looking up to the sky while his lips formed a thin line as though he was biting his lip against something.

「Wha, what are you saying!? Something like that is obviously impossible! It

just cannot happen!」

The otaku who asked just now argued. But, such words didn't reach Shinji. The reason was because Shinji had seen it. In a world where he was walking right alongside death, he had witnessed the indomitable spirit of that man!

「No, it's not impossible! Because I know! I know a man who even though he was dropped into the bottom of hell, even though he faced nothing but despair-, he continued to struggle without giving up and created a harem-. A man who day after day, is always having a debauchery party with transcendently beautiful girls-. The man who reached the summit-」

gachari A sound rang. When Yue and the others came back to their senses with a 'hah' and turned their gazes toward the sound, over there, they saw the figure of Hajime drawing out Donner. It seemed he was planning to snipe at Shinji through the connected spaces. In a panic, Shia moved to stop him using Cobra Twist.

「Even we, if we don't give up we should be able to achieve a shotgun wedding with an idol! We should be able to do it! Or rather, about this matter, even if we put aside Nagumo, I just cannot grasp how the hell that Endo can create harem-. Why, why Endo? Why am I no good, huh? Forget harem; there ain't even any sign I'll be able to get a girlfriend y'know. Or rather, there ain't even an encounter. There ain't even a tiny bit of it! I ain't popular on the 'am I actually cursed as retaliation for harassing the demon king in the past?' level already here! GODDAMN IT ALLLLLLLLL-」

Right now, the light stick was leaving behind afterimages while Shinji's otagei was showing a movement that was unthinkable to be at the level of humans. That was, the dance of someone who had stepped their foot into the territory of god! The manifestation of the overflowing yell of the soul!

「Captain.....a person like you is.....」

「Are you trying, to challenge the impossible.....」

「Heh. What an idiot. But, I don't hate it yeah, a passionate idiot like you.」

The otaku group was starting to stand back up! Perhaps they felt sympathy at that yell of the soul that laid everything bare. A fearless grin was emerging on

every single one of their——

Yue closed the space.

「.....Nn. Lily. Is this okay?」

「Ah, yes. Yue-san. Your precise work really helps.」

「Yes, Lily. I also finished here. What's next?」

「As expected from Shizuku. That's an excellent piece of work. Please do this next.」

They resumed their work as though nothing had happened. It seemed they decided that they didn't see anything. Even Hajime, who ate a smooth transition from Cobra Twist to Triangle Choke by Shia, also obediently went back to his seat.

「Come to think of it, Lily. Is there anything particular in your surroundings?」

「Anything, particular?」

Hajime asked while he was rubbing his neck. Liliana sent Hajime a glance while tilting her head without dropping the speed of her pen at all.

Hajime was putting a tone on his manuscript page while nodding「Yeah」.

「Look, recently my existence became known, right? Especially because Kaa-san dropped the bomb.」

「Yes. Well, even if Hajime-san called it dropping the bomb, but I too am calling Sumire-okaasama as “okaasama” normally, so it became known with a natural flow.」

「No, not just about your relationship with me, but also about this and that in private.」

Those words caused Liliana's face to turn red spontaneously.

Just some time ago, when Liliana received an interview on the television, Sumire also participated as a special guest. At that time, Sumire jokingly said「Liliana is the wife of my son you know, so don't make a move on her okay~」.

If that was all, then it would be nothing big because it was something already

known, but Sumire, who got carried away, then dropped the bomb by frankly exposing a part of the married private life between Liliana and her son. That was already a talk that could smash apart the dream of the male fans into pieces.

Furthermore, Sumire also casually said「It's not just Lily-chan you know~」 while giving hints that Liliana's partner actually also had other women, and he had an indulging relationship with those women too.

Naturally, there was no way the media wouldn't bite at the impure private life of Liliana-sensei who was a beautiful manga artist and also an idol who was at the peak of her popularity; though Hajime crushed the commotion before it could create a stir.

Thanks to that, *for some reason*, the topic wasn't being excessively discussed in TV shows and the like, but even so, it didn't mean that there wasn't any effect at all.

One of the effects was the rash actions of a part of the wildly fanatic fans.

「Before this too, you almost got attacked by a reckless fan, right? Who knows what can happen.」

「Perhaps that is so, but currently, there is no sign of that. Besides, I'm not so weak that a civilian can take me by surprise. I have also trained much in "Hauria-style close-quarter hand-to-hand combat art *This is the bunnies' way y'know*" from Shia-san's direct teaching.」

「.....」

Hajime's gaze turned toward Shia. Shia looked aside. When Hajime muttered「It's really fresh how the style name is accompanied with a subtitle there」, Shia's cheeks blushed with a puff. There was no doubt that her currently invisible rabbit ears were surely flopped down from shame.

「Rather than that, everyone. Can you all come listen to my concert today?」

Liliana changed the topic to wave off Hajime's worry and also to imply that she was fine. Hearing that question, Hajime and the others looked at each other's faces.

This was the stage where their important family was standing on. Although they had attended her concert several times before this, it was impossible for them to go home after coming this far. Their answer could only be one. With a unanimous decision, they would cheer on the idol wife and idol fellow wife.

After that, Liliana, who somehow managed to finish the manuscript before the deadline, handed it over to her editor with a really nice smile. The editor gave a thumb up with a posed look before she straddled her beloved motorcycle, Kawasaki's Ninja ZX10-R, and vanished into the city. ——Though she was a woman who finally welcomed her 60th birthday this year.....

Like that, the last concert for today began. Liliana, in her fluttery and frilly dress, lavishly sent winks and *twinkle*-☆ and heated up the venue.

Below that stage, even the two black-suited and sunglasses bodyguards were taking up positions as security while demonstrating smooth otagei like they were possessed as they were greatly heating up the venue by becoming one with the otaku group whose gazes seemed to conceal some kind of determination.

After the concert closed the curtain with enthusiasm, excitement, and fulfillment, surprisingly there was still work for Liliana to attend to, an autograph and handshake session. Even while Hajime and the others were getting exasperated with just how much work she was doing, they still stood a slight distance away and watched over Liliana who was currently mass producing fans with her 'former princess & real idol smile-!'

Fan number 1——a silver-haired young man with mismatched eyes and an atmosphere like a stepping stool reincarnator. (TN: Fumidai tenseisha (stepping stool reincarnator)= a term for characters who are used as fodder to make other characters look good, or characters that tried to carry out wicked schemes only to meet an unfortunate end themselves. Like Kouki or Hiyama, I guess. I just looked up this term in a hurry, so please correct me if my understanding is wrong.)

「Lily-sensei. I'm a great fan! It's a lie that you have a husband, right!？」

「Thank you very much. Can I trouble you to teach me your name?」

「Eh, ah, I'm Satoshi.」

「.....To Satoshi-san, here. Thank you very much for always coming to my concert. Please come again next time, okay?」

「Yo, you remember me.....yes-. I'll absolutely come! I will cheer for you!」

Fan number 2——a girl with her front hair styled like Sadao.

「Sensei. What do you think about love between the same gender?」

「Can you please tell me your name?」

「u.....oko, desu.」

「Aah, you are the person who was always cramming your fan letter with the words “I love you” aren't you? Thank you very much. I'm happy that a cute girl like you is supporting me.」

「a, u」

「Please support me from here on too.」

「yes」

Fan number 3——A male hero wearing a high-class suit that had the embroidery of a super-deformed Lily.

「Lily-sensei. I come here today bringing a marriage registration. Please, place your signature here.」

「That's a splendid embroidery no matter how many times I see it. What's more, it always has a different pattern each time. If I remember correctly, you sewed it yourself, right? I feel embarrassed somehow, thank you very much. So it's fine if I sign here then. Fufu, what a humorous person.」

「Say, Lily-sensei. I cannot read this though.....are these letters from a country somewhere?」

「They are Hairihi Kingdom letters.Is it, no good?」

「-. Don't be absurd. Though I will be happy if next time I can have you write it in Japanese.」

「My. Ufufu. Then, please come again to the next concert, okay?」

「Of course.」

Fans number 4——A pair of onee-samas who were strangely muscular.

「Lily-chaaan! The concert today is also reeaally great!!」

「Dear me, I'm totally moved」

「Fufu, thank you very much for every time. It's because all of you onee-sama are always cheering me on with loud voices(deep voices) that I immediately notice when onee-sama's group is coming.」

「Oh noes, how embarrassing. When we are excited, our voices unconsciously turn ju~st a little bit burly you knooww.」

「Oi, just now, someone said『It's not the level of burly anymore. That voice was completely like the voice of a beast』, who's the guy saying that, aaa!? I'm gonna butche——cough-. I'll give him punishment mon.」

「Now now, Kenji——cough-. Reika-san. If you make that kind of gallant face(berserker face), then everyone will be charmed(traumatized) you know? Rather than that, please come next time too without fail. I also want to meet all the other onee-samas.」

「Ah geez, Lily-chan, you always know what to say to make us happy. Yes, of course, we will come to cheer for you again. After all, we, the members of “Manly Woman Path”, all love Lily-chan so much!」

Even while conversing intimately with the fans, Liliana was still handling the long queue so swiftly it was a mystery.

Seeing her like that, Hajime commented briefly.

「So deep.」

It seemed he commented about the fans.

By the way, all those fans would participate in the event where Liliana appeared every time without fail, so Hajime and the others also knew their faces. And then, Hajime became really uneasy with their speech and conduct, so he investigated their backgrounds from feeling worried.

What he understood from the result was, for example, fan number 1, the young man, his appearance was completely like a stepping stool reincarnator, but actually, he was a splendid monk with priesthood. He disguised(?) himself using a wig and colored contacts and attended Lily's events secretly.

Furthermore, fan number 2, the girl, was actually the young daughter of Japan's preeminent great conglomerate that managed some long-standing department stores. Fan number 3, the male hero, was the oldest son of a lawyer family that had continued for generations, a son of the current chairman of JFOA. Fans number 4 were Japan's version of Chrystal—the leadership of an organization that took control of the underworld pleasure district of the whole Japan. (TN: Japan Federation of Bar Associations. Btw, will I get any problem by brazenly putting the censored names like this? Should I put some censoring?)

Other than them, there was a frog-faced virtuoso doctor that was said to possess god's hand, a detective that often said 'in the name of my grandfather', a super high school student level female high school student, an unfortunate looking young man that called a fat kitty cat「sensei」, a foreigner whispering「The human of this star is——」while holding a canned coffee in one hand.....etc (TN: See the reader comments below if you want to know the reference.)

Certainly, they were really deep. Those fans came from a deep fan stratum. There was no doubt that inside Liliana there was an ability to attract people. And then, she conversed intimately with those men and women of dee~p character, sometimes she ignored them, sometimes she led them on, and she then ended the conversation in a pleasant note and sent them back. Seeing her figure like that reminded Hajime and the others of the princess who once fiercely fought against the nobles and empire diplomats using a smiling face and dignity and words (thorns and indirect implications are optional).

「It's true they have deep personality but.....how should I say it, Lily's personality, it's different from a normal idol, it's.....」

Kaori spoke in hesitation while her cheeks were twitching. Yue and the others supplemented on her statement with an expression that seemed to say that they really understood what she meant.

「.....They are clingy.」

「I can feel obsession from them desuu」

「Perhaps this is saying too much but.....recently, I also feel something like worship from them.」

Exactly as they said, a really small proportion——in places like BBS on the internet and so on, a topic that talked about ‘there are a lot of fellows with screws loose among Lily-sensei's fans’ was spreading.

「Is this really fine?」

Kaori was staring at Liliana worriedly. Following her, Hajime and the others were also staring at the figure of the idol princess who was showing a natural and perfect smile that was overflowing with so much elegance and intimacy.

For Liliana who had been competing against veteran nobles and foreign diplomats since her childhood, it was a trifling matter to pound a degree of information of her fans into her head. If she could exchange words with them for just once, she would never forget their face; and if she conversed with them just for a bit, then even from just that she would see through what kind of gesture and way of talking they would like and deal with them using that.

Against someone like that, there was no way an idol's fans wouldn't have their hearts captured, which continuously increased the production of fanatic fans even now.

Like that, by the time the line was handled, and only a half remained, the worry of Hajime and co became a reality.

「Sorry, but you can stop right there.」

Before Hajime and the others moved, Shinji, who was standing by near Liliana, quietly walked forward and called out to one of the fans to stop moving.

At the same time, Yoshiki moved casually beside Liliana.

「Eh, eh? Wha, what is it?」

「.....I won't say anything bad. Just go home for now. I don't want to create a disturbing topic in this kind of place.」

It was a man who looked like a fan who was told right to the face「Please leave」by a black-suited bodyguard. The fan looked like he was cowering without any composure, but behind his hanging down long hair could a glaring gaze be seen.

The young man argued vehemently with a small stifled voice as to why it was only him that got stopped like this. Shinji's gesture and gaze expressed that he would never let the man pass. The overwhelming pressure from Shinji that was different from a civilian greatly scared the young man while also making him lose a bit of temper.

The bright atmosphere until now completely changed and the fans and staff all around felt a strained tension in the air. While they were staring uneasily between the young man and Shinji, Liliana, who guessed the situation, stood up.

「Shinji-san. I'll be fine, so please let that person through.」

「No, but still. This is also pretty much my work.....」

Liliana called out to Shinji. Shinji frowned with a troubled look while looking over his shoulder.

But, at that time, the atmosphere of the young man who was shrinking away from Shinji suddenly changed entirely. His fingertips that were restlessly moving stopped still.

「Shinji? Right now, you called that man by name? That man who should be a mere security guard?」

That voice was small and sounded a bit stuttering like before. However, a hint of dangerousness that came from a great boiling emotion could be felt from it.

Perhaps the people surrounding them also felt that hint of danger because they were starting to take some distance like a tide drawing back.

In the middle of that, it was only Liliana who kept staring straight at the young man, and she nodded.

「Yes. I called him by name just now. Because he is my friend.」

「You act as you please again in a place where I don't know. What a bad child. You always always, with another man in a place where I don't know. Even though I have been this patient like this. Even though I was thinking of forgiving you about that self-proclaimed husband too.」

「Forgiving? Why do I need your forgiveness? What is that forgiveness for?」

「Shut up-. I won't forgive you anymore-. Unforgivable-」

The young man was talking incoherently; however, seeing Liliana who was staring straight at him without faltering and asked him back, the young man faltered in return, and he shouted.

Like that, he entered his hand into his breast pocket and took out a kitchen knife. Before this, the security had carried out an inspection when the audience began entering, so it was unclear how this young man could bring in something like that. Shinji and Yoshiki grimaced at the hole in the security.

The surrounding people screamed and backed further away. They were forming a circle around Liliana and the others as if there was nobody else other than them.

Hajime looked like he was going to move from the corner of her eyes, but Liliana stopped him with her gaze. In response, Hajime scratched his cheek before he leaned his back on the wall to show that he was watching carefully. That gesture showed his trust toward her, and at the same time, it also expressed Hajime's intent that no matter how the situation ended he would help her in dealing with it. Liliana's cheeks loosened slightly seeing that.

Although, for the young man, it seemed that he saw that smile as something that was mocking him. He shouted「So you are also laughing at me-」while charging forward with the kitchen knife raised high.

Shinji sighed while clenching his fist to subdue the young man. But beside him, a silhouette stepped forth smoothly.

Of course, it was Liliana. Behind him, Yoshiki leaked out a stupid voice「Ah」.

「You-, you forever, belong to meee-」

「First, you should hear what other people say.」

The kitchen knife was swung down. The surrounding people held their breath. They screamed and averted their eyes from the tragedy that would happen in the next moment.

In an instant.

The ups and down of the young man were reversed.

「Ah, eh?」

The young man leaked out a confused voice at himself, who before he knew it, was rolling on the floor with just a light impact.

「I don't know what kind of life you have experienced until now, but I'll feel troubled if you are demanding from me the responsibility for that feeling where things cannot go as you wished it.」

The young man came back to his senses from those words of Liliana. He forcefully stood up once more and rushed while shouting again. He thought that surely just now only slipped.

But, the result was the same.

Just before he could touch Liliana, his field of vision was overturned in a circle, and he then faced up to the sky along with a light impact.

This time he understood. That he was thrown down by Liliana.

The humiliation and reality that his body wouldn't move like how he wanted caused the young man to spew out words that were already hard to comprehend while he charged forward trying to stab with his knife.

But, perhaps it should be said to be as expected. The arm that he thrust out was softly grasped, and right after that, the young man's body revolved around Liliana once like a satellite, contrary to his wish. He was swung around back onto the path he just came from, and then he was pushed away by one of Liliana's hand.

「I'm very good at remembering people's faces. However, I don't remember you.」

The screaming young man charged. Liliana's arm rolled up his arm, and then she twirled beside him as though she was dancing on the stage and flung away the young man with a really natural flow.

「You-」

「In other words, you have never come to an event where I participated even once. Isn't that correct?」

The young man was only thrown without any pain. The young man, whose face was dyed bright red from shame and rage, was rapidly approaching while swinging around his kitchen knife senselessly, but.....the arms of Liliana, who smoothly stepped close to the young man, gripped his collar; at the same time, the young man was thrown down and made to look up to the sky without being able to offer any resistance.

「Most likely, you had watched me through television at home. And then, it caused you to hold an emotion that lead you until you were causing something like this. But, is that really something that you wished for?」

Irimi Nage(Stepping-in Throw)

Kote Gaeshi(Wrist Reversal)

Shihou Nage(Four Directions Throw)

Tenchi Nage(Heaven and Earth Throw)

Kokyuu Nage(Respiration Throw)

Kaiten Nage(Rotation Throw)

Liliana was talking about the situation while continuing to knock down the young man unharmed with her techniques at the center of the empty circle.

「Oi, Shia. Is that the “This is the bunnies' way y'know” you taught Lily?」

「Please don't mention the subtitle..... I didn't really teach her anything. I taught her the basics of hand-to-hand fighting, and also the basics of Aikido more or less, but in the first place, I'm not someone who uses that kind of

flowing Aikido.」

「But, isn't that guy practically being handled by bunnies there?」

「That's why please stop it with the bunnies, Hajime-san. That's something that Lily-san learned by herself. It seems she watched the technique on an internet video and copied from that.」

「What's with that learning aikido through correspondence? Is that girl actually a hidden buggy character, huh?」

「Isn't that right desu. She is already at the level where it might be dangerous for me if I don't use physical reinforcement in our bout. I tasted the terror of Aikido before this. Well, even so, I don't really have the motivation to learn it though. As I thought, for a rabbit it has to be an impactful battle that makes your blood boil and your flesh dance.」

「Just what kind of rabbit are you, huh? Ah, you are a rabbit from another world.」

While Hajime and Shia were conversing about Liliana's hidden talent, a sobbing sound was starting to echo in the venue before anyone knew it.

When they looked toward the sound, the aforementioned young man was crouching while raising a sad weeping voice. As for Liliana, there wasn't even a single crease on her frilly idol dress, and her breathing wasn't disordered at all either.

The audience was still petrified from admiration and shock. Shinji and Yoshiki were taking out Umaobou from somewhere and turned completely into spectators. What happened with being a bodyguard?

Liliana approached the young man who was continuing to do nothing but crying in a posture that looked like a half-prostration. And then, she began to brush the young man's head gently.

「It's painful, isn't it? It's so tiring, so much so that you cannot stand up anymore, isn't it?」

It appeared that while Hajime and Shia were conversing, Liliana had gotten out the circumstance of the young man from him. And it seemed that Hajime

and co had an interest in the young man's circumstance and emotional state as much as they had an interest with the darkened skid mark on the road that they completely failed to hear the story.

Feeling the sensation of the gentle brushing on his head, the young man raised his head in astonishment while crying. Liliana smiled gently at him. And then, she whispered something into his ear.

When the young man received those words, his face that got soppy from tears and snot became even more disheveled, and he broke out crying loudly once more.

Liliana gently brushed the young man's head once more. She looked like a mother consoling her child.

It appeared that she succeeded in persuading the madly rampaging young man. A completely speechless air was flowing around inside the astonished concert venue.

Hajime ran his gaze through the venue before he suddenly started clapping. Of course, it was in order to prompt the praising toward Liliana who despite being attacked, instead admonished the attacker. He did this because he didn't do anything, so in exchange, he would at least give cover fire.

The Hajime's scheme, who took the role of being a hired applauder, splendidly struck home. At first, there was only sparse applause, but gradually it was getting louder before, at last, a grand applause reverberated like thunder along with cheers.

Even though there wasn't an encore or anything, the venue was filled with the repeated calls of「LILY-! LILY-!」.

In the middle of that, Liliana, who seemed to guess Hajime's intention, sent a glance that expressed her thanks to him with her gaze. Right after that,

「.....Oi, did you see?」

「.....Nn. Her lips, for an instant, really it was only just for an instant but——it grinned.」

「It felt like she said『Just as planned』.....don't tell me, this assault situation

was planned?How terrifying.」

「No, Shia. There is no way; surely it's impossible to plan for that young man to be here. Everything from the persuasion and then Hajime's applauding act to the reaction of the fans, it isn't anything like 'just as planned'.」

「Shizuku-chan. As for me, rather than saying it's『just as planned』, I think it's more like『Ku-ku-, seizing the mentality of the masses is no trouble at all』. Remember, even at that time during the decisive battle; she also said something like『Manipulating the masses is just too simple』.」

When Hajime and the others returned their gaze to the scene while feeling a slight shudder in their back, over there, they saw the figure of Liliana responding to the applause of the fans while smiling gently like a holy mother and helping the young man to stand up.

What was truly terrifying was this most excellent queen who properly possessed both purity and impurity.

The beautiful girl that was a famous shoujo mangaka, while also being an idol, had suppressed an assailant right from the front using martial arts, and she didn't stop there. Due to the dramatic development where she reformed the assailant, the fans in this place became delirious with passion and went wild with enthusiasm.

Surely, this unexpected occurrence would become news at night today that would be broadcasted to the whole country. Like that, Liliana's fame would be going to a new height without knowing any place to stop.

After that, just as expected, Liliana's fame was climbing higher with a momentum that pierced the sky. Even people who held no interest in manga and anime read and watched the dramatic and touching news and began to hold an interest in Liliana's existence itself.

And then, Liliana freely used her inherent princess skill and responded to the people's wild enthusiasm in entirety.

And not just that.

The young man who was reformed from Liliana's words talked about how Liliana was a being that was overflowing with kindness, that he was saved by her, that she was exactly the goddess of kindness and salvation who descended to the present world, and with a response to a television's news coverage as the impetus, sometimes there were fan letters or blog posts with content that talked frankly about the sender's troubles reaching Liliana.

Naturally, Liliana wasn't able to personally go to resolve those troubles, and she also didn't have any intention to do such a thing.

But, even though Liliana herself was unable, Liliana knew a lot of acquaintances who were able.

There was the chunibyou monk, or the yandere young daughter of a great conglomerate group, or the lawyer wearing a painful-to-look suit, or the group of onee-samas who were running in full speed through the path of manly women, or a doctor, or a detective, or an apparition, or an alien.....

Of course, she also had a lot of connections that she obtained from her days of working part-time.

And then, Liliana was a former princess. She *excelled in using people* more than anyone else.

After that, it went without saying.

With pure virtue and correct calculations, Liliana used her fans to help her troubled fans.

If you ask, then you will be helped.

When such a story spread, the quality and quantity of people asking for help increased.

When six months passed, the number and content of the requests for help became something that Liliana couldn't possibly deal with by herself. However, if she said「I'm stopping already」here, a riot would occur with certainty. After that, Liliana devised a plan while feeling that she became unable to pull out.

That plan was,

——Liliana Aid Network

In a manner of speaking, such a thing was the starting up of a “jack-of-all-trades”.

The difference with the normal jack-of-all-trades was how it didn't have any employees who would bind the contract or act on the scene other than employees that dealt with the paperwork.

Liliana categorized the gathered troubles on the dedicated site, aggregate them, and scrutinize their degree of priority and the content before making her judgment. And then, she would choose from among the registered members of her fan club the person capable of resolving that problem.

There wouldn't be any reward. If there was a reward, then it would be the direct call from Liliana that asked “please” and preferential right for her event. And then, the words of “thank you” that they received directly from Liliana at the dawn of when the trouble was resolved.

But, this system was surprisingly functional.

The Liliana fan club members with deep personalities, and who were ridiculed by a part of the community as bunches with dozens of screws loose in their heads, would move with the readiness to work as a slave for the sake of a “please” and “thank you” from Liliana.

That was already a kind of great wave. The great wave that was sometimes generated at the turning point of the era, which could also be called as the flow of the world.

The saved people became fan club members, and then those members would then save other people, and in turn, those people who were saved would then become fellow fan club members.

That cycle continued without end, and before long, it spread outside of Japan and reached places overseas. “Liliana Aid Network” became a foundation before she knew it and even began to reach out its hand toward world scale relief activity.

One time it stopped a regional dispute; one time it established infrastructure in a developing country; granted education and goods to unfortunate children; planted greenery on a completely withered land.....

And then when she realized.....

「「「「Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-!」」」」

「「「「Holy Mother of Kindness! Holy Mother of Kindness! Holy Mother of Kindness!」」」」

Hairihi Volunteer Association became Hairihi Religion.

「How did it turn out like this.....」

In the event that commemorated the production of her manga's live-action movie, Liliana, who was standing on the stage in order to sing the theme song, was muttering with twitching cheeks.

Part 2

☆Living God Lily

「Uu, really, just how did it turn out like this.....」

Liliana, who was doing the final check of the paperwork while doing a ten-second charge inside the office in preparation for her conference with the secretary general, returned to reality from the long reminiscence that she did before she knew it. It was actually really like Liliana to simultaneously verify her paperwork and eat even while reminiscing. (TN: Ten-second charge seems to be the slogan of a jelly drink in Japan.)

Liliana was unconsciously letting out her complaint while thinking that recently she wasn't able to meet Hajime and the others again. But suddenly, a reply came back in response to her complaint.

「Obviously that's because you are a princess.」

「Howah!?!」

There should be no one other than her in this office. Naturally, Liliana, who let her guard down because there should be strict security in this place, raised a strange voice.

When she turned her gaze, she saw a rift in space and the figure of Hajime who came out from there.

「Hajime-san! Geez, please don't startle me.」

「That can't be helped. Even though I'm your family, in this place with a really strict security where the secretary general of the UN is also in attendance, how I can say something like 'I came because I just wanted to talk a bit though, I'm also family so please let me in'. There is a limit even in being unable to read the atmosphere.」

「.....Hajime-san. Before I realized it, you have become someone who is trying to read the atmosphere. You have really become an adult. Just as I thought, a

person will mellow when he has as many as seven children.」

And then, 'I'm always getting a late start.....' saying that, Liliana's shoulders dropped in dejection.

「Just what are you saying? Even though you cannot even go home enough due to being so busy with work as the founder of a new religion.」

「Uguu. It's harsh getting told that.」

Liliana pressed on her chest as though she was getting stabbed, but she immediately pulled herself together and made a fearless smile.

「But that too will be over soon. If I can have this association recognized as an official volunteer organization from this conference, I too will be able to beg to be off from all duty. In the content of the agreement with the UN, there are requirements to establish an inspection division that is configured with only UN personnel as a monitoring mechanism, and also a decision-making body that has to accept at least one person from every country where they will vote to make a decision. This association will stop being an organization where anything is decided by the will of just me alone. It will be a democracy you know Hajime-san, democracy! Like that, my authority will be shaved, and I will fade out naturally from here!」

「.....Is that kind of plan going to be okay?」

「It's fine, there is no problem.Fufu, if the conference can go well this time, then I will retire. And then, I too will make a child with Hajime-san and devote myself to parenting!」

「Somehow, it feels like you are raising a flag there.」

Hajime's was at a loss of words seeing the holy woman going 'ehehe' in a trip of delusion about her calm and happy future.

「Oops, come to think of it, Hajime-san, you wanted to talk? You coming expressly at this timing, does that mean there is something important?」

Liliana noticed Hajime's expression and went 'hah' and returned to her senses. She tilted her head and threw a question at Hajime to varnish over her actions just now.

Still, with a complicated expression on his face, Hajime said「Aah, there is nothing really important」while shrugging.

「Well, how should I say it.....what I want to say is, I also quite like Lily who is working busily.」

「.....That's a surprise attack. What's more, I feel really complicated whether I should be happy or not.」

Even while she was saying that Liliana's cheeks were blushing red.

「Wh, why so suddenly? Saying that kind of thing in this kind of timing, isn't that exactly something like a flag?」

「I guess. But, I want to say it ahead of time just in case. Remember, quite some time has passed already since your workaholic behavior was identified, but in the end, you are undertaking a completely staggering job like this. You aren't addicted to work anymore, but in the end, Liliana S. B. Hairihi is unable to change her way of life, isn't that how it is?」

「That's.....」

She retired from being a princess and wished to grasp the happiness of a normal girl——like that, the kingdom's people saw her off, and she came to this world. Even though it should be like that, right now Liliana was going to tackle a conference with the top of the world where her fate was at stake.

Even though she tried doing part-time work, even though she tried to become a shut-in NEET, even though she tried to become a manga artist, even though she tried to become an idol, in the end, perhaps the path that the human called Liliana was walking would always end up converging onto a path where she took the responsibility of many people and stood in the lead to guide them.

It was because she was a princess. It was because she couldn't stop being a princess.

Was it just as expected, that she was unable to live the way she aspired for? In the end, was a person like her an existence who would put her beloved as secondary?

Liliana's shoulders dropped, and she answered her own question.

Hajime, who was watching Liliana with a wry smile, slowly approached her side. And then, he gently pinched Liliana's cheek, who was showing a depressed expression.

「I came here not to make you wear that kind of face. Didn't I say it? I also like a Lily who is shutting herself inside the office like this while getting chased by work.」

「Hajime-san.....」

「Isn't it just fine even if your aspiration stays as an aspiration? Isn't it just fine even if you put your husband as secondary? It is also not bad in its own way even if there is at least one wife treating me roughly. You see, it's Liliana's individuality that the other wives don't have.」

「I don't want that kind of individuality at all!!」

Despite saying that Liliana was fawning on Hajime by rubbing her cheek on Hajime's cheek.

「Well, that's how it is. Just go without getting too worked up. Because no matter where Lily is going, I'll properly run after you everywhere.」

「Fufu, thank you very much Hajime-san. But, as I thought, I will do my best here. Because I am Liliana. A woman who won't let my aspiration stay as just an aspiration. Or rather, I want a child.」

「That's what you're stressing on?」

They smiled at each other, and their lips overlapped naturally.

But, at that time, a reserved knocking sound that sounded like it was being considerate to the two's tryst was resounding.

「Looks like it's time already.」

「Ou, go do your best, your holiness.」

「Geez, please stop saying, your holiness. I am the chairman.」

After joking, they smiled once more at each other and Liliana left the room behind. She didn't look back at Hajime who was left behind and straightened her back with dignity.

And as for the results of the conference.

Before the mass media, the UN secretary general declared with blushing cheeks.

「She is truly-, the goddess who descended into this world! She is a living god! Hairihi religion will bring about salvation to the world!」

The populace gathering outside the conference building while watching the broadcast in real time, and the people watching television, all raised cheers simultaneously.

「How did it turn out like this!?!」

The scream Liliana raised was lost amongst the cheers that were raised, even by the press people, and vanished in vain.

Before, in another world, an existence that introduced himself as a god talked about his ambition that he would also become a god on Earth. He proclaimed that he would become the god in the new world for sure.

But, the result was that the mad god was defeated by the demon king.

And right now, in place of the mad god, a wife of the demon king——

Became the god (?) of the new world.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

By the middle, I didn't know what I was writing anymore.....

Thank you very much for the many requests.

I took notes of them, so I'm thinking that I want to try writing them someday.

For now, I'm thinking that I want to write about the other wives a bit in the next chapter.

Something like Tio and Hajime getting spirited away, or Shia going bunnies in

the world of martial arts, or Yue and Hajime tackling an underground world.....
or Remia.....she is difficult~

After that, I'm thinking that I also want to try writing a bit of a long extra story.

The next posting is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 229

Arifureta After II Spirited Away

AN: I'm sorry it's late.

This is Tio's arc.

Part 1

「Come to think of it, Goshujin-sama. I saw something strange midway coming back here.」

Tio was throwing those words around from the garden with a tranquil rural landscape.

Hajime was relaxing by lying down on the edge of the house's eaves like a sleeping Buddha statue while feeling the gentle blowing breeze, the chirping of small insects, and then, the breathing of a beautiful woman wrapped in a bamboo mat while being hung from the tree in the garden. He then directed his consciousness, along with a suspicious gaze, to the woman.

「Did you perhaps see a mirror?」

「Kufuu!? What an excellent comeback. It's tough to be loved so much by Goshujin-sama.....」

Tio was being hung up like a criminal while her cheeks were reddening, and her body was meandering and wriggling.

「Haah. It's fine even if you normally reflect on yourself sometimes you know? Even though we finally came to visit the house of Jii-chan and Baa-chan, you suddenly made an introduction that was lacking in common sense. And then you created an urban legend at the shopping district.....」

「Goshujin-sama, thou said that but exactly because they art family that it's only natural to convey the truth without any falsehood in it, art not that correct? I don't wish to speak deceiving words toward those two.」

「It's only your words that are wonderful. But, don't you forget that it was that unvarnished truth that almost sent Jii-chan and Baa-chan to heaven.」

Just as Hajime said, Tio had finished her meeting with Hajime's grandparents. Of course, it was done together with Yue and the others.

Currently, the Nagumo family was in the middle of a homecoming at the home of Shuu's father.

Because Shuu was a son who was born late, his parents were already at a really late age. They were at the age that would enter ninety soon. Therefore, it was hard for them to rush and personally visit Hajime who had returned from the disappearance incident like the parents of Sumire.

In the end, with the persuasion of Shuu and Sumire, and also Hajime himself, Hajime's grandparents were waiting for this day where their son's family would go to their home.

The two of them were really happy that their cute grandson came to meet them safely without harm.

Although the moment they saw the many beautiful girls and women behind that grandson and they all introduced themselves as「I'm his wife」, their teary smiling faces petrified completely. Their faces stiffened so much it felt like you could hear a *crack* sound.

What's more, when Myuu politely gave her greeting before energetically explaining her position as「I'm papa's daughter!」, both of them harmoniously staggered.

After all, no matter how they looked, Myuu's appearance was around five years old. In other words, their grandson impregnated the daughter of other people when he entered middle school, or perhaps it was even when he was still in elementary school.....

The psychological impact on Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan was unfathomable!

But there, an even more pursuing blow came from Myuu! The princess of the Nagumo family was merciless even against the elderly!

「But, Myuu is also a bride! Myuu is planning to push down papa someday and make a *fait accompli* nano!」

‘noo~noo~noo~’ The end of Myuu's sentence echoed.

Obaa-chan collapsed. Ojii-chan supported Obaa-chan with shockingly agile movement. However, his severely trembling legs and waist didn't come just

from his old age but a display of the deep damage that was dealt to him!

Incidentally, an incomprehensible voice「Ubooa」leaked out from Hajime's mouth. Surely, he was feeling joy(shudder) from his daughter's growth. He thought「This girl; she is closing the paths of escape!」.

It was at that timing, 「If I don't assert mine assistance here, then it will be mine shame as a dragon race!」Tio, for some reason, was showing her determination.

Toward Obaa-chan, who somehow managed to hold on to her consciousness, and Ojii-chan, who was desperately supporting such Obaa-chan, Tio launched words of self-introduction「I'm Goshujin-sama's sex(love) slave」that were lacking in common sense with a self-triumphant expression.

Obaa-chan's eyes turned white. Ojii-chan's soul was slipping out from his mouth.Even so, Ojii-chan's hands that were supporting Obaa-chan didn't let go.

Hajime, who had snapped by this point, first wrapped Tio in a bamboo mat, and then he tied her on a missile and launched her flying to the other side of the mountain.

The draconic woman that was flying in a beautiful arc with a red flare trailing behind was surely witnessed by a lot of the local people while they were listening to a joyful shout of「I'LLLL, BEEE, BAA~~~~CKK!」

Incidentally, punishments of butt spanking and seiza + weight on lap were waiting for Myuu and the criminal instigator Remia respectively. Of course, for Remia there an was additional punishment of leg poking after she reached the limit.

Both of them seemed to be reflecting properly on their fault as far as it goes. On the surface.

Although, when Remia's numb legs got poked repeatedly, she screamed things like「Dearr, please forgive me alreadyyy. Aaahn」a little seductively, so Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan who somehow managed to revive then crumbled down once more.

In addition,「We heard that Hajime boy has returned?」the old people of the

neighborhood also came bringing some gifts and also to make their greeting but.....

They witnessed it. The figures of a foreign beauty on all fours while raising a coquettish voice (?), and “Hajime boy” torturing that woman.

Needless to say, they wordlessly turned on their heels. It was curious how the neighbors who knew Hajime from the past would deal with Hajime from here on.

After that, the Nagumo family somehow explained the existence of Yue and the others, and for the time being, they acquired the understanding..... abandonment of thinking, or possibly escapism, from Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan.

In the middle of the conversation, there was a phone call from Kaori’s father and the return of Tio, who was still wrapped in the bamboo mat like a caterpillar, while she was dragging the missile behind her. Ojii-chan, who witnessed that from the darkness, had his soul slip out from his body, but he survived without a problem thanks to Yue’s soul magic.

The total change of their grandson and the behavior of the wives that were lacking in common sense caused the cheeks of Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan to keep twitching from start to end. But even then, by the time they had dinner, the two of them became able to calmly converse, mostly.

Like that, through the flow of the conversation, the two grandparents became curious about how their grandson encountered the girls who later would become his wives. Yue, Shia, and Myuu then talked passionately to the two of them how much they were saved.

It was a story that struck them dumb, but even so, they understood that their cute grandson had helped others, and as a result, those people who were helped wanted to be together with him. Then he brought those people like this to meet the two of them. Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan smiled happily for real this time.

Of course, after they heard the story that far, they became curious about the last person, about the beginning of love with Tio. Obaa-chan asked that with a gentle expression.

Hajime was flustered. Shia got a faraway look. And then, Yue shrugged her shoulders with a wry smile. Hajime, who was opening his mouth to change the topic, was obstructed by Sumire with a whip of an udon noodle.

Using that opening, Tio spoke with a proud expression, as though to say that there was nothing to be ashamed of at all.

「Truly. How wonderful for thee to asketh, Obaba-dono. When I first met Goshujin-sama was the moment when mine life and sense of value changed for good. After all, that was the first time for me to be beaten up so viciously like that!」

「Eh.....」

「Yes, yes. I can remember it so clearly even now. That blazing gaze which was sparkling so brutally. The impact that resounded until mine deepest core. I was vomiting blood and raised a pitiful cry; however, Goshujin-sama only continued on hitting and kicking me violently without a shred of mercy even then!」

The hopeless dragon hugged herself and talked about her important memory while wriggling her body around with a bright red face.

Ojii-chan got a coughing fit, and udon spurted out from his nose. Chopsticks fell from Obaa-chan's hand and fell with a clang.

Hajime repelled the approaching udon whip with finger bullets using crunchy bits of tempura and returned the udon to the bowl while he opened his mouth to stop Tio. But there, fried tofu from the father launched a direct attack!

The large fried tofu clung onto Hajime's mouth like a mask. Like a baddie in a drama trying to make the victim faint using a handkerchief that was soaked in chloroform, the father pinioned his son from behind while blocking his mouth!

Hajime, who had a vein twitching on his forehead, raised a protesting voice「Mogah」and tried to tear Shuu off of himself, but there the mother joined in. She took out from who knew where something that looked like a chakram. It was an artifact named “Anywhere Clothes Drying Frame Without Care of the Place☆”. It produced a string for hanging clothes on it to let them dry, where the string would be fixed in space. The mother then restrained her son along with her husband!

Although it was only temporary, Hajime, who got restrained by a string for hanging clothes that could seal even a god's apostle, became unable to stop his wife's outrage!

「And then there was that, the attack that bestowed to me a deep emotion that I wouldst be unforgettable for mine whole life.....」

Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan looked at each other's face. They harmoniously put down their chopsticks and watched Tio with a smile. That expression was the expression of someone who had prepared themselves for the worst before the end of the world.....

「Yes, Goshujin-sama, toward the buttocks of I who was wounded all over mine body by that point, stabbed a hard and thick metallic stake into there!」

「「Ubooa」」

Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan were invited to heaven——Yue's soul magic! It brought back Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan who were rising to heaven with content smiles! As expected from the legal wife. It was a really fine play.

Of course, Hajime snapped. Just how many times did his Jii-chan and Baa-chan need to get invited to heaven before they were satisfied?

Tio's bed was decided at that time. It would be in the garden's tree. She wasn't allowed to sit or lean. But there was no problem. She would only become a bagworm just as usual.

By the way, the current time was after a night had already passed. It was currently just before noon, and the other family members were going out to the town. It was to mitigate the urban legend created by Tio while grabbing lunch in the restaurant that was recommended by the grandparents.

Yue's soul magic had been playing a very active role. Naturally, Tio was house-sitting so that there wouldn't be any more pandemonium. Just in case, Hajime, who made the origin of the problem, was also house-sitting doubled with monitoring Tio so that she wouldn't crawl down and chase after them.

About this time, Yue was surely piling up communication with the grandparents and deepening their mutual understanding while healing their mind. Incidentally, there was also no doubt that she was restoring the honor of

her husband and fellow wives. As expected from the legal wife. As expected of the legal wife-.

「And, soon it will be noon, how do you feel after getting hung up for the whole night?」

「The love of Goshujin-sama who even though art saying this or that while acting like that, yet watching over me from a position where I can see. My underwear art crying that it wouldst be the limit soon.」

「.....No good huh. Recently you are soundly sleeping even when you are hung up.....perhaps, I should consult with Adol-san for once.」

With a whisper, Hajime hung his head down dejectedly toward the pervert who recently was increasingly losing her restraint while he called to mind the grandfather of that pervert. Even among Hajime's acquaintances that were filled with a lot of unrestrained people, he was a respectable "adult" who was few in number.

Without showing any sign of noticing that whisper of Hajime, Tio started the course correction of the talk topic that had diverted by a lot.

「Rather than that, I was talking about that strange thing just now, Goshujin-sama.」

「Hm? I think that there is nothing stranger than you in this world though.....and? What was it that you saw?」

The casual abuse caused the toes of Tio's dangling feet to go really taut. A strange voice「Nfu」also leaked out from her mouth.

「Ri, right. When I was launched away by Goshujin-sama and impacted the mountainside, the first thing I did was to roll down the slope in order to get out of the woodland path.」

「That's a really daring idea. As expected from the black dragon whose selling point is her toughness.」

By the way, if at that time there was someone who witnessed that figure which was earnestly spinning in full speed like a somersault, or spinning top sometimes, even while rolling down the slope, surely that witness would

yell「Ah, a real Rollo Girl!」without a doubt. While it was a ghastly way of falling, it was also a fall that vaguely gave off an artistic impression.

「And then. Midway I made an error in the balancing, and mine face struck a thick tree, and I stopped in place.」

「Normally, anyone would die from that.」

「What, something like that? The attacks from Goshujin-sama art far more luscious. There art no need to worry.」

「Who is worrying huh. Don't speak like I'm feeling jealous to a tree.」

Ignoring Hajime's straight-man act, Tio continued to talk while throwing her gaze to empty air in remembrance. The wind was blowing and the bagworm Tio was swaying back and forth.

「Now then, I was about to roll down once more, but at that time, I suddenly felt a pressure. It was as though mine body was wrapped wholly with silk floss while getting pulled in. It felt like that.」

「? You felt it? You didn't see anything?」

「No, it was after that. I felt curious and went a bit toward the direction where I was pulled in. It was hidden by the slope and the trees really well, but there was a small cave there. That cave, it wouldst not be found easily unless they art diving down the slope like me.」

「Hee. Well, after all, around this area is a countryside that still has a lot of nature. It's not strange even if there is a lot of those kind of places.....but it doesn't stop there, right?」

Tio nodded「Truly」.

From the other side of the stone wall, suddenly a child's face jumped out. It must be a child from the neighborhood. Perhaps he heard their conversation and peeked in curiously. Naturally, what he saw was a beautiful woman hung up in a tree and a man that was gazing at the woman while lying down on the veranda.

The child silently withdrew his face. He had seen something that he shouldn't have seen. It was the most mysterious experience of his childhood.

「I guessed that it was a mist. Something like a white mist was coming out slowly from the cave; however, it then drew back as though the cave was breathing. Perhaps it was caused by the flow of wind, but even so, it was also strange how a mist was occurring locally like that. Added with the strange pressure, it is a mysterious story, isn't it?」

「Certainly. I have never heard of any phenomenon like that. A white mist coming out from a cave.....it's curious.」

「Right?」

「Then, in the end, you didn't ascertain the true shape of that?」

Tio answered Hajime's question with a triumphant face.

「Right after I was going to ascertain it, my foot slipped and I rolled down!」

「Aa, hm, I see.」

It seemed after that she became a Roong Girl once more.

Tio's eyes were shining in expectation.

「How is it, Goshujin-sama? Everyone won't be coming back for a while. Won't thee, go on an adventure for a bit with me?」

「Adventure huh.....」

Her smile wasn't from a perverted ecstasy as per usual. Tio was sending him a bright smile that was obviously from a pure feeling of wanting to go on a mysterious little trip with Hajime. Hajime was looking at such Tio while showing a thinking posture for a bit.

「I guess. Being like a Buddha statue like this is also boring. I'm also tired of looking at you hung up like that. Let's go amuse ourselves on a small adventure for a bit.」

「Ri, right!E, even though Goshujin-sama was the one hanging me.....to get tired looking.....this damned Goshujin-sama-. Haa-haa」

Tio was whispering something while breathing roughly, but Hajime normally ignored her. And then, he moved from his Buddha statue posture using one arm to spin four times in a display of a pointless technique that was pointlessly

refined while landing on the garden. While he was in midair before the landing, Hajime had properly worn his shoes and even put on his jacket.

Hajime approached Tio and untied the rope binding her body. He then locked the door of the house and turned around.

There Tio's voice called at him.

「Goshujin-sama. Can thou bring mine footwear for me?」

Hajime looked back and saw Tio's feet. Her white and smooth bare feet were fidgeting around. Come to think of it, she was bounded inside the room and then hung up from there——Hajime who recalled that grinned while replying.

「You need it?」

「!?」

Tio-san was twitching in shudders.

Even though they were going on an adventure in the middle of the mountain after this, she was asked「Something like shoes is too good for the likes of you, do you need it?」. It was a critical hit for the perverted dragon.

.....Although, surely the true critical hit was how even after saying something like that, Hajime brought her shoes before personally putting them on her feet.

Hajime reverently slipped on her shoes, as though he was treating a fragile thing——Tio who was treated like that retracted her usual perverted smile and went bashful like a really normal girl.

Part 2

「Above here?」

「Right. Look over there. There are the tracks where I was slipping down correct? There art no mistake.」

As Hajime glanced at the spot where Tio was pointing at, he saw a track where there was a straight concave. It was as though something landed there face first before sliding down without getting peeled off.

Hajime returned his gaze as though there was nothing there. Ahead he saw trees and grass growing densely along with a really steep slope expanding in his view. Depending on the place, there was a slope that wouldn't be an exaggeration to be called a cliff.

「There won't be anyone looking in this kind of place. Tio, lead the way.」

「Acknowledged. Let's go right away Goshujin-sama. I wouldst determine with these dragon eyes of mine, whether thy hath grown dull or not.」

「Bring it on. You yourself, don't show anything unsightly like slipping and then falling down.」

They made frivolous talk. Tio grinned fearlessly and then instantly waved the edge of her clothes and dashed away suddenly.

ton- With a really light sound, in the next moment she was far above.

A beat later, Hajime also jumped out.

to-to-to-to- Leaving only those light sounds, the two of them were jumping up like acrobats using tree roots, slightly sticking out rocks, or from branch to branch.

Tio sent a glance at Hajime who was following her. She leaked out a joyful chuckle「Fufuh」and increased her speed further. Hajime made a bit troubled smile at that and also followed her by increasing his speed.

Seen from the side, they only looked like shadows climbing up the mountain with fierce speed. If by any chance there was a witness here, then undoubtedly there would be a new urban legend created that Tengu were living on this mountain.

Turning into modern era Tengu, the two of them sometimes shifted their course a bit, sometimes they meaninglessly climbed a tree, or sprinted down a slope playfully. After a while,

「Muu? This is strange.」

「What is?」

Tio landed from a big jump and came to a stop before she tilted her head.

When Hajime copied her by tilting his head, Tio stayed silent while pulling on Hajime to get closer. Their standing position changed by just a bit from doing that.

Hajime looked suspicious. But he saw the place Tio was pointing at and reflexively leaked out his voice「Oo」.

「This is, it's like a natural camouflage.....no if I have to say which, then perhaps this is more like an art of trickery?」

「Isn't it splendid? Just by changing our standing position a bit, there art nothing that could be seen except a slope. It is exactly because we art in this angle and position that we art able to notice this cave.」

Just as Tio said, before when Hajime was right beside Tio, he was attentively observing the surrounding looking for a cave, but he didn't notice the cave over there at all until Tio led him to the spot he was currently standing on.

The cause of that really should be called an art of trickery. If they weren't standing on a particular spot, the surrounding landscape and the miraculous bulge of the slope would cause the cave to be unseen.

Hajime was feeling admiration while asking Tio once more.

「And, what is strange about it?」

「No, Goshujin-sama. In the first place, what was the reason that I who was rolling down the slope noticed this place?」

「Aah. A strange pressure and absorbing force, was it?I don't really feel anything here. There also doesn't seem to be any mist.」

「Correct. I too don't feel anything right now. Let's see, was it perhaps mine mistake.....」

Tio cocked her neck while groaning 'uumu'. Hajime approached the cave and peeked inside. It seemed that the cave continued quite deeply.

Hajime turned around after confirming that.

「There is no way we can dismiss the senses of the dragon race as a misunderstanding that easily. Besides, we came this far for an adventure. Then we cannot just go home without even stepping in or checking it, right?」

Those words of Hajime's that were inviting an adventure were responded to by Tio「Indeed」with a nod while her shoulders shook happily.

「Even though this art a world without great labyrinths or monsters, for some reason, I am getting thrilled.」

「What is called an adventure is not looking for danger. It's looking for the unknown. In that meaning, the conquest of a great labyrinth cannot be said to be as an adventure then. In a sense, this might be our first adventure you know?」

「The first adventure, with Goshujin-sama and me? Fufuh, perhaps Yue and the others would be jealous of this.」

Tio raised a delighted chuckle for sure this time. Hajime also joined her with a cheerful grin.

「Then let's go. Dragon race of another world.」

「Right, let's go. Godslaying demon king-dono.」

Both of them thrust their bodies into the cave jokingly and also in high spirits.

.....

.....

「.....Goshujin-sama. Mine butt got stuck completely. Please pulled me from inside.」

「Slo, sloppy.」

Even though they had put up a front and stepped inside, now the voluptuous butt of the dragon-san was splendidly getting stuck.

Tio faced back and twisted in her body as though she was going down a ladder, but her plump butt only changed its shape *mugyuuuu* and couldn't get in.

Feeling that it couldn't be helped, Hajime was sighing while he grasped Tio's legs and pulled in with a jerk. The butt was going *mugyuuuu*-. It still couldn't enter.

「Hrrgh-」

「Aah. My butt, if it's treated that violently-」

A scream that sounded a bit happy echoed. Hajime put even more strength into it. The charming butt shook *furu furu* as though in resistance. It still hadn't shown any sign of getting in.

Hajime took a breather「fuu」, and then he proposed to Tio who was kicking around her legs as though to say「Come ooon haul it in」.

「.....Tio. It doesn't look like it will go in at all. There is no other way, so how about I tear off your lower body so that I can pull in your upper body?」

「Suddenly I'll turn splat!? There art no way I'll agree! Such a thing art beyond the limit even for I who love pain!」

Tio couldn't hide her shudder from Hajime who made a brutal suggestion like a demon king. Hajime said「It's a joke」while putting his hand on Tio's thigh.

「Anyway, it doesn't look like you can enter like this, so.....I'll take it off, okay?」

「What? How.....aa, by storing it inside the Treasure Warehouse. Yosh, then cometh, bring it on!」

Today, Tio's fashion was a pants-look. And so, if her pants were transferred away into the "Treasure Warehouse II", then space would be liberated.

The "Treasure Warehouse II" fitted on Hajime's finger shined crimson for an

instant. By doing that, in the next moment, Tio was reduced into a female pervert with her panties fully exposed.

「I, it's really breezy down there.....」

Tio kicked her legs up and down looking a bit embarrassed. Hajime held the voluptuous thighs in front of him using his arms and pulled in once more.

However, Tio's large butt was unexpectedly obstinate.

「Ada-, adadada-. Go, Goshujin-sama! My butt's skin art getting bruised!」

「Good grief, it's a really stubborn butt.」

Hajime cursed. Because he was pulling Tio forcefully, her panties dug into her crotch, and now it looked like she was wearing T-back panties. Hajime glared at the shaking butt.

And then, seeing no other choice, he also transferred the panties into the Treasure Warehouse.

「.....Goshujin-sama. By any chance, I hath also lost my last fortress now?」

「It can't be helped. It's in the way.」

From the entrance of the cave, there was the lower body of a woman being suspended without even a shred of cloth. If the people of the dragon race village who idolized her like a princess saw her like this, surely they would have out-of-body experiences without a doubt.

Hajime took something out from his "Treasure Warehouse II" that looked like a thin stick and inserted it between Tio's shivering butt, which was looking pitiful somehow, and the rock where it got stuck.

「Muu? Something cold art on mine butt.....」

「I'm pouring oil for lubricating a machine. With this, it will be smoother to pull you out.」

This was the same idea as using soap to take off a ring that couldn't come off. The overflowing oil trickled from the gap between the butt and rock and flowed down Tio's thighs. Each time Tio twitched and shivered she leaked out trembling voices.

After pouring in a lot of oil, Hajime readied himself and pulled on Tio's legs.

「Oo!? It's slipping in! It's working, Goshujin-sama!」

「Yosh, just a bit more. Do your best, butt-naked dragon!」

「Haua!? Not forgetting to insult me even at this kind of time.....this damn beloved Goshujin-sama!」

The two was strangely getting roused up, for some reason.

Right after that, *nupon*- a strange sound rang, and Tio's bombastic butt slipped out from between the rock.

And then,

「.....Goshujin-sama. It's a bit hard to say this but」

「Don't finish it. I know already.」

Tio-san, also had a bombastic breast.

Her shirt was rolled up, and her back was fully exposed; however, this time it was her gigantic twin hills that got stuck. For the time being, Hajime embraced Tio from behind to try pulling her in but.....

「It's happiness to be embraced tightly by Goshujin-sama, but mi, mine breast feel like they wouldst get torn off.....」

「Haa. Let's just go with the same method.」

「Please be gentle.」

Like that, Tio——became stark naked.

She limply sat on the floor of the cave with her cheeks blushing faintly. Her butt and breast were glistening because of the oil.

「At the start of the adventure, the proud princess of the dragon race got stripped naked and became all slimy.....Goshujin-sama, honestly speaking, what doth thy think?」

「I'm thinking it's pitiful.」

Tio didn't look happy like usual; she was wafting off a sorrowful aura and agreed「That's right」with a faint smile.

Hajime wordlessly handed her a towel.

Tio wiped her body using that while taking out the traditional garment of the dragon race——the kimono that was a blending of Japanese and Western styles from her own “Treasure Warehouse” and quickly put it on.

「.....Say, Goshujin-sama. Thinking really really carefully, I was stuck because of the rock correct?」

「Hm? Yeah.」

「Then, wouldst not it be better to use transmutation?」

「.....」

Hajime halted. Tio also halted. Inside the gloomy cave, Hajime and Tio looked at each other.

「Now, Tio. The unknown is waiting ahead from here! Our adventure will begin from here-」

「O, ou! That’s right! It’s from here on!」

It seemed that for now, they would get over it with mood.

Both of them started walking deeper into the cave with a strange tension.

After walking for a while, the inside of the cave was unexpectedly starting to show aspects of a cavern. The deeper they went, the wider the cave turned.

「Somehow, this is nostalgic.」

「Might it be about Orcus?」

Hajime muttered in a small voice. Tio guessed what he was thinking and asked.

「Yeah. There is no light of green light stones here, but as expected, speaking about a cave for me just means Orcus.」

「I can imagine that. It was the starting place for the current Goshujin-sama, and then——it was also a place of a precious encounter.」

Tio sympathized with Hajime with her voice vaguely containing gentleness. Hajime walked while illuminating the surrounding with light while glancing at

Tio beside him.

「That encounter tied Goshujin-sama, spun a bond with Shia, and connected toward me. Most likely, if there art just one of those lacking, then I wouldst not be here like this.」

「Don't make a solemn talk like that so suddenly. It's rare for you to talk about what-if. That's a meaningless supposition, right?」

「That's right. Indeed, it's meaningless. But, I feel happy with our time right now that art like a miracle, so much so that I'm looking back like that. Being solemn sometimes art also not bad.」

Tio made a really hard to describe smile, but even so, there wasn't any shadow in it by any means. Even though it was just for a moment, Hajime's eyes were definitely stolen by that smile of Tio's.

「Oh? What's this, Goshujin-sama? Art thou falling in love with me all over again? By any chance, the possibility of surpassing Yue art.....」

「It's completely none.」

Hajime's immediate answer dealt a critical hit. A sweet voice leaked out from the hopeless dragon-san. 「If only she kept smiling like just now, no matter from where you look she is a wonderful princess of the dragon race, yet」Hajime was staring at Tio with disappointment filling his eyes.

「Or rather, you, you are aiming to surpass Yue?」

「That art really a late question. There art not a single woman that art not aiming for that. Of course, it wouldst not be something that art done bloodthirstily, but a chase to overtake that art done enjoyably. It's something like a serious playfulness between fellow wives.」

「.....I thought that it's just Kaori who is like that.」

「Fufu, you still hath some way to go Goshujin-sama. Everyone likes everyone else to the greatest degree, but that art that. This art this. Because we art woman, then as expected we want to be told as “number one”, we desire to be “the only one” for the man we love. Even Yue often said it, art not she? 『I'll accept any challenge anytime, anywhere, no matter how many times』.」

「I see.」

A wry smile emerged on Hajime's lips thinking that he still "had some way to go" while he scratched his cheek. Even though normally Tio was just a pervert, sometimes she would give Hajime "understanding" with significant words smoothly said like this. She was by nature really thoughtful, and that was also one of her charms.

Hajime wanted to say something to the smiling Tio and opened his mouth.

But, before he could speak,

「Ah?」

「Mu?」

Hajime and Tio simultaneously ran their gaze over the surrounding. Sharpened wariness resided in their eyes.

Before they realized it, and it was truly before they realized, the mist was manifesting around Hajime and Tio. It was an extremely thin mist. However, seeing this, it was clearly unnatural for the mist to be appearing so suddenly inside a cave like this.

And above all, what they were feeling right now proved that the mist was abnormal.

「I see. Indeed, this is a strange pressure, and I also feel a pulling force deeper inside the cave.」

「It appeared that it wasn't just mine misunderstanding. Now then, what about Goshujin-sama's magic eye stone? This art definitely not magic, but perhaps it's one of the mystics of this world?」

「My magic eye stone isn't reacting at all. But, it's unthinkable that this is a natural phenomenon. It seems that a rare phenomenon is really occurring for real right now.」

Even while they were conversing like that, the pressure and pulling force were growing stronger. The restraining force was strengthening as though it wouldn't let the two of them go away while trying to drag them in.

Hajime took out a reconnaissance plane from his "Treasure Warehouse" onto

his palm and made it fly deeper into the cave.

The plane was advancing deeper unhindered, and its view was shared with Hajime so he could look at the situation inside.

After it advanced a little ahead,

「-. Oi oi, seriously?」

「Goshujin-sama, what's the matter?」

Hajime made a bit of a dry chuckle. It seemed there was an unexpected situation that made Hajime unable to hide his surprise.

Hajime kept his eyes fixed deeper into the cave while answering Tio's question.

「The reconnaissance plane was swallowed.」

「Swallowed? What doth that mean?」

「Exactly like that. The mist is getting thicker the deeper you go ahead. The shared view turned pure white, and nothing can be seen in the surroundings. And right after that, my link with it got cut.」

「That's.....」

Tio gulped. She understood well how powerful Hajime's artifact was. Even though it was just a reconnaissance plane, it was impossible for its link with its master to be severed that easily.

Hajime gave even more shocking words to the surprised Tio.

「That's not all. Just before I lost the plane, it was just for an instant, but.....I could see a sea of clouds.」

「Sea, of clouds? Wait a second Goshujin-sama. It wasn't the sky, but thou couldst see a "sea of clouds"? In other words——」

「Yeah, the scene I saw wasn't something I could see from a cave even if the ceiling here is transparent. Hahah, we are really inside a cave, right?」

Hajime and Tio looked at each other's face.

And, at that time,

「Nno!?!」

「This is!?!」

The mist moved. No, the mist around Hajime and Tio increased in thickness so suddenly they mistakenly thought that, and at the same time, the pressure and the pulling force also increased.

「Aa, this is bad Tio. Just maybe, this cave is a “natural gate”. At this rate, perhaps we might get thrown out to another world somewhere.」

「I see. The true identity of “spirited away”, by any chance it might be this kind of place or phenomenon.」

Even while Hajime and Tio were speaking out their hypothesis, they were trying to turn around toward the entrance.

But, it seemed the phenomenon of spirited away was something that couldn't be escaped from that easily.

「Ah, this is no good.」

「Truly, I understand this sensation. ——We art caught.」

With those words as their last, Hajime and Tio's figure was enveloped by the abnormally white mist.

And then, a few minutes later, the mist finally cleared up, and the figures of the two weren't there anymore.

Right after the mist coiling around them cleared up, Hajime and Tio were,

「Oo, it's really the blue sky.」

「Entering into a cave and falling from the sky, this art truly something.」

They were free falling in the great sky of an unknown world while they were folding their arms in an unmoving thinking posture. (TN: In the raw, the author is using the kanji 絶賛(zessan/great praise) related to the free falling. When I google'd it, it's related to the free-falling stock market price, but to my shame, I still really don't get what the connection between great praise and free falling is. Help please.)

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This is Tio's arc.

About how far it will continue, what kind of end it will have, there is no plot, so even Shirakome doesn't know.

But as expected, I don't think that it will run wild like Lily's arc.....

The posting of the next chapter is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 230

Arifureta After II in a World of Sky

The wind howled. Wind pressure was striking everything. If one looked up, they would see the vibrant azure sky. The light of the sun was brilliantly showering down. The sea of clouds was shining silver due to the reflection of the sunlight.

Surrounded by all those, there were two silhouettes freefalling with their arms folded.

「I wonder if it's my fate to enter a cave, then freefall in the sky?」

「Who knows. But, at the very least, this art a refreshing fall compared to before, isn't that right?」

「This is really pleasant weather~」

Just to make sure, let's specify it one more time. The two were in the middle of freefalling without a parachute or lifeline.

「For now, should we try going under the sea of clouds?」

「Right. It looks like the weather art bad, but perhaps there wouldth be something that couldst make us understand what kind of world this place art. After all, there art nothing above the sky.」

Hajime and Tio plunged into the sea of clouds even while they were talking like that.

At that instant, they received a baptism of terrific air turbulence and random lightning. It seemed that this sea of clouds wasn't merely thick clouds or rain

clouds, but something that resembled a super vast cumulonimbus cloud. Seeing as how there wasn't any sign of a vortex, it wasn't any kind of typhoon. It was just a storm cloud with an abnormal range that silently covered the world as far as the eye could see.

The lightning is flying wildly about, along with thunderous sounds, attacked Hajime and Tio as though to remove the intruder.

Hajime's body instantly emitted red sparks. The lightning that should strike Hajime's body was directly streamed away as though it was sliding off the body. It then flew away in the direction of the beyond.

As for Tio, she seemed to be casually enduring the lightning by using dragon scale hardening. She also used regeneration magic to repair the holes that opened on her clothes with an unruffled air.

Only a few seconds past.

bobat Both of them came out at the bottom of the sea of clouds with some cloud parts trailing behind them.

Without delay, fierce wind and rain attacked the two mercilessly.

「Uwaa, this is just terrible.」

「What to say.....art this world, ended already?」

Gravity control type multipurpose assault unit——Cross Velt. Hajime summoned eight of them to put up a cube-shaped barrier around him and Tio. They looked on from inside the cube at the rainwater trickling along the barrier's surface and unconsciously leaked out their voices.

Their reaction was understandable. No matter how they looked at it, the heavy rain pouring down toward the world like a waterfall looked like muddy water. The rainwater that hit their skin dyed the spot pitch black.

Tio used wind magic to shake off the black rain, and while she was at it, she combined it with fire magic to warm her and Hajime's wet body while drying out their clothes at high speed. She was doing that while expressing her impression toward this other world with a really astonished voice.

Her gaze was looking at her own arm that was wet with the black rain just

now. Countless red specks were coming out from there. It seemed that the places that got touched by the black rain were getting inflammation.

It was a world with obviously harmful black rain pouring down.

Of course, perhaps this was a characteristic phenomenon of this region, but at the very least, it was obvious that the dark color of the ocean spreading below wasn't caused just because the sunlight didn't reach. This black rain was pouring down so much that it colored the sea black.

And then, if the sea, which was polluted to this degree, followed the sea current and flowed through the world.....they naturally could imagine the hopelessness of this world.

Hajime took out his smartphone and made a drop of black rain to fall on the display. Right away, a ripple spread on the display. A loading screen appeared for a few seconds.

「Unknown composition, just as expected. It doesn't match anything from the data of Tortus or Earth. Its effect on the human body is.....oou, looks like Tio's impression is seriously spot on. Look here. This rain has the effect to cause necrosis in the cell.」

「.....Oh dear. However, no matter what kind of environment, what art called as living things wouldst find a way to adapt in the end and survive. There art still a possibility of organisms that managed to adapt in this place. Besides, perhaps even this black rain art limited to this area.」

「Well, you're right. Anyway, for now, let's return above. This rain doesn't have much effect on us, and we can heal the effect right away, but even so, this kind of muddy, black world is depressing.」

「No doubt about that.」

Hajime and Tio took one last look at the raging black world before charging into the sea of clouds once more with the barrier still activated.

They went through the sea of clouds and returned once more to the clear azure sky.

「If someone met that spirited away phenomenon, then they will get thrown

off into a world that is really hard to survive huh.」

「It looks like it. What wouldst we do Goshujin-sama? Art we going home?」

Tio asked without any doubt that they would be unable to return to Earth. With the “Compass of Guidance Crossing” and “Crystal Key”, it was possible to return home to Earth no matter what kind of world they were in. That was the reason that the two weren’t flustered at all even when they were going to be swallowed by the white mist inside the cave.

Hajime turned his gaze at Tio’s question. He showed a thinking gesture「Hm~」 and asked back in return.

「What do you want to do Tio?」

「.....We should return. This adventure is not on the level of going to the mountain for a bit anymore. I wouldst consider looking around for a bit if this was a good world though..... Also thinking about the time until Yue and the others return home, even if we art going on an adventure, we should return once to take Yue and the others together too.」

Tio made a wry smile just for a moment before she advocated a cautious theory. Indeed, although they could return at any time, the scale of this situation was too big to be a little fun that was done while their family wasn’t at home. The state of this world was too turbulent.

It was really an opinion with the prudence that was just like Tio.

Hajime narrowed his eyes at Tio before he showed a bit of a thinking gesture once more. And then, perhaps he had finished scrutinizing Tio’s opinion because he smiled wryly while agreeing「I guess」, and then he activated his “Treasure Warehouse II” to take out the “Compass of Guidance Crossing”.

Right after that,

「Hm? Hmm?Damn it. Now I’ve really done it, Tio.」

「Mu? What art the matter, Goshujin-sama.」

Hajime was scratching his head awkwardly which caused Tio to tilt her head in puzzlement. Her expression froze with a snap at Hajime’s next sentence.

「The compass, I forgot to bring it with me.」

Hajime was jovially saying「I'm beaten, I'm beaten」while laughing 'tahahahaha', with Tio staring open-mouthed in a daze and amazement at Hajime.

A beat, two beats. Finally, the meaning of Hajime's words seemed to soak into Tio as her complexion changed, and she began to press questions in a fluster.

「Wha, wha wha, what do thy mean with forget!? It was inside the Treasure Warehouse wasn't it!？」

「Haha~. I just recalled it only now, but just before this I lent it to Yue, but she hadn't returned it to me. That's really careless of me.」

「Tomfooleryy——!! Such an important thing art not something to be forgotten!」

「Oo, I got scolded by Tio.....this is a really fresh experience.」

「Art this the time to say thattt———!! What to do....., we couldst not go home.」

Hajime's attitude that was too overflowing with irresponsibility caused Tio's shoulders to drop dejectedly. She was in a state that she didn't even realize that for the first time she had yelled angrily at Hajime.

「Well, don't be that upset.」

「What? Goshujin-sama, thou art really composed. Art there any prospect of us going home?」

「We have no prospect to go home, but looking at it from the opposite side means that Yue is carrying the compass, so we don't particularly need to get flustered, right? I am carrying the Crystal Key, but if she finds me using the compass, then it's possible to search in reverse.」

「.....I see. Now that thy said that, indeed there art no reason to lose composure. If Yue uses the compass to find us who didn't return home, then we wouldst be able to return home at that point in time. Fumu, mine apologies Goshujin-sama. I was showing something unsightly.」

Being able to understand that their situation wasn't particularly serious after getting told so, Tio cast down her eyes from the shame of her disordered state.

Tio, who averted her eyes, didn't notice, but Hajime's expression, who was looking at her embarrassed gesture, was extremely gentle. Different from the normal Hajime who was usually dealing with Tio in full S mode, his warm expression now was emitting a definite affection.

Everything was because he understood the reason why Tio unusually lost her composure like just now.

Tio wasn't feeling uneasy at the possibility that they couldn't return home itself. In front of her, there was a man who had obtained the means to cross over worlds with only his determination when at the start he didn't have anything at all. Doubting that they couldn't return home was instead nothing more than an insult to Hajime.

Therefore, the reason why Tio was flustered was something else. That reason was in the fact that she separated Hajime from Yue and the others through something that was caused by them doing something that she suggested. She had no doubt that they would be able to go home. But, the problem was the time. At how long Hajime would be separated from Yue and the others.

In short, her loss of composure at their inability to go home was the manifestation of her consideration toward Yue and co. Although her sturdiness was her strong point, she was someone who wouldn't hesitate to turn her own body into a shield for her comrade's sake. Her way of losing composure was really like herself.

「Well, under the cloud feels like the end of the century, but the sky is really not bad. Until it's time, let's go adventuring to see if this sea of clouds will end somewhere and if there is, we will look for land, Tio.」

「Right. Yes, yes-. Let's do just that!」

The embarrassed Tio lively raised a happy voice after receiving that order to resume their adventure. There wasn't even any need to mention her expression. It was truly a smile that would charm anyone, and that would make anyone who knew her to be amazed thinking「If she can always be like that, then there wouldn't be anyone doubting her if she really is the princess of the dragon race or not」.

A while after they began their sky journey, currently, Tio had transformed into a black dragon, and Hajime was riding on her.

At first, Hajime was using his skyboard while Tio was also only using her wings from partial dragonification and used wind magic to fly in human form, but Hajime requested to her that he wanted to mount her.

Riding on a dragon's back to fly in the sky far away——that yearning of every man had often been realized by Hajime, but he never got tired of it, and if there was a chance, then he would ask to ride Tio like this.

『It also has been a while since I've flown with Goshujin-sama on my back. There wasn't that much chance since we returned to Earth.』

「Yeah. What's more, we were flying mainly at night whether on Tortus or Earth. It's really has been a long time since we last flew in a sky this clear.」

『If you wish it then we could fly anytime, correct? The sky of Earth is constrained, but if it's now, then we could do anything using Goshujin-sama's artifacts, isn't that right?』

「Yeah. I can just make an artifact for jamming and camouflage. Just spare me from having a dogfight with the ASDF.」(TN: Air Self-Defense Force)

Tio caught the wind and flew among the cloud chasms with a movement that was drawing an elegant curve. The milky road that was like flowing cotton candy was an amazingly superb view.

The sea of clouds wasn't only shaped flatly. At some places, the clouds would make a gigantic mountain shape or chasm shape like where they were at right now. There were also clouds that were arch-shaped and also clouds that were shaped like surging tidal waves. It was a magnificent view that could be described as a continent that was made in the sky.

Hajime was sticking to Tio's back using gravity control, so there wasn't any concern that he would fall. The wind pressure and air were also controlled within one meter of his body using a dedicated earring artifact. And so, Tio was flying to her heart's content without needing to give any consideration or restraint.

She broke out from the chasm with a steep climb and slipped through the gap

between clouds lazily floating about while barrel rolling.

She passed under arching clouds and swiveled around a mountain of clouds as though she was dancing. She then went on a steep climb before letting her body swoop down in a free fall. And then, she unfolded her wings with a force that blew away the clouds in the surrounding and flew inside the tidal wave cloud like a surfer.

「Having fun?」

『Yes, this art really fun!』

In contrast with the fierce maneuvers, Hajime was asking questions in a calm voice. And the responding voice was an excited voice just as expected. And then, a single roar as though she was giving a service. While it was a powerful roar, the reverberation felt pleasant somehow. Hajime also raised a cheerful laugh at that.

But, it was at that time, as though in response to Tio's howl, there was a faint sound reaching the two.

「O? Tio, just now.....」

『It seemed, we hath discovered the first villager——no, the first living thing here. It's truly auspicious that not every living thing here art exterminated.』

Even in this world where black rain that caused necrosis on living cells was pouring down, it seemed there was still living things here as expected. Right now, the sound vibrating in their eardrum that was getting louder and louder was obviously coming from a living thing——in addition, it seemed to be a howl that came from a large type organism.

Hajime tapped on the black-scaled back, and Tio took a steep turn in complete agreement.

They passed through several cloud mountains and in the end, they circled around a conspicuously large spiraling cloud. Then, there they were able to catch sight of black spots in the sky that looked like dribbling ink.

『Hou.....so there art mine fellow race even in this world.』

「As expected this is a fantasy world huh. Well, we don't know yet whether

they are like your race that can turn into “human” or “dragon”, or if they are just a variety of monster.」

The specks reflected on the azure sky were gradually growing bigger. The two who possessed eyesight that was incomparable with average people could clearly see the true form of those specks.

They were dragons. Not the snake type dragon of the east, but the western dragon. Their number was around ten. Their body was grey colored, and their body length was around two to three meters. Their bodies’ build looked bad. Compared to Tio’s build, they looked really frail. Their howl that they sometimes raised to call Tio sounded like a crying voice instead after the two saw their figures.

First things first, Tio tried talking to the small dragons that approached nearby in the blink of an eye in order to investigate their intelligence level.

『All of thee, art thee able to understand mine words? Couldst thee communicate using the mind?』

The response that came back was only *gyau gyau gyao gyao*, a crying voice of a beast. They were flying in circles around Tio who was hovering in midair as though they were fawning over her——

「「「「「.....」」」」」

They took a second look at Hajime who was sitting on Tio’s back. They were definitely taking a second look.

Seeing that the grey dragons stopped crying and instead were fixedly staring at him, Hajime gazed back「Aa?」in suspicion.

Right after that,

「「「「「Gyuwa!?!」」」」」

The grey dragons showed a reaction that looked like「We have seen something that mustn’t be seen!」before running away at full speed. There was even a dragon among them that was too panicked it lost speed and almost fell.

Their state was exactly like an unfortunate victim encountering a monster, or perhaps like a villager A who suddenly bumped into the demon king out of

nowhere.

Like before, they only cried out like a beast without showing any state of using language, or even advanced intelligence. But seeing how they were running away with terrible desperation while looking behind them several times,

——Ruunnn, quickly runnn

——Someone-, someone helpppp!!

——Oh god! Oo, god in heaven, please grant us your salvation-

——There is no way, I'm going to die in this kind of placeeee—

It felt like those kinds of screams of the heart could be heard.

「.....Tio」

『Wha, what is it, Goshujin-sama.』

Tio replied back to that quiet voice in a slight fluster. When she turned her head around and looked behind, she saw the figure of Hajime looking far away. A vague sorrow was drifting from his side profile.

「Am I, really that terrifying?」

『N, nooo, I think that art not really not the case.....』

「But, no matter how I look at their reaction, it's like they are a victim that encountered the devilish homicide in a horror movie. Even though I'm not emitting pressure or anything. Even though, I'm not doing anything.」

『Ma, mayhaps, they art not used to human? When they approached me because they thought of me as their fellow, they saw a creature that they hath not seen before and got surprised. Surely that art the case here.』

「Are they running away that desperately in terror because they are surprised?Recently, I've been told that I was mellowing out, and I thought that I had adapted a bit to live on Earth but.....」

『Goshujin-sama, mine motherly instinct art really tickled seeing thy rare disheartened figure, but for now, how about we try chasing after them? After all, they art the only living things in this world that we finally discovered.』

「.....You are right. Let's do that.」

Tio was writhing lightly seeing Hajime who was somewhat dispirited.

If it was him when he was at Tortus, then something like this would cause a vein to twitch on his forehead before he shot them down *dopan-*, so him being disheartened like this showed that he was in the process of acclimating to life on Earth. That was what Tio thought, but this was really a rare sight, so she didn't say anything instead.

In exchange, she urged Hajime to chase after the change in this world that they finally encountered so that it wouldn't get away.

She flapped her wings once. Tio began to fly like she was gliding. The grey dragons that glanced back as though saying「They aren't following us? Are we safe already?」saw the following Tio——or more accurately Hajime who was riding on her back, and their body twiiiitched and trembled.

Naturally, they began to escape with even more desperation than before.

「.....」

『Aa~, Goshujin-sama? This art surely that. They don't look like they hath intelligence on the level of humans, they art genuinely a beast. That's why they art instinctually sensing Goshujin-sama's strength——』

Tio followed up with a touching gesture. However, it was unclear whether her words reached or not. Hajime didn't react at all while his somewhat dispirited expression was starting to change bit by bit.

The disheartened face turned into a fixed stare, and next, it changed into a small irritation. And then——

「Fine then. If they are asking for that kind of character from me, then, aah, that's fine. I should answer their expectation. Ku-ku-ku-ku-」

『Go, Goshujin-sama, art making a sadist face like when he was dealing with me!? Run away! All of thee, quickly run awayyyyy-』

The demon king-sama stood up imposingly above Tio and widely spread his arms in a dramatic pose as though welcoming in the enemy. His lips split apart like a crescent moon while his eyes were blazing fiercely like a hunter cornering

his prey!

Tio howled and urged the grey dragons to escape. The grey dragons that looked back simultaneously at that voice——saw it right away.

「Now, run, run, run! I'll leisurely hunt you down and devour youuuuuu-」

They saw the demon king who was bursting with crimson magic power while loudly yelling something like that which reverberated to the whole azure sky.

Of course, it went without saying that the body of the grey dragons twitcheeeeeeeeeeed. It also went without saying that they were starting to run away with even more desperation than before. From behind them「HAAH———HAHHAHHAHHAH!!」a loud laughter resounded. Something shining could be seen glittering around their eyes even though they were dragons——surely that was just an imagination.

Around thirty minutes after Hajime turned demon king. Hajime, who had just created one more piece of black history, was sitting on Tio's back while grasping his knees. Tio, who was taking the stance of "Let's just leave him alone for now", finally called out to Hajime.

『Goshujin-sama. Stop being down and look ahead.』

「Just leave me alone Tio. I'm disgusted with my own foolish act and lack of growth.If I don't reflect back on myself a bit, then I'll turn completely into Endo.」

『If he heard that, then he wouldst get upset and indignant.....no, mayhaps, he wouldst be happy because of his comrade increase? Well, rather than talking about that, come now, stop acting like that and raise thy head. It was worth it to chase after those dragons with some distance in between. I believe this art a sight that wouldst make thy heart greatly throb though?』

「Dismissing my concern like that.....well, certainly the matter of Endo doesn't matter but..... And, what are you saying about the sight——」

Hajime stopped hugging his knees while casually saying something cruel about a certain friend with a thin presence and lifted his gaze. And then, he lost

his words while unconsciously rising a voice of admiration「Ooo」.

In the middle of the chase, the two felt that it was futile chasing after the grey dragons and took some distance from them while following behind without the dragons noticing. And now, it seemed that they had reached the place where the dragons were dwelling.

「Is this a real Lapota huh?」

『Aah, that masterpiece.....indeed, this resembles that. Though, as for me, this reminds me of the Holy Precincts.』

The sea of clouds continued without end since the place they appeared at in the beginning up till now. There was only the sea of clouds as far as their eye could see. It was possible that perhaps this sea of clouds was covering the whole world. In that case, because the surface was ravaged by the black rain that was bringing fatality to living things, then where would the dragons rest their wings——the answer to that question was this.

——An island floating in the sky.

Yes, it was a piece of land that was floating above the sea of clouds without anything supporting it from below. It was as though a piece of land had been reeled up as it was. Below it was the exposed earth and stones, above there was the verdant green ground, and there was even a forest covering the center of the floating island with tall trees. Its size was around five or six Tokyo Domes.

「I thought that this was a fantasy world by the time there were dragons, but with this, it feels even more like it.」

『Before, there was no time to observe the floating island of the Holy Precincts thoroughly. I am feeling a bit thrilled. Goshujin-sama, the dragons before art likely to be here too, so it's better to land on the edge as to not surprise them, correct?』

「Yeah, do that. I'll use "Presence Isolation" in advance.」

The more Tio approached, the more a commotion happened in the forest at the center. The trees were unnaturally shaking slightly; however, right after that, the forest was filled with peacefulness. Surely the dragons were hiding there.

Tio landed on the edge of the floating island while feeling their presence. She landed gently with a softness that didn't fit her large body. Hajime jumped down from Tio's back and stepped on the lush ground with his own feet.

Right after that, Tio dispelled her dragon transformation and stood beside Hajime. *rustle*, a sign of agitation was spreading from the forest.

「It looks like normal weeds from the appearance. The composition of the soil.....it seems similar with Earth and Tortus but.....hm?」

Hajime crouched and took a grass within his hand, and he then analyzed the soil composition with “Mineral Appraisal”. And then, 「Oh?」 he blinked as though he noticed something.

「What art the matter? Art there some kind of mysterious composition mixed in it?」

「Rather than calling it a mysterious composition.....something that is really similar with a composition I'm really familiar with is mixed in. What's more, it's scattered all over in a wide scope like a fertilizer.」

「Familiar composition? From thy speech, is it something from Tortus?」

「Yeah. They are small granulated minerals that are even smaller than sand. ——【Converging Transmutation】」

Thinking that it was faster to see directly, he made his palm face up. Right after that, Hajime was activating a transmutation master's secret art of transmuting without the hand directly touching the material to converge the mineral in the surrounding.

Sparkling sands were bursting out from Hajime's surrounding. They were like large flowing rivers of the cosmos, swirling like sparkling stars with Hajime as the center where they were gradually converging above his palm.

With an emission of crimson sparks, the item that was finally created by the compression transmutation was a fragment of shining azure mineral.

「This art.....it looks like god crystal.」

「Yeah. Though it's different in the finer aspects. It seems that the aspect where it takes in magic power and condenses it to manifest liquid is the same

though.」

To be more specific, it couldn't retain magic power as much as a god crystal, and on top of that, it also didn't have the power to create god water that possessed the recovery effect, which wouldn't be an exaggeration to be called as regeneration. However, its ability to take in magic power into itself and then create a liquid with abundant nourishment, and then its circulation rate of going through those sequences were far faster and more efficient to the degree that couldn't be compared to the god crystal's production of god water.

Hajime acquired that knowledge from the analysis of his smartphone that was equipped with the advanced function of analyzing using "Mineral Appraisal", Creation Magic, and Metamorphosis Magic. Tio, who received Hajime's explanation, said「I see」in understanding and then looked around.

「So that's how a land floating in the sky couldst be this verdant. The reason art because it hath that god crystal look alike.」

「Looks like it. Although, that's not the reason why this land is floating though.....」

Hajime stood up and turned his gaze to the center of the floating island. He intended to go investigate there. Tio also nodded and was about to walk, but it was at that time,

「Mu? So they art coming out by their own initiative.」

One dragon suddenly showed its face from behind a tree. *jii~* It was staring at Tio.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other. For now, they would try watching in silence. Hajime was using "Presence Isolation" at full power while also forming a simple barrier using a pencil-sized Cross Velt. It wasn't an artifact for defense, but a barrier artifact that used space magic to bend the light for optical camouflage. It wasn't that powerful, but it more or less also possessed space isolation effect, so it blocked the body odor from detection.

The small grey dragon was looking *jii~* at Tio for a while, but seeing that Tio wasn't moving while looking back at it with a calm expression, it seemed the dragon let its guard down just a little because it came out with unsure steps

from the forest.

Behind that dragon, 「Oi, is it really okay?」 「Stop I told you! You are going to die!」 the other dragons timidly showed their face from behind the trees as though to say that.

「It looks like they art calming down a bit there~」

The figure of those dragons that could be said to be charming in a sense caused Tio to loosen up her face. Perhaps Tio's atmosphere that was softening further encouraged it, and the dragon in the lead was advancing a bit and stopped, then it advanced a bit and stopped again. It was repeating that action while approaching Tio bit by bit.

Before long, the dragon that had arrived near Tio brought its snout closer to Tio, and it sniffed her smell *sniff sniff*. And then, it nervously retracted back its neck and tilted its head before it brought its nose closer again and sniffed her scent *sniff sniff* again.

「Hmm. It appears they art confused, whether I am a dragon or a human. In that case.....it's great isn't it, Goshujin-sama. It appears Goshujin-sama art not especially hated; these children seem to fear "human" itself.」

『I see. In other words, that means humans, or at the very least "humanoid" beings, are existing in this world.』

Hajime replied using "Telepathy" just in case so the dragon wouldn't get spooked. While the two were doing that, the other dragons also seemed to lose to their curiosity toward this mysterious existence who smelled like their race even though she was human. They were coming out of the forest even while looking timid with unsure steps.

Tio was surrounded by dragons in the blink of an eye. She slowly reached out her hand toward one of the dragons that was bringing its snout closer. The dragon twitched and drew back, but when it saw Tio waiting silently with her hand still reached out, it approached back slowly.

Finally, Tio's hand touched the dragon's snout. And then, when Tio caressed it, the dragon blinked in surprise before it started to narrow its eyes pleasantly. Its shrill but low purr *kururururu*- seemed to show its fawning act.

Behind Tio, another dragon was pressing its snout as though to appeal ‘me too’. Just when she thought that was it, the other dragons also pushed their snouts forward from the left and right too.

「Oi oi, all of thee. For the dragon race of all things to be spoiled children like this, every single one of thou? What troubling children.」

Tio chuckled while saying that. Although, even though she was saying that, the emotion dwelling in her eyes was an unconcealed kindness. She gently caressed them in turn with smiling eyes and loosened cheeks, looking truly like a mother.

Hajime also looked fondly at the figure of Tio surrounded by dragons while gently spoiling them. Even though normally she was very much a pervert, her true nature was a noble person that was overflowing with prudence, kindness, and pride. That was exactly the charm of this woman, Tio Claus.

「Mu? I vaguely feel a passionate gaze.....now-now, Goshujin-sama. Art thou envious that I am paying attention only to these children?」

While smiling mischievously, Tio accurately threw her gaze at Hajime who was hiding behind the barrier of optical camouflage.

It was a fact that Hajime was captivated, so he smiled wryly while replying「Perhaps」. After getting that unexpectedly positive reply, Tio’s cheeks blushed faintly. It seemed she was a bit happy.

To divert the attention from her shyness, she opened her mouth with a bit of rapid talk.

「Goshujin-sama. If it’s now, these children’s wariness art lessened considerably, how about giving a try to pat them?」

『I guess. There won’t be many chances of something like this.』

Hajime manipulated the pencil Cross Velt and deployed the optical camouflage as close as possible on his body. He was also in the middle of activating Presence Isolation in full force, so he should be able to pat the dragon if he reached his hand from a blind spot.

Hajime slowly approached a dragon. It was half closing its eyes from Tio’s

caressing, so it shouldn't notice anything even if he touched it a bit.

But, it seemed that wild instinct wasn't that naïve.

「!？」

The dragon that Hajime approached suddenly leapt back from that spot. Furthermore, that jump happened so deftly and vigorously that for a moment there it felt like there would be a sound *hyuba*-.

‘Am I noticed?’ Hajime stared fixedly, but the dragon tilted its head「kuruu？」 while looking around. It seemed it didn't notice Hajime, but it only acted instinctually.

Hajime tried taking a step forward. The dragon took a step back. Hajime tried taking two steps forward. The dragon took two steps back. Hajime tried to circle behind it. The dragon circled with a fixed distance preserved in between. It was as though there was an unseen wall between Hajime and the dragon as the two sides were turning in circles without any change of distance between them.

It seemed that the dragon didn't understand why it was acting like this. It frequently tilted its head.

「Ma, mayhaps it understands instinctually that there art something it hates there？」

Tio muttered such a thing, perhaps from sensing how Hajime's eyes were gradually turning scornful.

Hajime tried approaching the other dragons. The other dragons also took a distance with natural movement. No matter where Hajime tried to go, the dragons would distance themselves from Hajime as though they were magnets of opposite poles. There was no doubt that they didn't notice Hajime's existence. In other words, they were avoiding him on a subconscious level.

Hajime was hurt for a tiny bit. He was looking at the day after tomorrow with a faraway look.

But, at that time, perhaps it was just a coincidence, but one dragon clawed on the ground with its hind leg. The soil that was hurled from that went splat on Hajime.

That action was as though like what a cat or a dog would do to filth.....

「.....Go, Goshujin-sama?」

「.....」

Hajime didn't reply. He merely grinned.

Crimson magic power suddenly sparked. The dragons were still busy fawning on Tio. They didn't notice how they had stepped on a landmine.

Hajime slowly walked while still having the barrier and Presence Isolation activated and took a position at the center of the dragons by skillfully manipulating the distance.

There, the dragons finally noticed the strange air and they looked around restlessly.

And then, they turned their gazes' at the area centered around them, which, for some reason, was empty without anyone being there.

——Stand B~y! Stand B~~y!!

——Now, everyone, are you all finished with your preparations?

——It's starting you know?

——Pe~~ek, aa~~~~~.....demon king!

The barrier vanished, and the Presence Isolation was dispelled.

What appeared was a bursting crimson magic power with the demon king-sama grinning wideeeeeely at the center.

The result went without saying.

「「「「「PIGYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!」」」」」

The dragons' screams that were filled with fright resounded through the clear blue sky.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 231

Arifureta After II Mistaken World View

At a corner of an island floating in the sky, there was a demon king sitting on the ground grasping his knees.

It was Hajime.

「Even though thou understood this is how it wouldst end up.....」

A weeping back, eyes that looked like dead fish, a beautiful huddling posture. Hajime who was the personification of picture perfect “depressed person” was told by Tio with an exasperated expression.

「Guu」

He barely could let out a ‘guu’ sound. Seeing such Hajime, Tio snickered once more even through her exasperation. The situation that was the exact opposite of their normal act surely would make anyone who knew these two to doubt their eyes if they saw this. (TN: In Japan there is a saying of “he cannot even make ‘guu’ sound” to show how speechless or cornered the person is)

「Come on, Goshujin-sama. Come back to thyself quickly. Thou art going to investigate the cause of this island’s floating state correct?」

Tio squatted snugly beside Hajime. She peered into Hajime’s face with a consoling smile. Hajime glanced at Tio. And next he glanced across his shoulder to look behind.

Over there were several fainting dragons with the white of their eyes completely exposed. Several of their fellow dragons poked at them to ascertain their well-being while several others were staring fearfully at Hajime and Tio. It went without saying that the fainted group was the victim of one of Demon King-Style 108 Harassment Skills, “Peek-a-Demon King!”.

「Just leave me alone and take care of those guys. You see, I'm disgusted from the bottom of my heart of a foolish existence like me.」

「Well, certainly, it was really immature.」

「Gufuh. Getting told that by the like of a hopeless dragon.....depressing. I want to.....not die, I want to be a shut-in.」

「Even though Goshujin-sama's mind art damaged that much, but this natural abuse, nnn-」

Tio's cheeks reddened while her body fidgeted.

A dragon that was poking its comrade behind tilted its head「Oh?」, and a beat later it made a commotion *gyau gyau*. The other dragons that got startled and turned around then started to make similar noise. A fainting dragon had its tongue spilled out limply from its mouth.It seemed that it was just a step short from the death's door.

「However, for Goshujin-sama to make merry until this far, how rare this is.」

「Well, I cannot deny that my mood is uplifted more than usual. After all an *adventure* where there is no clear objective, no powerful enemy, and no companion's life at stake like this is the first.」

「Boy.」

「You say that, but you too are high spirited aren't you?」

「Yes. I couldst not deny that.」

One more dragon had its tongue spilled out limply. And then one more dragon, although it opened its eyes just for a moment, it then stretched its forelegs to the sky—before losing strength and flopped on the ground.

This scene was obvious to the trained eye. Right now, something that looked like a white vapor was rising out from the limply unmoving dragons toward the heaven with swaying motion! They were dying from the shock of “Peek-a-Demon King”!

「Well, for now, I'll depend on you to keep my disgrace a secret okay? As expected, if this is known by Yue and others, then I'll turn into a real shut-in from shame and self-disgust.」

Hajime stood up while making Tio to promise to keep this a secret. He then turned on his heel and walked away briskly. He was heading toward the dragons making *gyau gyau* noise at their comrades' death.

The surviving dragons were startled by Hajime's approach and their body froze before they escaped in panic.

「Fufufuh, a secret just between the two of us, that really art not bad. Very well. The childish figure of Goshujin-sama will be locked inside mine heart.」

「Please, okay? Now then, you guys, don't go to the other side as you please.」

Hajime was talking with Tio while fitting his hand into a black glove that was overflowing with romance. He then suddenly reached out his hand to empty air and grasped something violently. And then, he drove it into the dragon below him.

The dragon with its tongue lolling out twitched and convulsed. The other dragons raised their cry while evacuating to the sky, as though to say「He is beating up a corpse!?!」

Not paying any attention to that, Hajime did the same thing to the other dragons, he caught something midair and then drove that something with a palm strike into the dragons' body.

「Still, looking at them from nearby like this I can really see it.....these dragons, their body is really frail.」

「Yes. They art scared against human, and then the polluted land, there art no doubt that this world is a harsh place without sufficient food for these children to live.」

While conversing like that, Hajime made red sparks running through the black glove. *bachii bachii* With that sound, the hand became clad in moderate electricity before Hajime's hand casually struck at the place where the heart of the dragon with lolling tongue seemed to be located at while he was still talking normally with Tio.

The dragon with lolling tongue twitched and trembled. At the next moment, its eyes opened with a snap and it accomplished its revival!

The “Lightning Clad” seemed to be overflowing with casualness, but actually it had been superbly adjusted. Hajime also granted electric shock using that into the dragons that were ascending to heaven.

By the way, Hajime reaching out his hand to empty air was a direct blow to soul—by using the black glove that was a protection artifact, Hajime grasped the soul of the dragons that was ascending to heaven and returned them to their body.

The dragons that received the relatively rough direct resurrection treatment were shivering in terror as expected when they saw Hajime. Hajime muttered「Well, can't be helped. I reap what I sow」. For the time being he took out food—meat that was preserved inside “Treasure Warehouse II” for the bean sprouts dragons.

Hajime threw it carelessly at the dragons' feet. The dragons jumped in place because they couldn't escape even if they wanted with their distance being too close to Hajime, even so their nose was twitching from the wafting smell from below.

They were bothered about Hajime. Or rather, they were scared. Perhaps they would be killed instantly the moment they took their eyes off from him.....

Even while thinking that, drools were already dripping like river from their mouth. In less than ten second their eyes were already glancing repeatedly at their feet.

They looked like a doggy that was told to “wait” .

Hajime smiled wryly.

「That's an apology for surprising you guys. You guys looking like bean sprouts even though you are a dragon race is also pitiful. Eat as much as you want.」

Saying that, Hajime also carelessly leave behind raw meats including the share of the dragons that were circling above while observing the situation. And then he drew back.

The dragons looked at each other. ‘He is not attacking? What is this thing with good smell? Is it okay to eat?’ It felt like those voices of heart could be heard from them.

The flying dragons hesitantly landed down. And then, their eyes were getting bloodshot from seeing the lumps of meat while drools were dripping down from their mouth like waterfall. The dragons looked at each other, and then, they glanced at Hajime.

Hajime was standing silently beside Tio. Beside the mysteriously kind great existence who was clad in the same presence like them.

Before long, one dragon became unable to endure anymore and bit at the edge of the meat. While the other dragons were watching over him「O, oi. You are okay?」, for a moment the dragon stiffened, and then its eyes snapped open instantly before it charged the lump of meat.

「GYUUOOOWAAAAA!」

Anyone could understand even without word. That was truly a roar of joy! ‘How can something this delicious exist in this world! This is like a treasure of food~~-!!’ Such voice of heart was resounding.

Naturally the other dragons also snapped at the meat. And then, they raised similar roar of joy.

One dragon exposed its white of eyes and its tongue lolled out from the excessive deliciousness and excitement. Its soul that looked like a white vapor was ascending to heaven. Hajime quickly grasped it, drove it *zudon*- into the body, and revived it with *bachii bachii*. The dragon then snapped into the meat once more.

「These guys, they are dying too easily. Just how frail they are?」

「Truly, this art too pitiful for a dragon race.....was what I wanted to say, but it looks like this art even their first time eating meat for these children. Most likely, they art surviving by living in this island eating fruits or something else. By the way, why art Goshujin-sama bringing meat like that?」

「Aa. Remember, we had barbecue before right? A lot of people came and so I bought a lot of meat in preparation in high spirits, these meats are the remains from that time.」

「Mu. Wait a second, Goshujin-sama. If I remember correctly, the meat at that time was really good meat correct? I remember that it was the brand product

from somewhere.」

「Yeah. These are grade A5 meats.」

「.....The meat they art eating for the first time, art the top quality product. Perhaps it couldst not be helped if they ascend to heaven from that.」

Rather, this was an act that would make the meat producer to fly into rage saying ‘don’t use this meat for animal food!’. If Hajime was going to make excuse, he gave them this kind of meat because he only had preserved food other than this. Even Hajime felt a bit regretful doing this.

But, this act that was an extravagance in a sense brought an unexpected result at the present.

「Hm?Their wariness is lessening slightly?」

Yes, the dragons that were giving off satisfied aura as though to say「I’m full!」 were sending glances at Hajime. From those gazes, it certainly looked like the color of terror from before was lessening. Right now if he had to say they were more bewildered than scared.

「.....Are we mistaken perhaps? Who will ever thought that these guys who were that scared against human will change their heart like this just from a single food.」

「Muu. These children art too simple that it’s worrisome. They are like children who wouldst follow a stranger just because they are promised candy.」

It was unthinkable for a wild beast to so easily let go of the wariness they had harbored once. That was why Hajime gave them meat in the name of apologizing but.....at this rate, perhaps these dragons would react warmly against human who they actually ought to be wary against different from before.

The result of doing that would be the same like shortening the life of these dragons. Therefore, Hajime’s expression turned a bit bitter.

「But if you look from the opposite, perhaps they are being so cornered to the degree that their wariness will lessen just from a single food.....」

Hajime sighed. And then, he exposed a really speechless expression before he

suddenly changed his presence.

「Sorry. I didn't intend to toy with you guys but.....I did something bad. Get scared against human properly.」

Saying that, Hajime was about to emit “Pressure”——it was at that time,
「「「「「Gyauh!?!」」」」」

The dragons suddenly turned around in panic and rushed in full speed into the forest.

「Goshujin-sama?」

「No, that's not me. I haven't emit Pressure. Just what in the——」

Tio turned a face that was questioning Hajime, but naturally Hajime responded with words of denial. Hajime himself was tilting his head in puzzlement why the dragons suddenly ran away.

But, the next moment, he noticed the cause and stopped his words. If it was the hell rabbit ear Shia, then it would be possible that she would notice in the same time or possibly faster than the dragons.

「What? Something is approaching? A living thing.....but this voice」

「Mu? I couldn't not hear anything.....no, now I couldst.This is.....it sounds like motor?」

「Ye, yeah. I also can hear something like that.....」

From faraway the sound of *kiiiiiiii*- was faintly resounding. Certainly it was just like Tio said, the sound resembled motor sound. Yes, it was a voice that was raised by machine. Therefore Hajime couldn't hide his bewilderment.

A black rain that polluted the world, dragon, and floating island in the sky. In this undoubtedly fantasy world, something that was making a sound that resembled motor sound was approaching rapidly. It couldn't be helped that his image of this world was crumbling.

「Nevertheless, this thing is.....」

「Fast!」

The moment Tio continued Hajime's sentence, that thing showed its

appearance along with a high-pitched sound.

A hard-looking frame in delta shape that had a trace of roundness with sky blue color that could be concealed by the azure sky. Several long and narrow tubes were attached at its bottom part. There were five of them, rushing straight toward the floating island with beautiful triangle formation.

Seeing those things flying away instantly above Hajime and Tio, Hajime said,
「Why fighter aircrafts!?!」

He grandly acted the straight-man.

Yes, those things were obviously fighter aircrafts. If compared to the existing aircraft in earth, then these aircrafts looked like space fighter aircraft that appeared in a movie of near future, but Hajime's excellent eyes certainly caught sight of a few things. That human was riding inside the cockpit installed at the front part of the airframe, and that the tube things installed below the aircraft resembled the missile in earth.

「.....Goshujin-sama. It seemed our world view art mistaken. If we hath to say what kind of world this is——it's SF.」

「What's with this chaos.」

A black rain that polluted the world, dragon, and floating island in the sky, futuristic fighter aircrafts flying in the sky.

Certainly it was a chaotic world.

KIIII The hard sound resounded from the other world aircraft that drew a beautiful arc in the sky. The formation of five planes was circling above as though to observe the floating island and then they took distance for the moment.

「The other side should be able to see us too. It will be fine if they can communicate with us somehow.」

「For now, how about trying to talk with them using telepathy Goshujin-sama?」

Hajime and Tio talked with each other carefreely. Ahead of their gaze, one of the circling aircraft suddenly began to be clad with a strange light. The aircraft that was giving off presence that felt increasingly like SF— —or rather like UFO, it released something like light ripple the moment it passed across the forest.

There wasn't any thunderous sound reverberating or the forest getting blown up. But, there was certainly a result from that.

KIIIIII-

A hard sound that was different from the motor sound struck the ear.

「-, this is」

「Sound wave?」

Hajime and Tio screwed up their face reflexively. Tio immediately blocked the sound wave using wind barrier, but even so that sound attack caused her headache.

Naturally, for the dragons whose hearing was better than Hajime and Tio and didn't possess any barrier, this was an attack that would make them feel outrageous agony.

「「「「KUWAAAAAAAH」」」」

The dragons raised a cry that sounded like scream and they flew out all at once from the forest.

It seemed they fell into panic. They frantically tried to distance themselves from the forest as much as they could. There, another plane fired its missile.

The missile that was approaching in high speed burst before it could impact the dragons, and from there a net was ejected.

The net spread widely and enveloped the dragons without even giving them time to twist their body. On top of that, the net wasn't falling down but it stayed fixed midair and restrained the dragons. It was as though the dragons were locked inside a cage that was created midair.

「A hunt, huh.」

「.....I see. We art not helping?」

Tio didn't sound blaming. She asked merely as a question. Hajime made a wry smile.

「If there is someone being a nuisance to a fisherman saying『What are you doing catching the fish huh!』, then that person is simply an idiot. No, rather he is a scoundrel that is hindering the fisherman's work.」

「Certainly. It's not something good if we who doth not know anything about this world interfere as we pleased.」

It was a completely sound reasoning. They only had a bit of interaction with the dragons, but it would be a lie if they said that they didn't feel attachment at all to the dragons whose reaction were like a stray dog. However, if they were asked whether they were so attached to the dragons to the degree that they would hinder the aircraft pilots who were possibly hunting the dragon to feed their family or for some kind of important work, then the answer was a big NO.

「But, I'm curious to the working of that net that is fixed midair and the sound wave attack and flashing phenomenon of the aircraft. No matter how I look, their driving force seem different compared to earth's aircraft.....perhaps, it might have the same principle with how this island is floating.」

「Either way, they art a party that we might be able to exchange word with. Letting this chance get away art not an option. The problem now, art how to form communication with them, but.....art we going to try sending them telepathy?」

「It will be great if my Language Comprehension and interpreter artifact can demonstrate their effect.」

Even while the two were conversing, most of the dragons that were flying out from the forest were captured. Hajime was observing to see how the dragons would be transported, but during that time one of the aircraft circled around and it was facing its nose toward Hajime and Tio.

「Oh, as expected it looks like they noticed us. Seem the toher side is the one coming to contact us see?」

「Ri, right. It appears so but.....for some reason, I hath a bad premonition though.」

Tio's premonition was correct.

The moment *voo*- an instantaneous sound split the air and a sudden flash scattered from the lower part of the aircraft's nose—wind of killing intent assaulted the two.

What was fired without any warning was a machine gun. The storm of bullets that were concealing terrible destructive power mercilessly rushed at Hajime and Tio. The surrounding ground was rupturing as though getting blown away. The thrown up cloud of dust covered the two from view.

The aircraft passed overhead Hajime and Tio as though nothing had happened and it rejoined its comrade. It didn't even give any glance at Hajime and Tio anymore. It was clear that the pilot thought the two weren't existence that was worth anything. It was only mowing a grass at a corner of the garden that was an eyesore— that was how it felt like.

「.....Calm down me. This is another world. Don't judge things with our own common sense.」

「.....Those guys.....ignorance art truly terrifying isn't it.」

The cloud of dust was carried away by the wind. What appeared from there was naturally the unharmed Hajime and Tio. Cube-shaped barrier was deployed around them using Cross Velt. The strafing that had a might which resembled 30mm Vulcan cannon was blocked without even a single crack in the barrier.

However, it was doubtful whether the heart of the person inside could block that kind of uncompromising tyranny.

Hajime was folding his arms with vein pulsing on his forehead, even so he was trying to suppress his anger and persuaded himself. Tio beside him was directing a gaze that was shuddering in terror to the aircraft pilots. Of course, that shudder wasn't directed toward their strength, but at their attitude that was picking a fight against a godslayer right from the front.

「This is a world with polluted land. Then, a ground that is floating in the sky must be really important for human to live. Naturally, they should be managing and protecting it strictly. And now there are unknown people rudely stepping on it. I cannot complain even if I got shot without any warning whatsoever. Isn't

that right, me? That's right, me.」

「Go, Goshujin-sama. I understand that thy art angry, so please stop that soliloquizing. Somehow it's terrifying in different meaning.」

The way to suppress anger Hajime-style——soliloquizing. Seen from the side, it was a skill that was wholly judged to be more terrifying than getting angry normally.

Because in earth there was no way he could uncompromisingly go “instant death for everyone≡” like when he was in Tortus, this was a patience skill that Hajime newly learned.

From afar, seeing how Hajime and Tio were unharmed, the pilot seemed to be taken aback and he directed its aircraft's nose toward the two once more.

Hajime cleared his throat once and he called for ceasefire while activating “Telepathy”.

『Aa~, pilot-san, pilot-san. Can you hear? We don't have any ill intention. If we are trespassing illegally, then we will apologize and get out right away. That's why, first let's have a tal——』

Missile coming!! Without warning it went whoo~~~sh-!!

Of course, Hajime and Tio were unharmed.

『.....』

『Sto, stop it! All of theee, doth thee hath a death wish!? Let's hath a talk right now!』

Hajime was muttering to himself inaudibly.「Perhaps the telepathy didn't go through. No, perhaps they didn't understand the language. Perseverance is important in communication. Isn't that's right, me? That's right, me」He was soliloquizing again. His eyes were completely not moving though.

『Please, listen to us. We——』

Missile comi~~~ng-!! Yes, whoo~~~sh-!!

Perhaps the missile this time was of a different variety, it didn't just explode but it had extra flame blast with viscosity. The surrounding was dyed crimson.

However, inside the flame that was blazing rumblingly, the two were standing still unharmed as expected.

Tio was getting flustered ‘awawawa’ while glancing at Hajime, but when she saw Hajime’s expression had gone past rage and he was starting to smile instead, she covered her face with both hands as though to say「I cannot bear to see this anymore!」

But, it would be troubling if the current Hajime was looked down on. In order for him to live normally in earth at Japan, his homeland that believed in law and order, everyday he was working hard to not use violence, but instead he was learning different strength that was patience and perseverance, negotiation power and financial strength.

He wouldn’t snap just from a bit of machine gun strafing and missiles!

.....It felt like the dragons would want to retort「Then, why did you snap before this!?」if they knew it.

『Pilot-san, we——』

Hajime tried to call out once more with a voice that had lost any intonation. This time, finally there was a reaction. Although, the reaction wasn’t something that “came back” to Hajime, but a complete ignoring of Hajime.

『Chih, what the hell is this. Don’t tell me they are carrying shielding device in the same level with a warship?』

『Vans-san, surely that’s impossible. Do you see anywhere any device with size necessary for shield of warship level?』

『Are they OOPArt owner?I want that.』(TN: Out of Place Artifact)

『No way, you think there is any explorer in this ear huh. Rather than that, look there. That woman. Her outfit is strange, but she is an extremely fine jewel yeah? Hey, Vans-san? Looks like that guy is calling at us, so let’s land down and kill just the man, then give me that woman. The woman from before is not usable anymore. I want to make her my new pet.』

It appeared these guys weren’t really guys with class. At the same time, it seemed they were thinking that the conversation at their side weren’t leaking

out. Most likely they were under the impression that the communication method of Hajime and Tio was something like their own method, it seemed they thought that they couldn't be heard because they were in different frequency (?).

Hajime was silent. However, any color was gradually leaving his smiling face.

In the middle of that, the man who seemed to be the leader called Vans-san said this to the man who made a remark of wanting to kill Hajime and make only Tio as pet,

『Hmph? Certainly, I'm curious with that abnormally strong shield.Fine then. We will land down and pull information out from them. After that kill the man——and I'll take the woman.』

『Eeh!? That's unfair!』

『Don't make a ruckus. I'll lend her to you when I'm not using her.』

『A~a, can't be helped then~』

Their screwed up conversation was continuing. The five fighter aircrafts——if following what they were saying, it seemed the plane was called sky battlecraft——that were circling with their nose directed at Hajime and Tio were lowering their speed and altitude. Currently in the conversation that was being leaked out clearly, the hot topics were about how they would kill Hajime or how they would rape Tio later.

「.....Haa, the fools. They art waking up a monster that is not necessary to wake up. They art getting their just dessert.」

Tio's words were muttered to herself.

The sky battlecrafts were approaching. The dragons were peeking at their direction from inside the net.

Hajime figure vanished instantly.

And then, the pilots of the sky battlecrafts, especially Vans who was flying in the lead as the first plane, were doubting their eyes.

『There is no need to get down. I'll send you all down to hell myself.』

A flat voice was resounding inside their head. At the same time, an impossible sight in front of them leaped into their sight.

With a giant weapon loaded with giant stake carried in one hand, a human silhouette jumped at the front of the flying sky battlecraft's cockpit while scattering crimson spark.

「Eh? Ah? What——」

That became the last sentence of the man named Vans.

『What.....the hell, is that』

『Just now, what happened!?!』

『What is going on!?!』

『Shit-, is that seriously some kind of OOPArt!?!』

Panicked voices resounded.

The sight that they witnessed.

It was a moment of a man jumping up for a few hundred meters with blood and flesh body, and then with one hand carrying a weapon that was unthinkable for any human to lift, he literally pulverized the first plane.

The wreckage of the first plane that was scattered into little pieces and shower of flesh and blood were raining down to the ground. A single black giant stake pierced the floating island like a gravestone.

The pilots that were cursing while rapidly turning their plane were treated with further absurd sight.

It was a sight of a barrage of giant stakes flying wildly everywhere.

『Sca, scatterrr!』

The plane that seemed to be the second in rank immediately gave a command, but he was already too late. One plane received a direct hit and got turned into scraps midair.

『Holy shit-, you bastard, I'll absolutely murder——』

The one speaking turned speechless. His eyes were opened wide. That was

natural. After all, the target was calmly standing midair while causing crimson ripples, furthermore at the opposite hand of the hand carrying the weapon that was shooting out giant stakes——gatling pile bunker, another giant weapon materialized.

The name of that weapon which was put on the shoulder was——Agni – Orkan. It was a weapon that displayed the most power in surface-to-air combat.

Instantly, a great number of missiles were launched.

The man that was about to spit out curse screamed soundlessly while steering his plane, but how could he possibly evade more than fifty missiles that were assaulting him from every directions. Naturally, his fate was decided.

One more flower of flame blast bloomed in the sky.

『Withdraw! We're withdrawing!』

『Mo, monster-』

The two remaining sky battlecrafts circled with a maneuver that was possibly even more outstanding than aircrafts made in earth. They tried to retreat from the battlefield right away with their highest speed.

Their speed was also amazing as expected, they had turned into the size of bean in one breath.

Hajime silently stowed away the gatling pile bunker and Agni – Orkan, and he took out the replacement weapon.

——Anti-Material Sniping Cannon Schlagen AA (Acht Acht)

Across the scope, a sky battlecraft escaping to the sky faraway was reflecting.

『That was a good lesson right? Use it as reference in hell.』

The trigger was pulled after that whisper. No matter how excellent the speed of the sky battlecraft, there was no way they could match the speed of a bullet that was accelerated electromagnetically. One plane was pierced from its back part until its front part, and then with a state that was like it was skewered, its figure was vanishing into the sea of clouds.

Hajime who was shouldering Schlagen AA called out to Tio.

「Tio. We are pursuing. We are annihilating——not, it appear that plane is returning back toward its comrade's location. Let's thoroughly have them tell us about this world.」

「Aa, yes. That's right.」

Tio was seeing Hajime tearing apart the nets capturing the dragons using cakram with a wry smile while transforming into dragon.

And then, Hajime rode on her back and she started flying in the sky with a terrific speed.

「Goshujin-sama, thank you.」

「.....For what?」

Tio didn't answer. Hajime also understood what it was about. She was happy that he exposed his wrath when the men said they would make her a pet.

Instead of answering, Tio's acceleration that was far smoother than usual told the answer more eloquently than anything.

「Now then. Was that the standard of this world's human, or else it's different, I'll have them show me.」

「Thy art really on fire.....」

Even while feeling a bit excited at the fierce gleam in the eyes of Hajime who was facing an enemy that she was seeing for the first time in a while, Tio was also feeling just a little pity at the vulgar residence of this other world who angered the demon king right from the start.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Recently, I'm becoming unable to make it in time.....I'm sorry.

Now then, just when you thought it's fantasy, it's actually half SF! That kind of story.

Tio arc, just where in the world it's going to? Even Shirakome didn't know.

But, I'm writing while picturing an enjoyable development. Just like usual!

The next update us planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 232

Arifureta After II Cannot Stay as Onlooker

The near future type aircraft made in another world was racing through the sky in a speed that left the territory of sound in the lurch.

It detoured a large cloud mountain with amazing turn to shake off something, it then accelerated in one go from its slight reduction in speed. The nozzle at the plane's rear was ejecting sparkling silver particles—the ejected amount increased explosively.

The sky battlecraft intruded into the world of the speed of sound once more along with an impact sound. The surrounding cloud was blown away from the shockwave. Its acceleration knew no end and it had easily surpassed Mach 2 already.

『NUOOOOOH-. THAT'S REALLY FAST-. AS EXPECTED FROM FIGHTER AIRCRAFT! IT'S GETTING AWAYYYYYY-』

A beat later, a black dragon appeared by charging through the cloud mountain with a desperate look. A whirling black wind was deployed around Tio. Seen from the side, it looked like there was a jet black typhoon flying horizontally.

It was Tio's flying skill that realized flying in super speed by reducing the air resistance to the extreme and furthermore she caused a spiral shaped wind around herself to convert it into propulsive power. Even if one looked at the long history of the dragon race, there didn't exist anyone that entered the realm of the speed of sound.

Therefore, something like storming into an unknown territory of speed, and what's more it didn't stop there, furthermore she was flying while maintaining a speed that was twice the speed of sound. It was truly something out of

common sense. A miraculous feat that couldn't possibly be realized without the age of god magic called sublimation magic and the assistance of artifact. Of course, there was also the delicate yet powerful skill that should be called as Tio's own special talent included in there.

Tio was unmistakably the history's fastest living thing in Tortus. However, even so it was the fact that against the aircraft that was continuously accelerating even now she was gradually getting left behind. She somehow managed to be hot at its tail because the aircraft would sometimes take evasive maneuver against the threat of Hajime's sniping but.....

『Hmm~, looks like it will be the limit soon even with the threatening. It seems he is starting to realize that we got no intention to hit him.』

『Nuu. I know that I couldst not win against fighter aircraft in a match of pure speed but.....when it comes to it, it's vexing to be left behind like this.』

『No, by the time there is a biological creature that can freely fly in the sky at speed twice the speed of sound, complete with heavy armor and high firepower, that's already a nightmare. You too has deviated much from the scope of a living thing you know?』

『I'm happy to be praised, but it's only this that I couldst not accept even with logic.』

Tio was looking at far away at the sky battlecraft that was already looked nothing but a speck in the sky while moaning「Muu」in dissatisfaction.

Seeing such Tio, for a beat Hajime tilted his head as though he was thinking of something, and right after that he grinned——and took out something.

It looked black, thin, long, and elastic——

『Here we go, Tio. Let's show our combination move.』

『Mu? What in the world——, tha, that's!?!』

Tio glanced back at Hajime's words and she opened her eyes wide in astonishment, her voice was raised half in shock and half if joy.

That thing which her gaze captured. That thing which was going to be swung right now.

——Black Whip ver 2.1 “This is not a weapon. It’s for personal use desu”

It could be easily guessed for what kind of personal use it was used for.

『GO-, TIO! UNTIL THE OTHER SIDE OF THE SKY!』

The black whip was swung down. *hyun-* It split the air and dexterously flew to right behind and made a really good sound *bechin-*.

『AA———!! HOW COULDDDDDDDD-. Thi, this sensation that hath been a while-』

『What’s the matter Tio! Your strength shouldn’t be just this much!』

Once more, *bechikon-!* The greatly twirling whip’s tip was *donpisha-* striking Tio’s butt.

『IT CAME IT CAME IT CAME-! MINE POWER IS OVERFLOWING OUT! MORE! HIT MY BUTT MOREEE! WITH THAT, I FEEL LIKE I COULDST GO FURTHER!』

『You said it! You matchless pervert dragon! I’ll give you more!』

『BRING IT O———N-!!』

Tio’s eyes were getting moist. Her mouth was leaking out heated breathing ‘haa haa’. Her body was shivering in joy and the jet black tornado enveloping her was fiercely increasing in acceleration! By using her special skill “Pain Conversion”, the reward that was granted to her by her master was giving her strength! Her speed was increasing endlessly!

The sky battlecraft that had turned into a speck was getting larger to the size of a thumb!

『PLEASE HIT ME! MINE BUTT, PLEASE TORMENT IT MORE!』

hyun hyun-hyuun- When the sound of slicing wind resounded, the sound of whip blow *bishi-, bashi-, bechikon-* was resounding as though in respond of that entreaty. By using the personal use artifact that was bypassing the black scales and granting direct and superb pain only to the internal, the hopeless dragon-san was reaching her perfect form!

The sky battlecraft at the front was reeling for an instant.

Just when he thought that he had barely escaped with his life from the

incomprehensible monster that destroyed sky battlecrafts using flesh and blood body, next a majestic black dragon that he had never seen before was chasing after him clad in jet black typhoon. In addition the dragon was moving in speed of sound and also equipped with something like laser cannon attack.

He lost count how many times he made mistake with his piloting and reduced his speed from shock.....

On top of that, a perverted roar that was mixed with excitement『HIT MINE BUTTTTT-』reached his ear as though that solemn voice was coming from the sky.

The pilot was in chaos! Next he became teary eyed! He couldn't understand what the reality was anymore!

「Glowser 4-. I believe in you! Get me out from this nightmare!」

The pilot called out to his beloved plane——Glowser 4 with a pleading voice. The mindless plane was naturally keeping silent, but due to the hard stepping on the slot pedal, it was displaying its ability until the very limit of its performance.

Based from the specification, it was a super fast sky battlecraft that could reach the maximum speed of Mach 4.4 in pure straight line. It left behind explosive sound that was like the air ruptured and dashed through the sky like a streak of meteor.

Behind it, the hopeless dragon-san was chasing right on its tail! The owner-san riding on her back was swinging around “personal not weapon” without pause in high spirits! Howls of joy were resounding through the vast sky! Tio Claus was outdoing modern aircraft!

『ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-, you got slightly left behind! Put your strength into your ass! This damned hopeless dragon-』

『AHHHHHHH! I CAME! I'M COMING TO BEYOND THE SKYYYYYYYYY-』

「Just what the hell-. Please no more-. Someone HELP MEEEEEEEEEE-」

The sky was blue. The wind was refreshing, the sea of clouds was beautiful.

Amidst such magnificent nature, three different roars from three different

people were.....

It was truly, a chaos.

A while after chaos was spread in the azure sky,

『Hics.....』

「Don't cry Tio. You set a new record you know? You are without a doubt the fastest living thing in history. You are amazing. In various meaning.」

There was the figure of Tio who was flying in normal speed while sobbing and Hajime who was consoling her.

It stood to reason. Tio who reached the realm of four times the speed of sound even though it was just for a moment was unmistakably an existence that had deviated from the scope of living thing and could be said to have entered the realm of god. But, even so, she was unable to match the endurance of the near future type aircraft of another world that could maintain such speed continuously. In the end she was left behind like this and her pride got hurt.

『It's vexing, how vexing』

「Come on, stop crying already. You are amazing okay.」

Hajime exposed a gentle expression that was unthinkable coming from the person who just now was exhibiting a storm-like whipping while laughing loudly. He was patting *pon pon* and caressing Tio's black scale.

To be given the carrot after the whip, Tio drew in her tear of vexation and continued「But.....」while enveloped in aura of happiness.

『We let go of a source that we couldst finally communicate with. What wouldst we do from here, Goshujin-sama.』

「H~m, let's see. We can also return to the floating island just now and investigate the cause that make the island float, but we had flown really far from there. Let's try to go for a bit toward the direction that guy is flying to.」

『Well, in this first place this art an aimless adventure, I don't mind that.』

While saying such thing, the two continued to fly carefreely in pursuit of

someone who they didn't know how far he had escaped.

Sometimes Hajime would change their route randomly saying things like「Let's try going over there」or「Let's try going toward that cloud」. Tio would tilt her head thinking「He is not in the mood of chasing anymore?」, even so there wasn't any particular reason for her to object so she would continue fly following the instruction.

Like that, they must have flew continuously for half a day.

Midway, they were discovering several floating islands while advancing through scenery that wasn't really changing. The time was finally starting to enter a period where the sun was starting to sink at the other side of the sea of clouds.

Inside the world that was painfully beautiful dyed in madder red color, it appeared.

「Hee. This thing is also really big. Is this a mother ship I wonder?」

『.....It's not clear if this is the place where that guy escaped. Well, though it doth not feel like we art mistaken based on the direction and distance.』

「Ou. We aren't mistaken.」

For a moment, Tio directed a really speechless expression at Hajime, but she immediately pulled herself together and asked「What wouldst we do?」

Hajime showed a thinking gesture while staring at the thing ahead of his gaze.

It was a large flying warship vacantly shining dull grey from the illumination of the sun's orange light. Its shape was similar with a blimp in earth's term. It had a small but wide shape like a rugby ball. Thinking how it was made from metal, its shape as a while was unsuited for flying, but it was giving a definite sense of stability even seen from afar. It was ejecting out sparkling silver particles to the back while flying with considerable speed.

Its size was about as big as two aircraft carriers in earth. Seeing really closely at it, there were countless cylindrical protrusions on its exterior. There was no need to guess that those were weapons on board the ship. Countless small square hatches were lining up. There was no doubt that those were for the

loaded weapon like missiles or the like.

‘This is becoming even more like SF’ —Hajime was thinking of such thing while speaking out their plan.

「Yosh, the situation changed from pure fantasy to semi-SF. We too will job change from adventurer to spy.」

『H, hmm? In other words, we art going to infiltrate?』

「Yeah, somehow I’m getting thrilled. Tio, dispel your transformation. We are sneaking into that mother ship overflowing with romance——Goliao with camouflaging artifact fully deployed.」(TN: Goliath is a destroyer ship in Laputa)

『It feels like that temporary name art telling the fate that ship wouldst meet though.....the flag of its sinking art as likely as a certain Titanio-san』

Tio was saying such thing while emitting a bright flash from her transformation cancellation. She was hovering with her wings showed out using partial transformation. Hajime also took out a skyboard from “Treasure Warehouse II” that he rode on. He activated pencil Cross Velt and deployed barrier for camouflage.

「Do those guys have the technology that can break our camouflage.....we won’t know until we try it.」

「What wouldst we do if we art discovered?」

「Of course, we will have a peaceful dialogue. After all I am a virtuous and exemplary Japanese. If I tell them that I’ll at least spare their life if they hand over the guy screwing around before this, then surely both sides will be able to build a friendly relationship.」

「Goshujin-sama, that’s a joke correct? Thy face art serious and thy voice art flat, but that’s a joke correct? Isn’t that right?」

Haijme-san didn’t answer. Since the ancient time a good Japanese boy was a taciturn person!

In a state that was without sound, and without shape if seen from outside, and furthermore without heat that couldn’t be detected, the two of them approached sii~~lently from behind the mother ship. They could feel how big it

was the closer they got.

The two who arrived above the mother ship removed away the skyboard and wings before landing on the edge of a giant deck.

「.....This is unknown metal, but it doesn't have any particular effect. I guess it's a normal metal.」

「So this thing art floating not because of the metal.」

Hajime whispered while kneeling on the deck with his hand crawling on the smooth floor. Tio was paying attention to the surrounding but there wasn't any human sign on the deck. At the central part there was a sticking out place that seemed to be the control room of the mother ship. They could see glimpses of human silhouettes across the windbreak. They couldn't make the judgment whether that place was really the control room or just a watchtower.

「Goshujin-sama. Although we hath invisibility barrier, I just couldst not calm down no matter what by staying for long in a place this open. I couldst see something like an entrance over there, how about we hath a look for now?」

「I guess. I'm curious with the material and some other things but.....well, I can just take some sample with me.」

Hajime said such thing and he casually tore off a railing and stored it into "Treasure Warehouse II". The area part around ten meters from the door that seemed to be the entrance became uneven as though it had been gnawed by worms.

What a natural vandalism & larceny. Police officer, catch this demon king please.

Whether he actually noticed the amazed expression of Tio behind him, Hajime whose mood to be stealthy was zero despite being in the middle of infiltration was advancing through the deck briskly and reached in front of the door that connected to inside. He covered the whole door with barrier so to not ring any alarm from the difference in air pressure and the like and he put his hand on the door to investigate if there was any trap.

And then he used transmutation and changed the door into a mere hole and stepped inside also with a casual attitude. Tio followed in and the door was

returned to its former shape again with transmutation. Lock or anything was meaningless in front of a transmutation master.

「For now, infiltration success.」

「How strange. This art different from the infiltration that I know though.」

Hajime nodded in satisfaction that there wasn't any alarm that got triggered. Tio's expression was really complicated.

Both of them paid attention to the presence at their surrounding while advancing forward. They progressed through the passage of smooth metal. Several places were gouged by Hajime-san's hand. He was like someone who was using coin to scratch cars on the roadside while casually strolling. It was truly a nasty prank (?).

「The driving force is likely to be at the rear of the hull. Also, that place n the highest position, it must be the watchtower or the control room.」

「That sparkling particles must be one of the reason the island art floating. Then, should we search the rear hull first?」

Hajime thought for a bit before nodding at Tio's suggestion.

「Yeah, I want to quickly carve the meaning of regret to that guy who got away but, well, we know he is inside this ship anyway, we can put him for later.」

「.....Right.」

Both of them vaguely headed toward the rear hull. In contrast with how big the ship was, the corridors inside were unexpectedly narrow. Three people walking side by side would feel cramped.

Naturally on the way they encountered a lot of the ship's crew.

Hajime and Tio who were able to detect the other party's position using Presence Detection before they bumped with each other kept advancing forward without getting discovered.

Even in the case they encountered a small group inside the small corridor, they would jump to the ceiling and pierced the ceiling with fingers thrust and clung there until the group passed, or created an appropriate gap on the wall using transmutation and pushed their body into there until the group passed.

The mood was really like a certain spy somewhere. Hajime's expression was in enjoyment as though his childlike innocence had returned to him.

By the way, when they were clinging on the ceiling, Hajime would turn into something like human hammock to take hold of Tio, and when they slipped into the gap created in the wall, Hajime would embrace Tio tightly, so Tio herself was also really having much fun with it in feeling embarrassed and happy.

「It seems there art a proper country existing. They look like military personnel. Their ethics art low, but they hath obedience for the chain of command.」

「Yeah. They are proper military with pecking order divided into ranks. The military can deploy an expedition of this scale means that their country also has quite the scale.」

The two made their conjecture based from the figures of the crews who were wearing unified uniform even if in different color schemes, the conversation the two overheard, and in addition how the weapon the crews were armed with were obviously guns also with uniform made.

Even while conversing like that, the two were enjoying their game of spy make-believe to their heart's content, slipped through several doors, passed through several spacious rooms, descended several stairs, and then they came out into a particularly large corridor at the lowest floor where they suddenly smelled an unpleasant smell.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other's face with a grimace at the familiar offensive smell and they followed the smell as though in invitation.

They could hear talking voices from the other side of the corridor's corner. Both of them peeked out from the corner.

「Oi, did you heard? Those guys from Glowser squad, they were annihilated except Higgs.」

「Is that, true? Just what in the world happened huh. Was it those Avenst bunches?」

「Might be. But, among the Glowser squad that *came out for supply*, it's only the messed up Higgs who came back in terror. That one seems true. Is it that

scary just by getting attacked by those bunches?」

「That's.....perhaps, they used new weapon?」

「You think those bunches has that kind of power huh. They are just air pirate that keep spewing out delusional words like tradition or pride or whatever you know?」

「Then, why do you think Higgs got that scared against the like of those bunches?」

「Ain't no way I know that even if you ask me.」

The two men were leaning on the corridor's wall while speaking out several concerning information. The source of the smell certainly came from those two. It was obvious from a glance. The reason was because their work clothes that looked like overall was drenched in blood.

There was a large door in front of them. They must be doing work that drenched them in blood there. The two didn't really want to imagine what was being done inside there. Most likely the men were in the middle of break right now.

「Well, anyway, it's fact that we lost four sky battlecrafts. After all we are ordered to extract spare fuel for aircraft like this.」

「You're, right.」

The two workers sighed at their comrades' misfortune. It wasn't clear how strong their feeling of fellowship against their comrades from their conversation. However, it seemed certain that the work which drenched them with blood was necessary to replenish the sky battlecrafts that Hajime shot down.

The two workers took a puff of something that seemed to be cigar before returning inside the room feeling that it was bothersome. When they entered, an intense smell——blood smell was overflowing from behind the opened door.

「Goshujin-sama.」

「Yeah, let's go.」

The two's personality weren't so cute that they would falter just from smell of

blood after this far. In order to ascertain the true identity of the “fuel” that was the source to make the sky battlecraft, and perhaps also this mother ship and the floating island to float, Hajime and Tio approached the room.

The door was a sliding type, most likely it would automatically close after a certain time. Hajime and Tio slipped inside the room before the sliding door closed.

And then, they witnessed it. The cause of why those pilots were trying to capture the dragons alive. And also the true form of the “fuel”.

Inside the room was spacious. It had the height of two floors with length and width that could reach a hundred meter. Three sides of the walls were made from cages without any gap in between, there was some kind of work stand at the middle of the room. Several things that looked like crane and arm were protruding from the ceiling and floor.

The cages were filled with dragon and nothing else. The dragons’ size, color, and shape were varied, but they were living things that were obviously dragon from a glance. There were also grey dragons like the dragons they were playing with at the previous island. Even the biggest of the dragons here didn’t surpass three meter, most were only small dragon with size around one or two meter. There were also dragons with size around thirty centimeters among them.

The center of the room was truly in a state of sea of blood. There was a large work stand and a dragon was lying down there and fixed in place by several arms. The dragon already didn’t have light in its eyes, blood was still flowing from its ripped open chest onto the floor.

There were around ten workers including the previous two. One of them was carefully washing a small silver stone that taken out just now from the dragon.

And then, the stone was entered into a machine nearby, and after the worker confirmed something that was displayed by the machine, he handed over the stone to other worker. The worker who received the small silver stone inserted it into another machine and he controlled the machine while confirming something several times.

Like that, the small stone that had uneven shape before this was processed into a clean square chip.

The silver stone that was processed into a square chip was then handed again to another worker. That worker inserted the chip to the bottom of cylinder machine that looked like a thermos connected to a cord. And then, after he pressed several buttons, the meter display at the side of the cylinder machine was starting to shine silver sequentially from below.

After witnessing until that far, Hajime muttered with a small sound and expressionless face.

「.....I see. So the dragon of this world also has something like a magic stone.」

「And by processing that, they couldst obtained this “fuel”.」

Tio who nodded beside Hajime was similarly expressionless like Hajime in contrast with her comprehending words. Her voice had no intonation at all.

「Surely the floating island also has similar ore like that.Geez, it will be fantasy world banzai if this end just with that. This really left a bad taste.」

「But, just because of that, we couldst not stop them or resent them. For them who are living in the sky because of the polluted land, dragon hunting art truly a matter of life and death. Perhaps obstructing them from doing that art the same like saying ‘die’ to them after all.」

「Yeah.」

To say further, because Tio was a person of dragon race, she had just a little emotional attachment toward dragon species, even so, if it was said that these dragons were monster unrelated to her then that’s that. Even in Tortus, she wouldn’t hesitate to exterminate a monster of dragon species.

But, as expected, the likable dragons she first met in this another world flashed at the corner of her mind. Therefore, there was no way she could think nothing about this work of making dragon as battery replacement.

It was just as Hajime said, even though they could understand what they were doing, but it left a “bad taste” inside.

「Let’s go Tio. It’s enough already.」

「Right.」

They had seen and known something disgusting——Hajime and Tio left the

room with such feeling. The weak cry of the dragons that sometimes reached their ear sounded like a cry for help to the two of them. Even though they knew that it was just their imagination, they couldn't help but sigh deeply.

Like that, Hajime and Tio were about to step out of the room, it was at that time,

gouuun-

A sound that resounded to the bottom of their stomach, and along with that G force assaulted their body as though the ship was accelerating all at once.

The sudden change was nothing for Hajime and Tio, but several of the workers were stumbling or fell on their butt.

『Announcement from the control room. Sighting of Avenst is confirmed. This ship will enter battle action from here on. All crew, go to your post right away. Repeat, this ship will enter battle action from here on. All crew, go to your post right away.』

At the same time with the shrilly alert sound inside the ship, a broadcast to the whole ship resounded. The announcement from the control room commanded the sortie of the sky battlecraft squad, in addition, an order that commanded the workers in this room to hurry with the resupply was given.

The situation inside the ship suddenly turned hurried. The workers put around ten of the cylindrical machine like just now into a case and put the case on a trolley before going out of the room with fast steps.

Following them, Hajime exited from the room while opening his mouth with a pensive look.

「Avenst, is that the air pirate those guys talked about just now?」

「Perhaps so. It's unknown whether this is a coincidence or inevitability, but it appeared this wouldst be a battle.」

The two didn't know the battle strength of the other party, but it was unthinkable for a regular army that belonged to a country could be done in by a "pirate" group at best.

However, even so, an army in possession of unknown battle strength would

battle an enemy with similarly unknown strength. They would like to be spared from harmoniously staying inside this ship in the unlikely chance that this mother ship got shot down.

「Let's get out quickly. We grasped the cause of the floating phenomenon already, and I smell a bit of danger from the energy that might result from the destruction of the power reactor that grant the absurd propulsive force to this mother ship. Let's take some distance and watch the situation.」

「Right. That art the wise choice.」

Hajime was thoroughly ignoring the flurried activity inside the ship while taking shortcut to get outside by irresponsibly opening stair shaped hole on the floor using transmutation, before he opened his mouth as though he recalled something.

「Come to think of it, that survivor.....if I remember correct, his name is “Sniff” is it?」

「Indeed, I think that person kept sobbing without end since he encountered us, but his name art not Sniff, but “Higgs”. Goshujin-sama, you only get the “i” correctly.」

「Well, it doesn't matter if he is Hics or Huggs. Sorry, looks like we don't get the time to beat him up.」

「Such thing.....I'm not really concerned of that. Just knowing that Goshujin-sama got angry for mine sake already made me need replacement panty.」

「No need to worry. I thought that might be the case, so I stocked panties for your use inside the Treasure Warehouse.」

「What, the? Thi, this art the first time I heard that.」

「Yue made me brought them. Some time ago there was a chance when I went out with just you right? At that time, she said something like『Did you bring your handkerchief? Your wallet? Tio's panty? Geez, it's no good to be forgetful. Nn-』.」

「What legal wife power.....」

The two of them were doing that kind of stupid conversation as though to

wash off the unpleasant feeling from just now while Hajime used the hole that he arbitrarily opened out in the hull to jump out from the mother ship that was cruising in high speed to outside where the winds were buzzing thunderously. Tio also jumped out after Hajime.

Hajime wasted no time riding his skyboard while Tio also revealed her dragon wings. They were taking distance from the mother ship while starting to fly in parallel with it.

Hajime laid out a camouflage barrier that wholly covered both him and Tio, then he turned his gaze to what the mother ship was pursuing.

The flying ship of the air pirate called Avenst had similar shape with the mother ship, but its size was only a third of the mother ship. Different from the mother ship, its rear hull wasn't emitting silver particle, but white light that even looked colorless.

The speed difference between two sides was evident, the sky battlecrafts that flew out from the mother ship quickly caught up and began their offensive.

The airship of the air pirate endured the attack with skilful maneuver while intercepting using the weapon on board so that the sky battlecrafts couldn't get near. In addition, sky battlecrafts were also launched from the airship of the air pirate, and they were also displaying splendid dogfight technique while protecting their ship from the assaulting enemy.

「It seems the air pirate is inferior in equipment and number, but their skill is better.」

「The speed difference art obvious, and their turning ability and weapons art also inferior in a glance, yet they art splendidly enduring. But.....」

「Yeah, the difference in strength is hopeless.」

Yes, no matter how skilled the air pirates were, their battle strength was overwhelmingly insufficient. Even from a quick count, the difference in number of sky battlecraft was three times, the power of their Vulcan and their missile weapon's maneuverability were so weak that the spectator would want to avert their eyes from looking.

Most likely, the air pirate's side would get shot down if they got hit by a single

missile or several bullets from the Vulcan. In contrast, the sky battlecraft of the army side, putting aside the missile, it seemed like their battle capability wouldn't be affected even if they got hit dozens of times just by the Vulcan of the air pirate's sky battlecraft.

The air pirate was facing against an enemy with several times their number, they couldn't hope to shoot down the enemy without landing hits several times as many and they also couldn't shake off the enemy using speed. The preeminent skill of the pilots was displaying a miraculous defense that would make any spectator to spontaneously sigh in admiration, but it was obvious that too was only a matter of time.

「No matter how you look at it, it's not that the air pirate came attacking, but they unfortunately got discovered by the army.....something like that.」

「O, Goshujin-sama. It looks like the mother ship of the air pirate art changing course. Hou, it seems they art planning to plunge into those clouds that looks like a mountain range see?」

They could see a giant waterfall of cloud at the left side. The river of cloud was flowing down like vapor of dry ice falling to the ground from the towering mountain range of cloud that looked like it was continuing until the end of the world. It was merely a place with height difference among the sea of clouds, but seen from the side it indeed looked like a mountain range of cloud.

Inside the sea of clouds was a place where black rain that caused necrosis on the cells and fierce lightning were raging. As expected, was the airship and sky battlecrafts of the air pirate that seemed to have low spec able to endure that environment.....

No matter how they thought about it, this was obviously a sink-or-swim gamble. But, either way it was only a matter of time until the air pirate got shot down at this rate. There was no doubt that for the air pirate too they had no other choice then to make this gamble.

The airship of the air pirate was starting to swivel left as though drawing a large arc. It was already partly damaged from getting shot several times by the army's air battlecrafts. Even so, it was evading the powerful cannon and missile from the mother ship, so it was still an amazing skill that they were displaying.

Although, if it was asked whether they could escape like that,

「.....It will be harsh.」

「Yes.」

The mother ship was approaching until nearby already. The nearer it got, the more accurate their bombing became. No matter how divine the skill of the pilot was, there would be nothing they could do if the distance was closed further than this.

It was really unthinkable that the air pirate would be able to reach until the cloud mountain range.

Hajime and Tio were watching that sight. Of course, the two wouldn't head out to give reinforcement. These people were the "pirate" of this world. The outlaw that ignored the rule which protected many. This wasn't a good problem to be mucked up irresponsibly by people of another world who came just to fulfill their curiosity of wanting a bit of adventure.

No matter how problematic the moral of the army's pilots, no matter how the "fuel" production left them with bad taste, it was completely unthinkable for them to be the air pirate's ally because of that.

As expected, the environment and the way of living of the people in this world were a bit too severe for the two of them to purely have fun here——Hajime and Tio smiled bitterly. They didn't have the disgusting hobby of purposely enjoying the death of many people, so they averted their gaze thinking to withdraw from this airspace.

But, the destiny or something following Hajime and co around wasn't that good of a guy that would let them get away that simply. All the events that happened at other world Tortus, tumbling into another world like this when they came out just for a little stroll, then how that world had ended already, furthermore having the scene of a battle between two factions unfolding in front of their eyes like this.....

——Piiiiiiiiih

「Aa?」

「Mu?」

In the battlefield that was decorated with explosion roars, howling wind, and orange flame blasts, suddenly a high-pitched sound reverberated. It sounded like blown whistle, however, there was compelling desperation filled into that—crying voice.

Hajime and Tio who reflexively returned their gaze to the battlefield caught a presence of something small rapidly approaching them.

A shining silver small creature was flying, weaving its way through the orange gap of the explosions and the light of the setting sun that illuminated from the interval of the sea of clouds and sky. It was a small but magnificent dragon.

「Piuh. Piiiiiih」

The silver small dragon was desperately flapping its wings while raising a cry that sounded like it would tear up its throat.

‘A lost dragon?’ Hajime and Tio thought doubtfully, but they immediately noticed. That small existence was staring straight at the two of them, no, more accurately it was staring straight at Tio.

Hajime looked at the pencil Cross Velts floating around them. They were functioning normally. The camouflage barrier was going strong. Their form, smell, and heat shouldn’t be possible to be detected. But, the small dragon heading at their direction was going straight at Tio no matter how he looked.

Hajime suddenly brought his face closer to Tio and his nose sniffed repeatedly.

「Wha, what is it, Goshujin-sama? As expected it’s embarrassing to have mine body suddenly sniffed at.」

「No, I’m wondering if you have a unique smell that even my artifact cannot hide.」

「.....Right now, it shouldst not be wrong of me for thinking of wanting to hit Goshujin-sama.」

Tio who was unusually angry was pushing on Hajime’s face with her hand to make distance while her cheeks were blushing slightly.

Even while they were doing that, the small dragon arrived at their position, 「Pii! Piih!」it was crying out while circling around the two. It appeared that it was really detecting their presence without any doubt whatsoever.

「Oi oi, what's with it? It's looking really desperate somehow.」

「.....Don't tell me, is it looking for help?」

Tio stared at the tiny dragon with an expression that was lost for words. She was wondering why a dragon that should be fearful against human was trying to get involved with human conflict. Hajime was also cocking his head in puzzlement.

But, the strange matter was continuing further.

Of all thing, the pirate that should be heading desperately to the cloud mountain range was swiveling greatly while bending their path. The direction the ship's nose was pointing was at——the direction of Hajime and Tio.

「What's going on? Don't tell me the camouflage barrier is really broken?」

「No Goshujin-sama. I'm only guessing, but this child might be the cause?」

「They are turning midair to chase after a small dragon when they are in the brink of getting shot down anytime? I seriously don't understand what's the meaning of that.」

Perhaps the army also noticed the small dragon's existence seeing how the air pirate changed course, surprisingly several sky battlecrafts broke away from the front line and approached here. Even though they should be pressuring the greatly skilled air pirate's sky battlecraft, yet they still approached the small dragon even if they left behind a hole in their side's battle force.

At the same time, the sky battlecrafts of the air pirate also ignored the defense of their own mother ship and flew out toward the small dragon.

「.....Just who in world art thou?」

Tio unconsciously asked at the small dragon that was desperately pleading something. The air pirate that pursued the small dragon even if they had to throw away their life. The pursuing army that left behind the air pirate even though it was just a bit more before they could finish them off.

It was already obvious that this small silver dragon wasn't just a mere stray dragon.

「Chih. I don't know what's going on, but at this rate we will get dragged in. Tio, we are finished being a spectator. We are withdrawing from this airspace right away.」

「Mu, acknowledged.」

The two were curious with the small dragon's existence, but it was out of the question for them to get saddled with an existence that was unanimously pursued by the army and air pirate. Hajime and Tio nodded at each other and tried to leave that place.

That moment, as though guessing the intention of the two, the small dragon blocked their route. And then, it began to emit silver right immediately after.

Tio and Hajime unconsciously stopped moving seeing the dazzlingly shining small dragon that looked solemn somehow. Inside their head, a pleading resounded. It sounded vaguely childish, yet filled with a greatly earnest feeling.

『Help-, help! King, please! Everyone, my friends, help them-』

They didn't hear any clear words. But, that feeling was certainly conveyed to them.

Hajime and Tio couldn't hide their bewilderment. They looked at each other while standing still.

Instantly, a sound wave impact assaulted the area.

「Piuh!?!」

「Uoh」

「Nuwah. This art from that time!」

It was the sound wave attack like what the sky battlecraft emitted at the floating island. Furthermore this one had more power than that time. It even generated physical shockwave that mercilessly attacked Hajime and others.

Naturally, Hajime and Tio weren't damaged, but the small dragon wasn't unharmed. The small dragon that was emitting a mysterious silver light got

blown away by the impact and furthermore it was falling limply as though its consciousness was cut off.

「Ah, hey, get a hold of thyself!」

Tio spontaneously leaped out and held the small dragon with both hands.

「Tio! Don't daydream!」

「Nu?」

The sky battlecraft of the army passed through instantly. When Hajime gave her warning, it was after the second planes following behind it had launched the missile that deployed net like the time at the floating island.

The special net burst in front of her eyes and it spread widely to envelop its target.

Hajime cut in between just before it could envelop Tio and the fainted little dragon.

「HAAH!!」

A yell of fighting spirit. The magic power that was gushed out directionally was converted into physical impact due to the skill “Magic Shockwave”. The crimson wave that possessed immense power blown away the cage net far away without any trouble.

After the second plane passed through, the third plane that was further approaching was decelerating while deploying something that looked like a hook from its lower part. Most likely it would use that hook to catch the cage net and carried it until the mother ship.

The pilot of the approaching third plane opened wide his eyes in shock.

After all, just when they were about to capture the small dragon by a beautiful coordination, suddenly a winged beautiful woman appeared midair and caught the small dragon in her embrace, furthermore the cage net was blown away by a crimson wave and in the end a man riding a flying board also appeared after that, that was why it was impossible for him to not get shocked.

Yes, Tio got out of the camouflage range when she leaped out, and Hajime also exposed himself because he fired the magic shockwave.

The tough-looking hook flying out from the rapidly approaching third plane's lower part was about to hit Hajime and Tio and the small dragon behind him.

The fingers of Hajime's right hand bended like claws. He instantly swung his right hand toward the hook that almost hit him.

By doing that, what was left behind was the figure of Hajime that was reduced into a pile of meat and got sent flying——was naturally not what happened. There was only the sight of the torn apart wreckages disappearing into the sea of clouds.

The sky battlecraft that pursued after the army's sky battlecrafts swiveled greatly to avoid Hajime and Tio.

When Hajime sent a glance, as expected, the air pirate pilot was also showing a shocked expression as though his eyeballs were going to fly out. He looked really like「WHAT THE HELLLLLLLLLLLLLL-」

「Tio, how is the dragon?」

「Hmm, looks like it's just losing consciousness without any serious wound.Forgive me, Goshujin-sama. Because I unconsciously jumped out, we art dragged into something troublesome.」

Tio showed an apologetic face while approaching Hajime's side. Hajime shrugged while smiling wryly to that.

「If your body moved by itself, then that must be the action that Tio want to do from your heart. Then I don't really mind that. First of all, it's too late already saying we are dragged into troublesome matter by this time. This kind of thing can also happen from putting on air as onlooker.」

「Ye, yes. I see. Thank you Goshujin-sama.」

Tio's lips loosened up greatly hearing Hajime's indifferent speech. And then, for some reason Tio seemed to be nestling even closer than before to Hajime.

Ahead of Hajime's gaze, the scene of the air pirate's airship approaching and the army's mother ship circling around the two of them was unfolding. The sky battlecrafts were circling around Hajime and Tio in circles with wariness and bewilderment.

Seeing that kind of sight, Hajime's wry smile deepened and he muttered.

「Now then, first how about we try starting with a peaceful “talk”.」

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just a little notice, the comic version that is in the middle of serialization in Overlap-sama's homepage was update.

Damn, seriously damn. The impact at the fight against the claw bear among other things is just damn.

It really has impact and I can enjoy Hajime in his early day at abyss with another fresh feeling.

If you are interested, please take a look by all means!

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 233

Arifureta After II The Legendary Dragon Knight

『Ee, everyone. This is sudden, but we are not anyone suspicious by any means. In this situation, we should strive to reach a mutual understanding peacefully, by means of communication like a cultured human shouldn't wee-』

The voice of Hajime that was amply filled with sincerity was resounding through the whole airspace. He was appealing by using telepathy, so his voice should undoubtedly reach both the army and the air pirate.

While the air pirate's airship and the army's mother ship that was located diagonally right behind it were approaching, Hajime was hovering midair while showing a friendly smile. The first impression was truly the most important thing in forming personal relationship.

Tio who was nestling close beside him was nursing the small dragon in her arms while acting the straight-man「No matter how they look, thou only look like someone suspicious though」, but it didn't even give a single scratch at Hajime's ignoring skill.

Hajime lifted up both his hands to appeal that he had no hostility while he continued his words like a cultured modern-day person.

『We don't have any hostile intention. No, honestly! I'm not lying at all! It will be a cold day in hell before I lie. A person like me is saying that, that's why there can be no doubt about it. We don't have any hostile intention!』

「It sounds extremely fishy.....」

Tio-san beside Hajime was saying something. But his ignoring skill level had reached the max value so there was no problem.

『Everyone, it appears that all of you are pursuing after this rug rat dragon, but

the two of us don't need it! Rather, we are even thinking seriously whether we should just toss this thing away over there.』

‘We don't have any intention of snatching your prey okaaay!’ Hajime appealed so, but for some reason hostility was overflowing from the pilots of both factions circling at the surrounding. Especially all the pilot-san of the air pirate, their rage was fierce. They were laying out their protest by punching *bang bang* at their cockpit's windbreaker.

『.....It was a joke. Just now was a joke filled with wits. That was my consideration to everyone trying to calm down this place. Anyway, we don't have any intention of snatching this thing, so we will hand over this rug rat. Owner-san, please come out to the fro~~nt』

For some reason, when Hajime said “rug rat” or “owner”, the killing intent of the air pirate pilots doubled. Somehow he got the feeling that the more he talked the more their hostility got fanned up.

Even while Hajime was making speech like that, the airship of the air pirate had approached until nearby.

There, perhaps their mental petrification against the really strange duo was finally dispelled, the air battle force of the army side was starting to move.

It seemed that it was the fact that they tried to capture the small dragon alive, so instead of attacking Hajime and Tio, they resumed their attack toward the airship.

Perhaps it should be called as an abnormal obsession, because the airship was recklessly charging forward without even taking evasive action. It was getting bombed directly and got damaged all over.

The pilots of the air pirate side returned fire. However, because their number was reduced by the army's overwhelming attack, and how the airship wasn't taking sufficient evasive action, and then, because there were Hajime and Tio——or more accurately the small dragon nearby, their movement got restrained and they were unable to deploy in a defensive battle like before.

『Ee, everyone, let's calm down for now. I will hand over this rug ra——this young dragon, so both sides, please stop your ship. Let's talk it with each other

about the handing over——』

「Please match your speed with usss-. And then, give Kuwaibel to me! Please-」

An amplified voice of a woman——no, a girl reached Hajime, cutting off his speech.

When Hajime turned his gaze there, he could see on the front deck of the airship that was charging to here, a girl carrying something that looked like a megaphone was leaning his body forward on the handrail that she looked like she could fall off anytime. Behind the girl was a tall blonde haired young woman and a young man with the same blonde hair standing by, they were desperately holding the girl who looked like she could fall off anytime.

The girl's silver semi-long hair was wild from the strong wind. But, the girl's expression was even wilder than that. Looking closer she was a beauty. However, her eyes that were greatly slanting upward and her desperate looked that even resembled an ogre were honestly at a creepy level.

But, her figure that was reaching out her hand earnestly and sincerely even when she knew that she wouldn't reach conveyed the seriousness of the girl.

The ship wasn't decelerating. It would get shot down if it stopped. It was something definite. That was why the girl yelled for Hajime to match his speed pleadingly.

The airship was passing through so close it almost grazed Hajime and Tio. The girl was still reaching out her hand with a despairing and grieving expression.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other's face.

「Aa~. It looks like they also know the name of this rug rat, and based on the situation, perhaps what this thing meant by friend refer to the air pirate——let's toss this thing to that girl and get away from here.」

「This hath really become troublesome in various aspects, I understand.」

They nodded once. Hajime and Tio started sliding backward with a sudden speed.

The movement that wholly ignored things like propulsive force or dynamics caused several pilots who were looking for chance to open their eyes wide in

shock.

Hajime and Tio instantly approached the airship's deck.

The girl's expression greatly brightened up. The blonde hair duo behind her looked wary.

Perhaps thinking that the small dragon was going to be handed over, the mother ship behind the airship launched innumerable number of missiles. It seemed that it took into consideration that the small dragon was nearby, so its main cannon the majestic 3-gun turrets stayed silent, but in front of nearly fifty missiles, it was hard to say that it was "fortunate".

The Vulcan cannon loaded aboard the airship spouted fire, shooting down the missile swarm, but in the first place it couldn't take evasive action. The sky battlecraft pilots also joined in the interception, but naturally by doing that the respond toward the army's sky battlecraft thinned down.

One plane slipped through the defensive line of the air pirate and launched its missile.

Most likely its aim was the bridge. Human silhouettes could be seen across the windbreaker of a place that was jutting out in the central position of the airship.

The girl and the blonde haired duo opened their eyes wide. They were staring dumbfounded at their last moment——

Ahead of their gaze, one smoking sky battlecraft barged in. It slipped between the bridge and the flying missile without any hesitation.

It was a shield with one's life on the line. For a "pirate", that skill, that spirit, that everything was noble.

Flame blast illuminated the bridge, the girl and others on the deck, and Hajime and Tio who were flying parallel to the airship.

The plane's rear part was pulverized and the front nose was torn to pieces. It was merely luck that the cockpit wasn't blasted off.

But, there wasn't any concept of bail out or anything for the pilot of this world. The reason was because there was nothing but the sea of clouds below

when they ejected out, inside that was a hell that rejected human's survival.

「Bovid-!!」

The girl's pained voice resounded at the interstice of the wind's howl. Even though she wasn't using megaphone, but her voice resounded excessively clearly was surely because the pilot was an important people for her.

「.....Good grief. Well, I'm a Japanese after all?」

For some reason Hajime was making a strange excuse while taking out something from "Treasure Warehouse II" that he threw away. That thing which was flying in a high speed that was unthinkable to be reached just from a snap of the wrist slid right under the cockpit part that was about to vanish into the sea of clouds.

And then, that thing that spread out with *kashun*- sound——variable type chakram "Orestes" swallowed the cockpit along with the pilot through its center.

The girls and co leaked out「Eh?」, at the same time another Orestes that was also thrown on the deck unfolded and the cockpit fell from there. The deck got dented along with a loud impact sound. The pilot who returned safely (?) looked dazed from being unable to comprehend what happened.

Hajime caught the returning Orestes while calling at the girl and co who were dumbfounded at the unbelievable sight.

「O~i, you over there! You are this guy's owner——not that, you're his friend? You are aren't you?」

「Eh? A, e, u, tha, that's rightttt!」

Hajime asked while poking at the small dragon Tio was carrying. The girl was in a state of 'presently in chaos!', however she somehow returned word of affirmative.

Hajime nodded「Yosh」.

「Then, I'll return him, so catch him properly okaaay!」

「Eh? Catch? Eh?」

Hajime directed a really nice smile at the girl who was all flustered and all shook up. He ignored Tio who was speaking hesitantly「No, Goshujin-sama. Although the situation is as it is, that art a bit.....」, and he strongly grasped the small dragon in an eagle grip.

And then, he tossed it away「Hoi-」with a really casual feeling.

「WAITTTTTTTTTT-, WHAT ARE YOU DOINGGGGGG-」

The girl screamed, however she did that while running on the deck with surprising swiftness and performed a dive catch at the falling small dragon. At that occasion, she also seemed to perform a face sliding, but she seemed to be unexpectedly tough because right after she lifted the small dragon to show at the panicked blonde hair duo.

That figure looked like an outfielder baseball player showing up his fine play, or it closely resembled a person of a certain unpopulated island going「I CAUGHT ITT———!!」. The blonde hair duo was rushing to the girl while applauding. (TN: Click [here](#) if you want to see the pose. I don't really know what this refer too. Perhaps some kind of TV show in Japan?)

Seeing their figure like that, Hajime showed a really satisfied smile that seemed to say「Today too I'm accumulating up good deed yeah」before he used telepathy once more.

『Everyone, with this we are not involved anymore. From the start we are just a passing by people of virtue, and so, we will quickly vanish so that we won't be a bother to everyone. Well then-』

Hajime prompted Tio and he rotated his skyboard. The skyboard turned 90 degree left from the course of the air pirate. That was a course that distanced away from the cloud mountain range. Hajime predicted that the air pirate who had recovered the small dragon would head toward the cloud mountain range in order to escape the army, so he chose a course that was the exact opposite from that route.

But, destiny-san wouldn't let such a shallow demon king-san to get away! It was impossible to escape from destiny-san!

「Piih!? Pii~~? Piiih!? Pii———!!」

「Ah——, Ku-chan! DON'T GOOO-. COME BACK HEREEEE-」

Such cry and scream could be heard from behind.

When Hajime and Tio looked behind in surprise, the awakened small dragon was chasing after Hajime and Tio once more. Perhaps the girl had jumped out overenthusiastically, because she was diving outside the handrail, but the blond hair duo caught her leg in a narrow call.

The screams (?) of the blonde hair duo「Pr, princessss-. Do you want to dieee-」or「Aa, this is bad-. Roze-sama's clothes is slipping offffff-」who were looking desperate could be heard. The pilot who went through emergency landing on the deck jumped out from the cockpit in panic and joined in the rescue of the girl whose buttocks were getting exposed.

「Wai-, why are you chasing us!? Just as I thought Tio, a strange smell really is coming from you!?!」

「That's a cruel remark don't thou know!? Even if it's me, I couldst still feel hurt here!?!」

Hajime and Tio accelerated rapidly.

However, surprisingly the small dragon made its body to be clad in silver color and chased them steadily. In contrast with the tininess of its body and its pitiful 'pii pii' cry, it was unexpectedly a speed fighter.

「Uwaa, somehow everyone is following after us.....what's with this game of tag?!」

「This art chaos.」

In the world of twilight, Hajime and Tio were in the lead with the small dragon, the air pirate's sky battlecrafts, the army's sky battlecrafts, airship, and mother ship were pursuing in a straight line which created a bizarre sight. Hajime was looking weary while Tio's face was twitching.

Even when they attempted to camouflage themselves using pencil Cross Velts, but as long as the small dragon was chasing after Tio by somehow grasping her position accurately, there was no other way to get away other than shaking it off using speed.

Hajime withdrew Donner from his holster and loaded it with special bullet “Excise Bullet”. It was a special bullet that could change place along with the space around it to another space coordinate. By firing the bullet with electromagnetic acceleration and then exchanging place with it at the farthest distance, it enabled the user himself to move in the pseudo realm of electromagnetic acceleration.

「Tio, grab on me. We are teleporting.」

「.....Right. That’s fine but.....why, didn’t Goshujin-sama use it when chasing after that Higgs fellow?」

Hajime’s gaze wandered around a bit while,「You, it’s that you know, that. Yes, interfering at the battle between you and that guy is just inelegant right?」 he was making a strangely lame excuse while his finger was about to pull the trigger.

But, just before he could,

「Whoops」

Hajime controlled the skyboard and made a sharp turn. The place where they were just at a moment before was rushed through by innumerable bullets.

Furthermore, the sky battlecraft squad that cut in at the path Hajime was turning to was carrying out a strafing with Vulcan to reduce Hajime and Tio into meat scraps without even a shred of mercy.

Hajime further barrel rolled to avoid that, but

「Oi oi, they are really feverish with murderous impulse huh.」

「Looks like they art losing their temper with this game of tag.」

Ahead of the gaze of the two who were turning around, there was the form of the mother ship that unnoticed had taken a steep climb and aimed its gun turret at its lower part from the far height. It seemed the turret was a type that could be stowed in, that turret that was protruding out from the ship’s bottom was opening its large nozzle that had a diameter around two meter.

It was a caliber that was too big to shoot cannon ball, but it seemed what it would shot wasn’t cannon or missile.

It had silver light converging in it. The energy was so immense their skin could feel it. No matter how they looked, it was in the preparation stage to fire a beam cannon like space battleship that often came out in SF.

Going with firing the main cannon of a mother ship that was boasting its hugeness just to kill two people, these guys were really bunches with screw loose in their head.

Naturally, Hajime was trying to take evasive action, but the aim of that cannon turret was detailed in contrast of its size. Furthermore, the army's sky battlecrafts were joining in the attack from all direction to seal their movement so they couldn't escape from the firing line.

Indeed, although this was for the sake of breaking the deadlock of the situation, but it was unthinkable that the height of this killing intent was coming from the bunches who were refraining themselves from large scale attack in consideration of the small dragon's existence.

『Oi, we told you already before, we don't have any hostile intention, we also don't want anything with that small dragon! We also don't want to get involved with you guys! We are going to disappear right away, so pull ba——』

Hajime's persuading words resounded to the whole airspace using telepathy. But, before he could finish his sentence——the atmosphere burst.

GOU- The silver bombardment was fired from diagonally above and exploded the air. Due to the sky battlecrafts attacking in waves, a wall of bullet was created between the two and the pursuing small dragon, distancing the two sides.

Therefore, that merciless attack dyed the world that was in madder red color as though it was midday, pouring down on Hajime and Tio like iron hammer from the sky.

「Piuh! PIIIIH」

「Ku-chan-, Kuwaibel-! Come back quickly! Just what are you thinking about those two!?!」

The girl on the pursuing airship was desperately raising her voice using a megaphone at the small dragon that was forced to evade due to the shockwave

that shook the atmosphere. Even the sky battlecrafts of the air pirate that got reduced in number were making a shuddering expression at the bombardment of the mother ship while circling at the small dragon's side.

The game of tag was over. The air pirate was now too far away from the area of cloud mountain range that was their only chance of escaping. Actually, the inside of that mountain range area was relatively calmer compared to the sea of clouds, so it was the optimum place to conceal themselves, but it was impossible for them to return there from now. The only way that remained for them now was only to dive into the sea of clouds even though they would crash nine times out of ten by doing that.

And to do that they had to take back the small dragon into the airship even for a second faster.

But, the small dragon in question was only raising its cry at the silver pillar of light searchingly.

It was as though it was convinced at the survival of those two who had disappeared inside the pillar without even a one in ten thousand chance to stay alive.....

「Li, es.....impossible.....」

Those words were surely representing the feeling of all the people in this battlefield.

The silver bombardment from the warship was vanishing as though it was melting into air.

That attack should annihilate everything without leaving even dust behind. However, while the brightness that was like midday was vanishing and the color of twilight was returning to the world, the future that should be absolute was overturned.

What appeared was a sphere.

That solid metallic sphere which was shining gently from the reflection of the evening sun was further surrounded by jet black and crimson colored crosses around it.

「.....It was an unknown attack, so just in case I jointly used eight point barrier and Aidion at the same time, but it seems that attack doesn't have the power to break through the space isolation.」

「Well, this defense couldst even completely block the disintegration bombardment of the god's apostles. As long as it's not even a penetrating attack that ignore defense, it's next to impossible to slip through Goshujin-sama's defensive wall.」

kashun-kashun-kashun- With such sound, the metallic sphere——variable style large shield “Aidion” was undoing its omni-directional defense. It was several layers of shield sliding and contracting smaller continuously to its neighbor. Before long the sphere was switching to its normal mode of coffin form. At the same time, the eight point barrier also vanished.

The battlefield was silent. No, more accurately the sound of wind and the planes' thruster sound were reverberating, but the people in this battlefield were so speechless to the degree that it felt like that.

They were rightly amazed and dumbfounded. An individual was pulling through a direct hit that was fired by the main cannon of a mother ship class battleship unharmed. Everyone's reaction was understandable.

In the battlefield that became still as death, Hajime started to monitor the conversations at the bridge of the mother ship using the application of telepathy even while feeling his blood rushing to his head.

While they were all in a straight line chase, because the small dragon was in the line of fire the mother ship couldn't attack satisfactorily and left attacking to its sky battlecrafts, yet why did they suddenly act decisively by attacking like that.....

Inside the bridge of the mother ship that Hajime was skillfully monitoring.....

『Shit-, even that was defended-. Those guys, as expected they are monster-』

『Impossible.....we had confirmed it from the recording of Glowser 4 but..... even though it was just sixty percent but that was the main cannon. Just what in the world are those two.....』

『Captain-. Quick, quickly prepare the next attack-. The one with the full

power! If not, everyone will be slaughtered again!』

『Shut up Higgs! We, the soldier of the divine country is the chosen people that rule the sky, there is no way we will lose against just two pirates!』

『But-, those two aren't human! You see it right-? The male destroyed sky battlecraft personally, and the female transformed into dragon and pursued hot on my tail even when I used maximum speed!』

『Chih. Oi, someone take Higgs away! He is an eyesore!』

It seemed that surviving sky battlecraft had the system of video recording loaded in it. With that, they knew the incomprehensible strength of Hajime and Tio, and using the chance when they were distance from the small dragon, they launched an attack that could be said as excessive. That seemed to be the case.

The person who seemed to be the ship captain gave order with angry voice at his subordinates inside the bridge who were making noise from feeling shaken.

『Launch the air battle squads that are in the middle of standby! Don't let those two get near the air pirate and the monarch dragon! Helmsman, circle to the left side of the target with velocity 3! Replenish the main cannon, maximum power! Fix pod number 1 until 20 to the target. Bullet type Grog! Keep firing without pause! There is no way a shield that can block attack like that can hold out for long! Crush them with quantity!』

It seemed they were seriously planning to shot down Hajime and Tio.

The mother ship was starting to circle to the left side while spouting silver light. The Vulcan barrels and cannon barrels that could bombard using medium size bullet type were directed at Hajime and Tio.

Hajime's eyes narrowed quietly. He broadcasted a voice that was losing its intonation using telepathy.

『You can hear me right? Listen well, I'll say it one more time okay? We don't have the intention of getting involved with the dispute between you guys. We have the awareness that it's us who are trespassing at your territory. We the nuisances will disappear. That's why, don't direct your killing intent to us more than this.』

It was silent for a while. The army side was bewildered with the voice that was resounding in their head, however, the captain spoke his answer from his spot even while half in doubt whether his voice would be transmitted.

『Sleep talk after you go to sleep. There is no way we can just leave alone anyone with that kind of bizarre power and also obsessed so much by that monarch dragon. Originally we will want to catch you two for human experiment to search for the secret of that power, but you two are just too dangerous. That's to say nothing how you two had laid your hands at the pilots of our army who are the people of god. We will kill you two right here right now for sure.』

The main cannon of the mother ship was gathering an immense energy. Innumerable sky battlecrafts flew out from it. Their number were already surpassing fifty plane if combined with the planes that had came out from the battle before this.

The small dragon was trying to approach Hajime and Tio, but the army's sky battlecrafts were obstructing it with wall of sound wave. They also attacked at the air pirate. The air pirate's aircrafts were already less than ten.

「Piih. PIIIIH」

Just what was making it trying that hard? The small dragon was desperately calling at Hajime and Tio. It didn't want to get separated from them, or perhaps, it was asking them to escape together.....it also looked like it was saying that kind of things.

Hajime loosened up his expressionless face a bit and pulled the trigger of Donner. Two streaks of light flew out. One went toward the small dragon, and the other one went toward the girl on the airship. Just before it shot them through in a flash, the special bullets "Excise Bullet" stopped still in place, and using its effect, the small dragon was instantly transferred to the girl's location.

「Just stay quiet at your friend's side. Okay?」

「Pii.....pih」

「Ku, Kuwaibel, is listening to what he is told?」

Those words that were said with unexpectedly gentle voice in contrast with

the dangerous atmosphere the speaker was clad in made the small dragon to look alternately at Hajime and Tio restlessly, but after a slight hesitation it replied back energetically. The girl who embraced the small dragon so that it wouldn't run away for the second time showed a surprised expression at its behavior.

In addition, before they realized several Cross Velts were floating around the airship, forming protection barrier.

The focused silver light was already in critical point. The attack of the army's sky battlecrafts that became unreserved by the small dragon's distance was increasing in fierceness. Several thousand Vulcan bullets, several hundred missiles, and sound waves that were even accompanied with shockwave came in really absurd number that it was presumptuous to even call it overkill, and all those were concentrated toward just two people.

Flame blast enveloped the barrier, the figure of the two disappeared inside as though a small sun was coming into existence there.

They were receiving that much concentrated attack, however, Hajime who continued to defend using only barrier of space isolation turned his gaze at Tio beside him. Tio shrugged and answered back at the wordless question.

「Goshujin-sama who art still trying to persuade them somehow even when having killing intent directed at thee art also not bad but.....as expected, acting absurdly unreasonable with no question asked, that art what truly worthy for mine master. Goshujin-sama, holding back this late art unnecessary. Mine will art always together with Goshujin-sama.」

Hajime displayed a fearless grin and embraced Tio. If the figures of a man embracing the waist of a beautiful girl on the skyboard weren't hard to see because of the flame blast from the missiles enveloping them, then surely the expression of the enemies would convulse grandly.

A calm voice resounded at the battlefield that was decorated with explosive sounds and impact sounds.

『.....This is your last warning. Get lost, right now.』

Not just the captain of the mother ship, all the people who heard that voice

felt a shiver in their spine from terror. But, unfortunately, it seemed they converted that terror into rage using their elitism and pride that were oozing from their every single word.

『Don't falter! Fix them in place! They cannot move-. Their shield too shouldn't be able to hold out for long anymore-. Show our power as the soldier of the divine country! Main cannon, status!?!』

『Five percent left until the full charge, four percent, three percent.....full charge! We can fire anytime-』

『Fire at the count of five! Air battle squads, pull back!』

The madder red sky that was turning dark was dyed by the silver of midday once more.

It was incomparable with the previous one, it wasn't just the turret below the mother ship, even the 3-gun turrets installed at the front deck also fired bombardment in exactly the same scale. The total of four silver bombardments tore through the sky with might that ripped apart the atmosphere. The diameter of its hit range could reach ten meter. If the after-shock was included then the area of further ten meter was a fatal territory.

Hajime and Tio's figure vanished along with flame blast that bloomed in the sky.

The world rumbled. The sea of clouds directly below was undulating and splitting from the impact. The cloud mountain at faraway had a large hole opened at its side and scattered away wholly.

Inside the light that should be called as aurora, the people from both camps who were fixing their eyes upon that scene by holding their arm over their eyes or through a visor——

They witnessed it right after that.

GOU- The jet black spiral that blew upward and pierced the sky.

In defiance of the silver light, that pure black looked as though it was wordlessly asserting that it wouldn't be dyed by any other existence no matter what.

「What's, that.....」Someone whispered.

At that moment, the jet black whisper converged tighter. It rushed out from the silver torrent and became a whirling sphere in the sky.

And then, it ruptured. As though the seal was broken. As though, born from a jet black cocoon——a figure appeared.

A single roar. A single flap of wings.

That form was magnificently, majestically, and gallantly conveying without scruple a dignity as the supreme ruler of the sky that didn't fear or hesitate against anything.

The large build that drew a line against the emaciated dragon of this world, and the overflowing dominating aura. Its existence's mightiness that the skin, or perhaps the instinct could feel.

『I'm concluding you guys, as my "enemy". I don't care whether you are from divine country, if you are a chosen race, or whatever, but you can learn it with your own body. That my wife, is the one and only supreme ruler of the sky.』

Those words echoed through the whole airspace.

The people who suddenly regained their senses with 'hah' noticed although at this late hour.

Of the existence on the back of the hovering black dragon with its wings spread and the blazing sun behind it. There, a man was standing imposingly, glaring down at everything.

Anyone couldn't help but to feel awed at that figure mounting the back of dragon that they had never even seen before.

Everyone held their breath and lost their words, in the middle of that,

The girl who was holding the small dragon murmured in astonishment.

A fairy tale that she knew since she was little. Yes, that was the legendary.....

「.....Dragon knight, sama?」

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 234

Arifureta After II I am, Maou-san. Right Now I'm Right Behind You, You Know

(TN: Maou=demon king)

The first move of the battle's opening was a roar that shook the atmosphere and a jet black flash that tore apart event the world.

『Bre, break up-. Brea——』

『I won't make it in——』

The army's sky battlecrafts flying about in the twilight sky. The evasion order that pilot yelled vanished in vain due the jet black flash that was mowing down immediately after.

It was like a swing of a large sword that was wielded by a giant in myth. Tio's breath attack that finished charging in less than a few seconds annihilated three squads of five planes squad altogether with just one attack.

They couldn't resist or anything and didn't leave even wreckage behind. They were literally "annihilated". Just like swatting irritating flies, the veteran sky battlecraft pilots vanished like a joke.

If anyone looked further, they would see the sea of clouds split into two. It was the scar from Tio's breath attack. An ocean trench was created in the sea of clouds.

『-, don't falter-. Crush them with quantity!』

A command that was filled with reprimand was given. The sky battlecrafts were commencing hit & run without pause at Tio and Hajime who was riding on her back. Their Vulcan cannons were spouting fire and countless missiles were rapidly approaching the two.

「Tio, let's go. Beat into them just what kind of being the supreme ruler of the sky is.」

『Very well. Then, thoroughly witness mine flying technique that I fostered and evolved in earth. Don't fall off no matter what, Goshujin-sama!』

gagagaga- Without even caring one whit at the bullets of Vulcan cannon that hit her body, Tio roared.

It seemed that the dragon scale of black dragon that was the most superior in endurance among the whole dragon people race couldn't even be scratched by the like of Vulcan cannon. After all it was something that only ended getting whittled on the surface even when it got hit by Hajime's railgun, so this could be said to be only natural.

The approaching missiles were drawing near from all directions like a cage, giving no place to escape.

But, Tio's figure vanished before those missiles could arrive and hit.

『——【Fang of Flame】』

Immediately after, it that was whispered along with a solemn voice manifested and accomplished its meaning. Around Tio who was flying with a motion that should even be called as rhythmless, four brilliantly blazing flame clusters appeared.

When all those were launched simultaneously, they accurately swallowed the missiles approaching from the front without leaving any and demolished them. While flower of flame blast was blooming in the sky, Tio who was flying while producing shockwave instantly took a sharp right turn.

She caught the back of a sky battlecraft that was trying to fly past.

The sky battlecraft pilot took a steep turn in panic to shake Tio off, but she followed closely behind as though mocking that wonderfully sharp turn. She

launched a breath attack once more and blown up the sky battlecraft.

『Shit-, this bastard-. Eat this-』

Perhaps this one was a squad mate of the one just now. The sky battlecraft circled at Tio's back in order to save his comrade that was followed by Tio, however, unable to save his comrade he got driven by rage while firing his missile.

But, that missile that looked like it would hit based on the timing and position was evaded right after that along with an unbelievable scene.

『Thy movement art monotone.』

『Somer, saultiing——』

Yes, it was a somersault. Of all thing, the large black dragon before his eyes were somersaulting midair while flying with a speed that was nearly the speed of sound. Naturally Tio was losing speed, but the missile was unable to react to the impossible maneuver and passed through below her in vain.

And then, in a stroke of misfortune the pursuing sky battlecraft was tore apart by the black dragon's claw when they crossed each other, and ended up as a scrap.

Tio used the momentum of the somersault and descended below while recovering her speed. While falling, she rolled her body 180 degree and reversed her movement direction. By doing that, the sky battlecraft formation that was about to pass in front of her right at that timing.....

Naturally, breath attack and compressed exploding flame bullets hit the formation as though the attacks were absorbed toward them. Five flame blasts decorated the sea of clouds simultaneously.

『Thi, this is hopeless-. I cannot shake it off-. Someone help——』

Tio rolled her body 180 degree from climbing steeply into the opposite direction. She once more took the back of another plane with the opposite of the previous maneuver and blown up the sky battlecraft that was desperately escaping.

『The aiming won't get fixed-. I cannot get a lock on-』

Even though this pilot had taken her back by sacrificing his comrade, he couldn't lock on Tio who was flickering left and right with terrific speed like an outstanding aircraft.

And then, Tio spread open her wings and raised up her body. She instantly decelerated by receiving the wind pressure to her heart's content. When the pilot noticed his plane already passed over Tio. And as expected he got annihilated with one attack from behind.

『To, too fast-. What the hell is this monster-. Is this really dragon!?!』

There was an impact sound as though the air ruptured. Next white wall of air was generated. Tio who was easily rushing into the world of the speed of sound while making a steep climb rolled over midair.

『Use the Synthesizer-. Match my timing!』

Three squads were approaching Tio from below as though they were going toward the summit of a pyramid. Their plane's frame was starting to get enveloped with silver color. From that, this "Synthesizer" was most likely referring to that sound wave attack.

Although, Tio didn't even look concerned seeing that indication of the sound wave attack that could grant fatal action obstruction effect to the dragon species. Instead she began to swoop down.

The sound wave attack was fired. The air was undulating. Tio charged into that raging sound wave without any hesitation. Something like a free fall was lukewarm. She spread her wings while falling and with an elegant movement she rolled. Right away, a jet black typhoon was generated from that movement.

『Insolent. Fall altogether all of thee.』

It was like a divine spear that broke through a great wall. The black dragon moving in the world of speed of sound clad with black typhoon easily blew off the wall of sound wave and merely passed straight through the center of the formation.

A beat.

The sonic boom that arrived late instantly pulverized their plane's fuselage

and drowned them into the sea of clouds.

Without stopping Tio opened up a great distance from the approaching missile using pure speed and maneuverability, she then blasted away one more squad with a mowing down breath attack.

And, it was at that time a large scale attack was fired at Tio from the mother ship. It seemed they couldn't get a lock-on because of Tio's overwhelming mobility, but 80% of their ally's sky battlecrafts had fallen anyway. Surely they were thinking that in that case they would just bombard the very airspace itself in a limited area.

It wasn't a high firepower that pierced through a point like the main cannon. What was approaching was a swarm of missiles that might reach a thousand in number. That swarm which was a bit too brutal to be called as a squall prided a size that couldn't be compared with the missiles launched by the sky battlecrafts. It was clear that it had an uncommon power without compare.

In front of the display of power of blowing up an airspace, Tio flapped her wings once and hovered in place.

And then, she bent her body greatly backward while sucking in air. *hyugoo-* She was making that kind of impossible sound while sucking in air, which caused Tio's chest to swell up rapidly.

The missiles that were approaching in a number that even hid the mother ship itself behind them were.....

——GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

The wind died. The air ruptured. The sea of clouds was blown away in radial shape, the atmosphere shook.

It was just a roar. And yet, it was a roar of the dragon king that granted terror to anyone who heard it without question. Therefore, the mere roar became a violent shockwave that spread through the whole airspace. The approaching swarm of missiles was pulverized by the wall of shockwave.

It was as though there was an invisible wall there, the missiles swarm exploded one after another in the middle point between Tio and the mother ship.

The sky where the curtain of night was already descending was illuminated dazzlingly by orange flame blasts.

「Oi oi, I don't get any turn at all from the start here?」

『It was Goshujin-sama who ordered me to show the status of the sky's supreme ruler correct? For now, I tried doing it with only using pure dogfight technique, breath attack, and a bit of magic but.....was it satisfactory for thee?』

Turning back, Tio was directing a gaze that looked vaguely mischievous toward Hajime who was calmly standing on her back regardless of the heavy action.

Hajime was showing a half-amazed expression while,

「Those were midair battle maneuver things right? Kulbit and Split S, then Immelmann Turn and Cobra Turn? You also did various other maneuvers but, since when did you learn them huh? Well, it was splendid.」

『The fighter aircrafts in earth art wonderful. However, the sky art mine territory. Putting aside pure speed, mine pride wouldst not forgive myself if I lose in dogfight technique. I fished up various materials, played game, went to aerial show and learned. The most important thing art that it seemed that it satisfied Goshujin-sama.』

‘gururu♪’ Tio-san sounded her throat joyfully.

Because Tio could freely flew in the sky without anything like flying technique just by directly manipulating the wind, it was really bone-breaking for her to make the way of thinking like kinetic energy or potential energy to sink into her mind but.....there was no doubt that her flying skill had rapidly risen up from earth's aeromechanics, so she was really happy to be praised by her master when she unveiled the result like this.

With scales that deflected Vulcan cannon, excelling in speed and maneuverability that were even better than missile, possessing unrivaled powerful attack method, pulverizing the opponent just from the sonic boom, and on top of that she even had super first class flying skill that didn't rely on her spec.....

If the pilots of earth knew that their skill was stolen by a flying tank, there was

no doubt that they would get teary eyed.

The flame blasts were gradually getting cleared by the wind flow.

At the other side, they could see the mother ship was charging its main cannon. The two didn't know how the enemy was planning to make the attack hit, but there was no other way of calling them other than foolish that they still hadn't escaped. They were overestimating their own existences too much.

The chosen people, the people that ruled the sky. The country of god.

Seeing words that dangerous lined up like that, it was clear that their pride was even higher than Everest, even so they couldn't avoid getting evaluated as being a bit too thoughtless. Or else, perhaps they still had some kind of different trump card.....

「Well, just because of that doesn't mean that we will just expressly wait for them though.」

Hajime was looking at even more air battle squad launching from the mother ship while the corner of his mouth rose up in a grin. Tio's body that didn't even twitch against Vulcan now twitched.

「I wonder, how does it feel to have your flank gouged out?」

The moment Hajime whispered that, the mother ship that was going to fire its main cannon anytime——wholly lost a part of its rear bottom.

It wasn't a destruction, it was a loss. Like joined together blocks had a part taken off from it, a part of the ship's bottom at the rear was coming off. While scattering crimson sparks.

The mother ship tilted violently. Furthermore there were a lot of people falling from that loss part. They couldn't hear anything due to the distance, but they understood clearly that those people were screaming with expression of despair.

『Go, Goshujin-sama. Just what hath thee done?』

「You see, while you are fighting, it was boring doing nothing so I fired a single shell at them. Inside it was packed full with spider type living golem.」

——Special shell “Squirm Shell”

The shell that was fired didn't even explode, but the shell that invaded into inside the mother ship was so to speak a cocoon. Inside it had a lot of super small spider type golem packed in, and they would be born inside the body of the enemy.

This time it was against a gigantic battleship so it was still better, but if this was against a large living thing.....

By the way, the shell could be filled with various things other than spider. Your favorite insect-san right to your position☆

『Ho, how terrifying.....or rather, thy hath created something nasty there-. I'm getting goosebumps!』

『No, right now you got no skin right? You have dragon scale all over. Well, anyway, I transmuted a whole lot inside the ship through the arachne bunches and forcefully purge only that spot, that's all.』

『Avoiding the topic so smoothly.....cough-. Ri, right, that place over there art.....fufu, I see. As expected from Goshujin-sama. Normally thou art a heinously cruel savage and sadist bastard without compare, but the kindness thy show in this kind of time art just unbearable. I'm falling in love all over again!』

『Thank you. I don't feel like I'm praised, so after this I'll give you your savage punishment.』

While his forehead was twitching at Tio's words, Hajime used pencil Cross Velts to cover the entire purged part—the place where the dragons were captured and treated as fuel—with barrier.

While the mother ship was recovering its posture somehow, perhaps with the intention to protect the mother ship, about forty sky battlecrafts were charging recklessly toward Hajime and Tio as reinforcement.

Tio flapped her wings once to begin the dogfight once more, but Hajime stopped her.

『Any time now they are going to struggle while holding delusion(hope) like “there is no way we can lose” or “we will surely win if we use this”. It will be too unsightly to watch, so we are going to crush them all in one go. Along with their

heart.」

『Fumu, certainly. Shouldst I mow them altogether with a breath attack of maximum power?』

「I'll work out a bit too. At this rate, I'll be seen as a strange guy that is only riding on your back.」

Tio chuckled at that really childish line. The sky battlecraft squads were approaching closer even while they were doing that. Even seen from afar, their expression looked damned desperate. But, a hope that they would manage it somehow if they could pull through here also could be seen dwelling somewhere in them.

「I'm telling you that it's merely a delusion. Engrave into your soul, just who is it that you have turned into enemy.」

Right after that, what appeared was a swarm of black crosses decorated with crimson pattern. There were about two hundred of them lining up orderly midair behind Hajime. The scene of the swarm floating while clad in faint crimson light instigated a pure and bizarre terror. Despite the location being in the sky, the sight caused a vision as though they were lost in a graveyard.

Hajime's eyes could see the figure of the pilots whose eyes were opened wide. Without taking his eyes off from them, Hajime's hand elegantly waved like a conductor baton, pointing straight forward. The fingertips of that hand mimicked the shape of gun.

At that moment, the two hundred crosses rotated, the tip of their longer side faced forward.

「This is how to crush the enemy with quantity.」

A beat later. A thunderous roar.

The electromagnetically accelerated Burst Bullets fired from two hundreds Cross Velts were mercilessly launched in a rate of 1500 shot per minute. That was already like a wall of bullet that appeared in the sky. The battle of resource amount that was done by the army side before this was now returned back to them exactly as it was.

If they knew that if Hajime actually got serious, he could summon Cross Velts in the number of more than three times of now and several hundred Grim Reapers, just what would they think then?

The sky battlecrafts that got hit by the first attack fell into the sea of clouds in pieces. Even the planes that fortunately could dodge direct hit got their wings plucked by the Burst Bullets that were spreading lethal shockwave of crimson ripple midair and they fell.

It was just a round of offense and defense. Just from that, the sky battlecraft got their battle strength reduced until thirty percent.

『Something like this, is not battle anymore-. This is just massacre-』

『Just what the hell is that-. Where did he take it out from-』

『Is it still not yet-? The Negrade cannon, it's still cannot fire yet-?』

The pilots were in a state that could be called as pandemonium. But, that kind of *composure* immediately vanished. Because the bringer of death the two hundred crosses flew out all at once. With sharp angling and irregular movement that ignored aerodynamics, and sometimes while even generating something like afterimages, they were shooting down the sky battlecrafts one after another.

Indeed, it wasn't a battle anymore.

Amidst that situatin, the mother ship that succeeded in controlling its posture finally aimed its main cannon's turret at Hajime and Tio. It was focusing silver light, however, it seemed to be slightly different from its attack before. Inside the silver convergence, a muddy black was mixing like coffee dripping into milk. Looking really closely, the silver part also seemed closer to being white.

In a amoment, the white light mixed with black was fired along with a thunderous roar. Its power instead looked lower than the attack before, but Hajime's instinct that was backed by experience told him that it was something more repulsive.

In front of that unknown that was likely their trump card, Hajime wordlessly made his "Treasure Warehouse II" shined.

The sun had mostly set, while the blackness of night was covering the world, it appeared beside Hajime who was illuminated by the white light.

「I'll stamp it out from the front.」

Like that what was fired was the greatest light. The color of light shining brilliantly as though it was denying the night that it was still too fast for it to arrive, it was truly the color of sun that illuminated this world.

——Sun convergence laser “Burst Hyperion”

The horizontal firing of Burst Hyperion that finished charging. That was the true identity of the light. The sunlight energy that was converged and compressed to the very limit expelled the world of night in the blink of eye.

The white light of the mother ship's main cannon collided with the thick light of Burst Hyperion right from the front.

The power of the two lights rivaled each other, a fantastic phenomenon of lights blooming wildly that seemed unthinkable to be something of this world was occurring at the point of collusion.

『.....How can an individual, rivaled the main cannon of a warship.....』

The amazed whisper that leaked out from telepathy surely came from the ship captain. Hajime scoffed at that and replied back daringly.

『Rivaled? How long you are going to hold your delusion? Just this much ain't enough at all.』

Hajime spoke the release keyword.

「——”Second Compression Furnace” release.」

Burst Hyperion was loaded with exclusive “Treasure Warehouse” that converged and compressed sunlight inside, but no one said that there was only one of it inside. It wasn't strange at all even if multiple “Exclusive Treasure Warehouse” ——”Compression Furnace” were loaded inside.

What would happen if that second energy was liberated?

The answer was simple.

Something like a state of rivalry could be broken easily.

The attack of the mother ship's main cannon was swallowed, terminated, and got pushed back gradually.

『-. Attack-. Attack that man! Use bullet that focused in speed! The surviving sky battlecraft squad too, attack that guy from behi— —』

He was unable to finish saying that command until the end.

『——“Third Compression Furnace” release.』

This must be how the death sentence of the death god sounded like.

Like being swallowed by a raging stream, the main cannon of the mother ship was swallowed by the extreme thickening of the sunlight laser without being able to show anything that resembled a resistance. The advancing light of Hyperion kept pushing and swallowed a third of the front deck along with the 3-gun turrets, and pushed on until the sky at faraway in the distance.

Perhaps it was an instantaneous judgment, or perhaps a coincidence, it was unknown which was it, but just before the mother ship got hit it suddenly descended that it avoided the fate of being the Titanic of the sky.

However, it didn't change that it was greatly damaged. It wholly lost its front and rear part as though something had taken bites from it. Seeing it tilting, with fires and black smokes, and also small secondary explosions rising from it, it was obviously in a tragic state, even so it was in a condition where it was barely hanging in the sky.

The mother ship was starting to turn around while spouting out silver light even with its altitude that kept descending.

「So they finally felt like run away.」

『I don't know what kind of effect that last attack hath, but that was surely their genuine trump card. And that trump card was defeated crushingly from the front and in addition they art almost shot down. If they don't run away even after that, then that art the realm of lunatic.』

The sky battlecraft pilots who were desperately running away even while getting chased by Cross Velts were also following the mother ship in panic.

The battle was over. The army's gigantic mother ship that boasted great

fighting strength was chased away just by two people.

While holding back the emotion that was overflowing from that fact, the air pirate's girl and small dragon were approaching along with their airship.

「Piuh. PIIIIH」

「E, excuse me-. Kn, knight-sama-. True dragon-sama-. In this chance, we are saved from danger——」

When they were trying to call out like that,

「——“Fourth Compression Furnace” release.」

「Eh?」

「Pi?」

The extremely thick light blown off the rear of the mother ship that was running away in all broken up state. Along with the girl's words.

In addition,

「The flies are.....around ten. Then I guess it's enough with this.」

Saying that, what Hajime taken out was anti-material sniper cannon Schlagen AA. Hajime who captured the desperately escaping sky battlecrafts through his scope pulled the trigger at the interval of his breathing. The shells that drew a beautiful crimson line in the night sky were shooting down the sky battlecrafts that were performing random evasion without even a single miss.

「.....hiu」

「.....pii」

The side profile of Hajime who was dispassionately performing blood festival using the escaping pilots without looking particularly emotional caused the girl and the small dragon to tremble in their boots while hugging each other. With a plop, the girl fell to sit on the floor. The attendants blonde hair duo were also staring at their falling enemies with pale expression. It was only the surviving pilot who was whistling「hyuu~」in admiration.

『Goshujin-sama. That aircraft carrier art unexpectedly tough. It's still flying. Shouldst we pursue?』

「No, there is no need of that. I'll shoot it down after harassing them a bit.」

Hajime who finished shooting down all the sky battlecrafts put Schalgen on his shoulder while grinning broadly. Voices that said things like「Dragon knight-sama.....not?」, or「De, demon.....」, or「Ru, run away quickly」could be heard, but for Hajime who was making that wicked smile, all those were trivial things.

Seeing such Hajime, Tio said a sentence.

『Fumu. That is to say, they couldst not escape from demon king-sama is it?』

It went without saying that the words demon king caused the girl and others to tremble even more.

On the other hand, around that time in the mother ship.....

「Those two!? Are those two chasing after us!?」

「N, no! The targets aren't moving! They are letting us get away!」

「Be careful of what you are saying-. They aren't letting us get away! It's our strategic retreat that succeeded-. The next time you said something like that, I'll consider that as betrayal!」

「M, my deepest apology.」

The atmosphere was completely rough. Everyone was gulping their saliva as though their throat was parched while their face was tensing from the terror of wondering if they would be shot down anytime now.

The captain was also in the same state, he was saying thing like「strategic retreat success」from his mouth, but his face was twitching uncontrollably as though he caught a bad sickness.

「We have to, we have to inform our country quickly. If we challenge them using a fleet, then next time for sure..... Oi, how long until we enter the range where we can contact the country?」

「The range is about 1500. But, our propulsion is lowering, and in our current situation where we cannot resupply, it will perhaps take two days.」

「Chih. Those two, just how did they scoop out the whole supply room.....no,

in the first place how did they know the location accurately?is there, a traitor?」

Excessive paranoia was gnawing at his mind in this extreme situation.

But, at that time, a communication entered the bridge.

『This is the launching and landing station! Higgs is trying to launch in his sky battlecraft! He is armed and caused many casualties among the mechanics who tried to stop him! Someone, please send reinforcement! That guy, he isn't sane!』

The bridge turned into uproar from the sudden notification. The ship captain snatched a mike and pressed the communication button toward the sky battlecraft's landing and launching station.

『What is happening!? What's Higgs's objective!? Why is he trying to launch in sky battlecraft in this situation!?』

『We don't know-. He is talking incoherently.....we really don't get it! He is babbling 'that guy is coming, if I don't run away quickly, the "demon king" will come. That guy is here already!'. He won't even listen to our words!』

『How ridiculous. Shit-, we have no time to be concerned with a crazy idiot in this kind of time. I give permission to shoot. If he is not going to listen, then I don't care just kil——』

The captain was going to give instruction even while he was feeling some kind of intense bad premonition. It was at that timing.

He heard it.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm on the deck you know?

「!?」

The captain suddenly sensed a presence and he turned around swiftly. However, he saw nothing there but the door that connected to the corridor, there was no one there. He returned his gaze to the front thinking if he was hallucinating, but right after that, he gulped his saliva unconsciously.

「Ca, captain. Ju, just now.....」

A helmsman was looking back with a pale expression. No, not just him. All his subordinates inside the bridge were looking back just like him.

「Wha, what are you looking at! Carry out your own duty! Right now we need to hurry even for——」

It was a hallucination. It was just a coincidence that all his subordinates were looking back. The captain was persuading himself like that while erasing the sensation of a bug crawling on his back by yelling angrily. He was trying, to erase it.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in the central passage you know?

「Wh, who-」

「Ca, captaiiin-」

He couldn't trick himself anymore. The resounding voice, the presence he felt behind him, they caused the captain to look behind him, but as expected, there wasn't anyone there. When he returned his gaze with a stiff motion, as expected he found the pale figures of his subordinates.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the elevator you know?

「He, he is, approaching here?」

「Captain-. The, the elevator number 1-. It's moving!」

「Who is using it!? The image!?!」

「No one is inside it! There is nobody! Just why is it moving-」

The subordinate that was in charge of remote controlling the facilities nearby the bridge was staring at his monitor looking like he was going to cry. His monitor was projecting the image inside the elevator that connected toward this bridge. But, inside the elevator that was indeed moving and climbing up, there was no one there at all.

The elevator stopped and the door opened. The camera in the passage that continued toward this bridge didn't catch the figure of anyone. However, the elevator was moving by itself, then stopped in this floor, the door opened, and then at the timing when it seemed one person had gotten off the elevator, its door closed once more.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the first room you know?

The first room——Defense room number 1. In case the mother ship was boarded by enemy, at the area from the elevator and the stair until the bridge, there were three rooms prepared for the sake of holding back any attack toward the bridge. Those rooms were toughly made with a lot of cover so it would be easier to intercept the intruder.

「Defense room number 1-. An intruder in front of the door-. You are permitted to open fire!」

The captain used the radio to give instruction to the soldier standing by in the defense room number 1.

But, there wasn't any reply coming back.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the second room you know?

A shudder of fear ran on their spine. The captain's gaze question his subordinate who was monitoring the place, but he didn't say anything and only shook his head with unfocused eyes as though he was losing sanity.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the third room you know?

Even the defense room number 2 was easily penetrated. No, it was unclear whether it was fine to call it penetrating or anything. It was as though the door of those rooms didn't even exist, as though there weren't any guards inside those rooms from the start, "something" was smoothly infiltrating without any difficulty.

——I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the bridge you know?

Silence returned inside the bridge. Before they knew it, the damage reports and communications that asked for instruction toward the bridge that were coming like a storm from every posts in the mother ship had gone silent as though they were holding their breath. The only sound that they could hear, was the faint breathing sound, and the humming of the power reactor working earnestly to keep this gigantic ship floating.

The captain slowly pulled out his handgun from the holster on his waist. Inside the silence where even the sound of rustling clothes felt nerve-wracking,

he gritted his teeth that felt like they were going to clatter, and slowly aimed his gun barrel toward the door.

「I, if you want to come then come. The moment you open the door, I'll shoot you to de—」

「I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm right behind you, you know?」

It wasn't a voice that came from far away. It was a raw voice of someone. That voice could be heard right beside his ear, as though it was said from a distance where the speaker was clinging on him.

Something like sanity couldn't be retained anymore.「aaAAAAAAH」In the end, no one knew just whose scream that was. When *pan* that dry sound rang out, the one who collapsed first was the helmsman.

What shot through his chest was the captain's handgun. The captain whose reasoning was blown away and fell into a panicked state shot the moment he turned around. After that, it was like a stone rolling down a slope. Everyone without exception heard the voice whispered right beside their ear. In a panicked state, they fired or hit each other unarmed. The bridge fell into a scene of carnage.

Such situation was also occurring in every section of the mother ship. Everyone had their mind's equilibrium crumbled against the approaching something. Their heart was broken from terror, those who ran and hid survived. But, those people were constantly feeling it. No matter where they were, no matter what they were doing, they still felt the faint presence of someone behind them.

People who didn't turn mad were less than twenty percent of the whole.

「That's the situation there right now.」

『For now, explanation pleeease』

After hearing the current situation of the mother ship that had escaped to far away from Hajime, Tio whose expression was skillfully convulsing even when she was still in black dragon form was asking for explanation with voice tone as

cheerful as possible. If she didn't hear the explanation, then it felt like she would see nightmare from hearing just the end result.

「Look, there are the arachne bunches that infiltrated before this remember? Using them, I carried out one of me-style Harassment 108.」

——Demon King-style (Third Person) Harassment 108 “I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm right behind you, you know?”

This was demon king-sama's version of a certain urban legend “Maou-san's Phone Call” using super small living golem. While using telepathy to forcefully make the listener experienced of something “gradually approaching”, their sense of fear was also amplified using soul magic. Furthermore, while making a show that something was getting closer, but actually from the start the golem that was lurking on the target's collar was using “Presence Manipulation” to produce “a presence of someone that was constantly behind them”. And then the finishing touch was naturally the recording of Hajime's natural voice that said “I'm right behind you, you know?”.

It was one of the wonderful harassment skills that would beautifully made anyone insane with certainty. If “Peek-a-Demon King!” was a sudden harassment, then this one was a harassment that was showing its effect gradually!

『.....The idea art just too terrifying. Or rather, I think that the horror or urban legend of Japan art foul play. Before this Myuu searched the internet out of curiosity and then she didn't come out from her futon for one whole day.』

「About Japan's horror, it's persistent like this, or perhaps I should say it has damp atmosphere.....it has a characteristic atmosphere that doesn't exist overseas after all. Well, for now, leaving that aside, let's just use this to 'kaclick'.」

Hajime who smiled wryly while shrugging suddenly took out something that looked like a switch, and then without hesitation he pushed that switch.

『.....Just in case, I'll ask but, just now, what did thou do?』

「Hm? That's, it'll be troubling if my arachne got carried away, so I spread them to the important places inside the ship——and blew them up.」

By the way, the arachne-chan(living golem) just now that was the size of a pinky could become a force that was about as much as 10 kg of C4 explosive. And then their number aboard the ship was around two hundred.

Not to mention the power reactor, the arachne also aimed at other places focusing at the bridge and other important facilities. And then they went *BANG* not from the surface but by using transmutation to infiltrate inside the machineries first.

Surely the crews who were beautifully in great chaos from the “I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m right behind you, you know?” were unable to deal with this.

The power was lost, the bridge was lost, resupplying was also impossible, and most of the crews were in the middle of madness☆. There was no doubt that the ship was falling right now.

If after this they were still able to return to their country without crashing, then that would be worthy of praise.

Seeing Hajime who was saying「An explosion at the end——that is romance」 while making a really refreshed expression, not just Tio, the girl and little dragon who were still trembling, the blonde hair attendant duo, and then the pilot-san whose expression was twitching as expected,

『『『『『You demon-』』』』』』

「Piuh」

They gave a splendid straight-man retort with their voice as one.

If there were the classmates in this place, surely they would reply like this.

——He is the demon king you know?

Like that.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Actually, I just wanted to write simple dogfight.

If a dragon used air battle maneuver in a dogfight.....won't it be super

romantic?

By the way, Shirakome isn't that knowledgeable regarding fighter aircraft.

Because all my reference source come from Blue Knight. No, it was really interesting that I got totally engrossed. I especially super like chapter 22.

Now then, a report for a moment.

Looks like the sale for the fifth volume will be at 25 December.

You can also see the cover illustration if you go to Overlap-sama's homepage you know!

Please go take a look if you can.

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 235

AN:

「The data.....vanished?」

Just like that person whose spirit pressure really vanish, the data didn't revive.

I'm sorry, right now I'm in the middle of rewriting. I should be able to update tomorrow afternoon!

Although, the chapter this time is something like the exposition turn, so the story is not really interesting.

Anyway, as an apology that the update will be late, I uploaded the artifact catalogue.

Arifureta After Story II

Artifact Catalogue

This is a catalogue of Hajime's artifact.

Please read it to kill time.

Shirakome himself doesn't grasp the whole thing, so perhaps there is still other.

For the artifact of other members, I'll eventually add them in the list.

(TN: I made up all the German word here because I'm too lazy. Leave a comment if you know the correct word and I'll edit it later.)

Donner & Schlag

Total length 35 cm. Rotating style magazine with 6 shots. Made from composite ore of Tauru ore, Shutaru ore, and Athantium ore.

The origin of the naming was from German language「thunderbolt」or「lightning」, something like that.

Schlagen

Total length around three meter, single shot, electromagnetically accelerated anti-material rifle with zero caliber.

The naming origin was from German language「Zerschlagen(Pulverizing)」.....I think.

Schlagen AA

The successor of Schlagen. Its power and range were greatly improved. It surpassed the framework of sniper rifle and reached the level of sniper cannon.

AA was the abbreviation of「Acht Acht」. I don't know the detail of the spec, but language nuance was wonderful. It seemed that the power was also amazing. Therefore I adopted it.

Metzelei

Gatling railgun. Six rotating gun barrels, 30 mm caliber, it could shot about 12000 shots per minute. The cooling of early day version couldn't follow along and it could only keep shooting for around five minutes.

Metzelei Disaster

A six barreled gatling gun where each barrel was formed from one Metzelei. The power was simply increased six times.

Orkan

Missile & rocket launcher.

Agni Orkan

A winged cross with total length of 3 meter. It could simultaneously fired 300 pencil missiles.

Pile Bunker

Romance

Gatling Pile Bunker

Super Romance

Cross Bit

Flying cross. It could become shield, it could also fire exploding bullet. It could also form a barrier by connecting to each other with wire.

Cross Velt

The successor of Cross Bit. It had black color with red pattern. The culmination of chuuni.

Pencil Cross Velt

Alias “Don’t touch, you pervert!”

Hyperion

Sunlight convergence laser. It went *chudon* from the sky.

Burst Hyperion

The successor of *chudon* from the sky.

Mirror Bit

The machines on board the sky *chudon*. It could explode sunlight energy using Treasure Warehouse.

Chakram

Chakram. Its central part turned into gate.

Variable style chakram Orestes

Wire was installed inside the chakram. It could deploy an extra-large gate by splitting into three parts.

Grim Reaper

Mechanized monster. Fully loaded with ordnances inside.

Meteor Impact

A mere rock. The opponent die.

Magic power cannon Grenzen

It's non-lethal so it's fine!

Treasure Warehouse

Anything could enter

Magic power 4-Wheel Drive Brieze

A car that looked like Hummer. Fully loaded with gimmicks like blade, caltrop, hand grenade, sniper rifle, *etc.*

Magic power 2-Wheel Drive Schutaif A bike that looked American. Currently it was demonically remodeled into Shia's wheels. It seemed it could also fly in the sky.

Bola

For binding. Recently it was used exclusively for Tio, or for Hajime mommy to dry clothes.

Artificial Arm

Kuh, be calm my left hand-

Ornis

Bird shaped reconnaissance plane. There were also various other shapes.

Large Shield

Coffin shaped. It could let out a stake from below to fix it into the ground.
Made from the composite of three kinds of ores.

Variable style large shield Aidion It could turn into sphere shape that defended from all directions.

Hour Crystal

Slowing down the flow of time of a certain range.

Skyboard

Euoka (TN: Refer to Eureka Seven I think)

Ferner

Manta shaped airship. It used gravity control so it could make abnormal maneuver.

Submarine

It could endure even magma.

Hand Grenade *chudon*

Flashbang Grenade *kats*

Burning Grenade *goo*

Paralysis Grenade *abah*

Tear-Gas Grenade *nngih*

Frag Grenades

Telepathy Stone Another world version mobile phone Specific Stone Another world version GPS

Distant Viewing Stone Another world version telescope Reaction Stone Another world version remote control device Magic Eye Stone Chuuni

Sealing Stone It dispersed magic power. The block that sealed Yue

Crystal Key

The key that opened even the door that crossed worlds

Compass of Guidance Crossing

It could find anything

Magic crystal series

It could stock up magic power. There were various shapes like ring, earring, bracelet, *etc.*

Cheatmate

Basic ability increase. It could strengthen the body to endure Limit Break. Cheat is your friend!

Novum Idola

It can make illusion.

Delischanors

Something that bestowed a duplicate soul. It obstructed the soul interference from the opponent. By using it in conjunction with living golem, a pseudo clone could be created.

Lob Regenschirm

Three stages assault lance that rotated in high speed. With the sealing stone, unique unevenness, and high speed rotation, it would dig through and disperse the magic itself.

Special bullet Living Bullet A living bullet. It would listen to a simple order of the user and crushed the target.

Special bullet Burst Bullet A bullet that was accompanied by shockwave.

Special bullet Excise Bullet It could switch the coordinate along with the space between bullet and bullet, or bullet and the user Special bullet Vision Bullet By using it in conjunction with Novum Idola, it could launch illusion.

☆Addition.

Living Golem Arachne

Spider type golem. It could launch things like sleeping drug, paralysis drug, weakening drug, and so on. Even transmutation is OK. It's relatively all-purpose

Satellite type Bel Agharta

It poured down light of regeneration magic.

Special bullet Squirm Shell

A shell that could be packed with various things and fired. Large creature would unavoidably get teary eyed.

Torpedo

It could dye an oasis red. It could also kill an ancient monster quite a bit.

Tent and Kotatsu

The height of civilization that Hajime created

Camping Kit

Right now it was 3LDK with system kitchen attached by using space expansion

Dryer

It increase the glossiness

Impact Grenade

hidebuh

Mask series

Mask pink is retired uniform. Greatly increased battle ability

Gate Key & Gate Hall

Anywheo Door without door (Limited to a place with Gate Hall)

Gran Farenzen

It increased gravity by several times over.

Last Zell

Limit Break for everyone

Drucken

Shia's war hammer. It was changeable to become bombing mode.

Wirr Drucken

Drucken's successor. It could become 100 Ton Hammeeerr

Black Slavery Whip

Tio's whip. It could mass produce black dragon. There were also times where Hajime used it on Tio.

Demon Sword of Circle Calamity Anima Ernte Kaori's twin large sword. Drain type demon sword.

Holy Sword of Gospel Bel Rexion

Kaori's twin large sword. Healing type holy sword.

Schutzengel

Installation type. It deployed Kaori's barrier magic in large scale.

Black katana

Shizuku's beloved katana. The first present from Hajime. At night, she give it maintenance while grinning broadly. Lightning Clad – Wind Claw – Gravity Cut, *etc.*

Will demonstrating katana swarm

Anyway, it's a swarm of black katana that moved by themselves. I'm lacking in chuuni power. Naming under review.

Twin Iron Fan

The user is Suzu. A tiny kid will look slightly elegant with this.

Air Force Boots

You can soar in the sky

Living golem Demon Rangeeerr

Myuu's golem squadron. They had ego before anyone knew it. Myuu christened them "Belfegoor" "Satan" "Asmodeusu" "Lusife~r" "Mamon" "Leviatan" "Baalsebuf"

Recently, the small golems that she received by begging at papa were christened with names like "Agaresu" "Sitrii" or "Marubas" and so on.....

Donneer – Schlaag

The small version of Donner & Schlag exclusive for Myuu. It could also perform electromagnetic acceleration using magic power battery

Kotetsuu – Muuramasa

Short swords exclusive for Myuu. Recently it felt like they were starting to have awareness.....

This is Weapon Desu

Myuu's exclusive black whip. It could exterminate terrorist's "son"

Don't Touch, You Pervert

Myuu's exclusive pencil Cross Velt

Pikko Piko Hammeer

Myuu's exclusive piko piko hammer. Its tip had rabbit character.

Yue-oneechan's Love

Myuu's exclusive jewel magecrao.

Artifacts enchanted with concept magic are excluded. Because it only used that one time.

‘Other than that there is also something like this right?’ If you remember something like that then I’ll add it if I can bother you to write it at the review.

Pardon me if the artifact explanation is atrocious.....

Arifureta Chapter 236

AN: I made it yeah.....

Well, it's just an exposition chapter, so it's not even a content with considerable appeal though (bitter smile)

Thank you very much for the artifact's supplement.

'Come to think of it, there is also something like that huh.' I got that thought a lot of time.

I'll add on it as occasion calls.

Arifureta After II The History of the Sky World

A sound like the creaking of metal resounded, the airship's altitude lowered with a jerk.

「Kyah」

「Piuh」

The silver haired girl and little dragon who were hugging each other while trembling raised a scream at Hajime who was showing a really nice smile in a savage manner. The blonde haired female made contact using something like a radio toward the place that seemed to be the bridge and asked what was happening.

『Roze-sama-. The damage to the ship is horrible, we cannot maintain our floating power-』

The magnified voice resounded to the whole ship. The silver haired girl who was called Roze quickly returned to her senses, and then she turned her gaze at the little dragon——Kuwaibel. Kuwaibel turned its gaze at Roze and nodded once.

「Piii~~~」

It raised a high-pitched cry. Silver light overflowed from its small body which gently enveloped the airship.

『Floating power increasing, 50 percent. Please just a bit more, Kuwaibel-sama.』

「Pii, pipih」

Kuwaibel puffed up his chest with a face that looked a bit triumphant, as though to say「Just leave it to me!」. It seemed that the declining ship was recovering its floating power with the help of that special silver power.

Roze let out a relieved sigh and she tightly hugged again her beloved friend and partner Kuwaibel. She then returned her gaze at Hajime and Tio who were looking at them with very interested gaze.

She stood up, put down Kuwaibel beside her, and then she showed an elegant bow that resembled a courtesy. Her hair was ruffled from the wind, her clothes was also a modest thing that looked like an overall, yet her appearance had a gracefulness that would make people who saw her to get taken aback.

「It's a great honor to be able to meet you for the first time, dragon knight-sama, true dragon-sama. I am Avenst Kingdom's queen Roze Phiris Avenst. As the representative of the dragon kingdom, my greatest thanks for your assistance in this chance.Unfortunately we are in this kind of condition, so we cannot even show you our gratitude satisfactorily, but please, you can rest your wings in our ship Rozeria by all means.」

The two comprehended, indeed this girl's attire looked shabby, but now they could understand the reason of the refinement this girl was clad with. It seemed that Hajime's prediction that she wasn't just a mere pirate was correct.

Roze's words caused the gaze of the blonde haired male and female at both her sides to wander around. It was a fact that they were saved, but the two people in front of them were too much of an unknown. As people whose mission was to protect the queen's safety, Tio's existence added with Hajime's deed and great power were making them hesitate if it was okay to simply approach these two.

「Piih. Piih!」

「Ah, hey-, Ku-chan! That's impolite!」

They couldn't possibly defy these two, but they also couldn't abandon their wariness.....the blonde haired duo were unconsciously putting themselves on guard, but Kuwaibel only gave a glance at the duo who were like that before he quickly flew out and began to fly around Hajime and Tio happily.

Roze was yelling「Come back hereee~e!」with an angry face, but Kuwaibel looked really curious about Tio in her dragon's form, so he was flying in front of Tio's nose tip while sending a deeply interested gaze.

「Tio.」

「Acknowledged.」

With Hajime's call, Tio enveloped her body with a cocoon of black magic power light. The cocoon was shrinking whizzingly. Right after that, the magic power scattered like a bursting bubble and from inside Tio appeared in her usual appearance.

「.....Holy cow. She really can turn into human. It's just like in legend.」

「Even when I see it with this eyes, I still cannot believe it.」

「Nee-san. Can you punch me a bit? I think I'm hallucinating.」

The pilot who was saved by Hajime——Bovid was putting his hand on his forehead while muttering, while the blonde hair duo were also opening their eyes wide in disbelief.

Hajime and Tio ignored their shock and landed on the deck. When they did that, Tio was floating with the dragon wings she let out, but Hajime was normally *stepping on the air* and walked down, so everyone including Roze stared with their eyes almost jumping out from the socket.

Under Hajime's feet that were walking normally as though he was going down a stair were crimson ripples spreading with each step. Everyone was staring at that wordlessly. Even after Hajime had stood on the deck, the gaze of everyone was still glued on Hajime's feet.

「Oi, come back to your senses. We also have various things that we want to ask. The time is limited y'know.」

Hajime tapped his foot while saying that. Hearing that, Roze and others returned to their senses with 'hah' and their gaze met Hajime. Though their gaze still kept glancing at Hajime's feet.

「Tha, that's rude of us. E, excuse me dragon knight-sama. For you to come down here, can I take that to mean that you are going to give us the honor by resting your wings on our ship?」

「I'm not a dragon knight, and depending on the situation I'll leave right away but.....well, it's true that for the time being I'm thinking of talking with you

guys.」

The blonde hair duo frowned at Hajime's wording. They reflexively were about to say something, but then Bovid elbowed them saying「Don't get in her majesty's way」.

「Is that so.....I'm glad. Welcome, dragon knight-sama, true dragon-sama. If it won't displease you, can I please ask for your name?」

「That's why I told you I'm not a dragon knight.I am Hajime, and this is Tio.」

「Nice to meet thou, queen-sama with circumstance.」

「Yes, it's an honor to meet the two of you, Hajime-sama, Tio-sama.」

Roze smiled widely while adding 'sama' when calling the two of them. While she introduced herself as a queen of a country, it seemed she completely saw Hajime and Tio as above her. Surely the reason of her attitude like this was related with the unfamiliar terms she were using before this.

Anyway, they were able to create a friendly atmosphere unlike with the army faction, so Hajime turned his gaze to another direction. Lured by that, the gaze of Roze and others followed Hajime's and there they caught sight of the thing that Hajime was looking at. It was a giant mass of metal. The part of the mother ship that was forcefully purged.

「Excuse me, that's.....」

Roze raised a questioning voice. Hajime manipulated his Cross Velt in exchange for replying to her. The metal mass that was surrounded by barrier was approaching following the Cross Velts' movement.

「Well, it's nothing. This guys are innocent after all, so as expected making them fall together is just too much.」

「E, err.....」

Giving only a glance at the bewildered Roze, Hajime used convergence transmutation to dissolve the metal mass in front of his eyes into particle state. The sight of the gigantic mass of metal surrounded by crimson sparks and rustlingly vanished into sand shape made everyone speechless.

Although, the true surprise came after that. The state inside was exposed when the outer wall was vanishing. Inside there was,

「Wha-. Dragons are, that many inside there.....」

「Chih, so it's something like this. So inside there is the fuel store of those guys' ship.」

Roze pressed her hands on her mouth and leaked out a whisper, and Bovid was clicking his tongue while saying the correct answer.

The room where nearly a hundred dragon species were locked in dissolved in the blink of eye. Several fist sized metal lumps were created above Hajime's hand and they were then stored into "Treasure Warehouse II".

Perhaps because the dragons hadn't flown for long, when the cage locking them in was gone, they were falling without even able to fly. They fell with a flop on the barrier floor that Hajime spread and then they looked around in astonishment while sitting.

「This is troubling. It would be great if they can just fly away quickly but..... they don't even have the strength to fly huh.」

「Uumu. It wouldst take some effort to care for this number. What to do, Goshujin-sama? There art also an option to use cheatmate and mine metamorphosis magic to forcefully remodel their body though?」

Tio suggested using the magic that once transformed the enemy monsters in the holy precincts into black dragons. Hajime carefully pondered that suggestion, but the problem was resolved before he could give the answer.

「Piuh, Piilllhpipih」

Kuwaibel flew up in front of the dragons that weren't trying to fly away and then his body shined silver. The overflowing light was scattering like rain while showering the dragons. After a while, the dragons were starting to move their wings in bewilderment.

At first it was slowly. As though to ascertain the feeling. As though to recall the past.

One dragon, and then one more dragon was floating, and the dragons began

to dance in the sky.

「Monarch dragon.....was it? That was how those guys called this rug rat dragon.」

「Yes. A dragon that grant power to the dragon species. He is truly ought to be called as the king of dragon.」

Dragons in various size were flying around the small dragon clad in silver in adoration, as though they were offering their respect. Hajime and Tio's expression turned admiring while watching that sight.

Before long, the dragons flapped their wings powerfully and became a single flock that flew away. Most likely there was also a floating island at that direction. Kuwaibel was clearly giving out instruction to them to fly over there. It was certain that they would be able to rest their wings there.

「Thank you very much Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. To think that the two of you were able to save those children in the middle of that battle.....how very admirable. As the representative of the dragon kingdom that love dragon and wish to be together with dragon, I offer the two of you my gratitude.」

Roze who stepped forward gracefully bowed her head deeply.

It appeared that Roze and her group were harboring feeling of affection to the dragon species, different from the army faction. Seeing that their side also had sky battlecraft and airship, Hajime thought that they were using the energy body that seemed to come from the dragon's heart, but based on what he saw from Roze's behavior then perhaps there was other method than that. No matter how he couldn't imagine this group killing dragon and took out their core.

While Hajime and Tio's interest was stimulated inside their heart thinking that there were more and more things he wanted to ask with this, they were guided by Roze to go to the reception room. That was how it went but.....

The terrible condition inside the ship that was littered with holes, the crews running around for repair, and then the strange noise that sometimes resounded and the condition that made it seemed like the airship would fall anytime, those factors caused Hajime to ask「.....Is this airship okay?」. In

respond to that, Roze's reply was「I, it's fine you know?」with question mark inside her sentence and her gaze swimming around everywhere. In the end, Hajime rushed around to repair the ship.

He wanted to be spared of the ship crashing while they were talking, so he made them guide him to the broken area and performed repair one after another using transmutation. If there was lack of material, Hajime used a part of the material that he snatched in great amount from the mother ship.

Right after crimson spark surged, the damaged place became just like new in the blink of eye. The absurd spectacle caused all the crews including Roze to goggle.

Even when they were in the middle of moving to the next place, their gaze was nailed at Hajime's hand. When the hand moved to right, their gaze would also go to right, when it moved to left their gaze would also go left. When Hajime tried rotating his arm in a circle, their gaze would also rotate in a circle.

.....To the right a bit faster-. The gazes went to the right swiftly-. Left-, but it was a feint, it was up! Refusing to get tricked the gaze went up! Left up down right left right up-! What the-left up right left right left-, ah, mistaken!?

「Just what art thou doing, Goshujin-sama and also queen-sama too.」

「Ah, no, sorry. Because these guys are moving too obediently, that I unintentionally.....」

「My, my apologize. It feels like it would be a defeat if our gaze get left behind, that I unintentionally.....」

The people around the blushing Roze were also making an expression like「Damn it, we unintentionally.....」in harmony. Perhaps they were unexpectedly a group that could easily get into a certain mood.

With various happenings like that, Hajime and Tio who were invited into the reception room finally sat down on a stiff sofa. A steamy beverage was put in front of them. Most likely it was something similar like tea. A slightly sweet fragrance tickled their nose.

In front of the two was Roze. The blonde hair duo were standing in attention

behind her. Midway to this room Hajime and Tio learned that both of them were siblings, the older sister was Olga Crow, and the little brother was Jean Crow. They seemed to be Roze's imperial guards. The elder sister was the captain of the imperial guards, and the little brother was the vice captain. They could also pilot sky battlecraft, but they were an expert in close quarter combat. It seemed that usually they were also aiding Roze's daily life.

「Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. Forgive me for being too straight, but can I be allowed to ask what kind of objective the two of you have? We.....we have a goal, a mission. I think that if it's the legendary true dragon-sama then your understanding must have grasped it already but.....like this, for the two of you to rush to our side in our time of danger, is it allowed for me to hold a hope that the two of you can give us your cooperation?」

「Wait, wait a bit. Calm down for now.」

From the middle of her talk, Roze's body was leaning forward and she kept talking on and on. Hajime pushed forward both his hands to stop her. Roze pulled back her body in panic and she corrected her posture in shame.

「I'll say this first, but I'm not the dragon knight you queen-san talked about, I also don't understand what you mean by true dragon. The reason is because we aren't a dweller of this world.」

「.....Not a dweller of this world? Forgive me, I don't really understand what do you mean by that.」

「I meant that literally, we are human from different world. A world where there isn't a black rain like here, where the civilization isn't collapsing. There are multiple countries in existence there and they more or less believe in order and law.」

Roze's expression was getting more and more bewildered.

Hajime smiled wryly understandingly and he talked the summary of their experience of coming to this world. Whether they would believe it or not in the end, Hajime would leave it to their own decision. For the time being, he conveyed to Roze that with the premise that they were from another world, he wished for her to teach him about this world, the situation, and about the unfamiliar terms that sometimes came out in their conversation.

「It's a story that I cannot believe so suddenly but.....for now, I understand that this talk itself won't progress without me explaining the situation. Having said that, I don't know from where do I have to start explaining.....」

「Right.....then, first, what is that black rain? Teach us starting from there. What happened that now the land is polluted by that rain?」

「So from there. So it's really true, that the two of you doesn't know about this world.....」

Roze took a gulp of the drink with her mind still shaken by bewilderment and for now she reset herself. She pondered for a bit thinking how should she explain, and then she began to talk.

「The black rain, it is said to be the proof of the fallen monarch dragon——Helmut's grief and rage.」

In the past, at the time where the black rain still didn't exist, in the center of dragon kingdom Avenst where Roze's ancestor was acting as the king, there was an era of peace where dragon and human coexisted.

「In that era, when dragon and human reached a certain age, it was the custom for them to choose a partner to exchange friendship of a lifetime. One of the monarch dragons who were the partner of the dragon kingdom royalty in such era, was the evil dragon Helmut.」

「Monarch dragon, what does that mean?」

「Monarch dragon, they are dragon that possess special power even among the dragon species. They possess silver scales, bestow strength to the dragon species and the land, and they are able to exchange words with human. They are the ruling kind among the dragons that will only exchange friendship with the royalty of the dragon kingdom.」

The oldest and strongest country——Dragon Kingdom Avenst. A part of the reason of that status was because in a world where dragon was human's greatest friend, the kingdom royalty was the only one that could exchange friendship with the dragon's ruling kind.

「I see. That country surely was a country with influence huh.」

「Yes. The center of the world was without a doubt located in the dragon kingdom. However, even that era was approached by the end. ——It was the development of technology.」

Except the existence of dragons and ores and the like that possessed special energy, there wasn't any mysterious power like magic or anything in this world. It was inevitable for technology to develop here just like in earth. The difference was at the point that in place of electricity and gas, this world was using an energy that was called sky core.

「Sky core, is that the sky blue ore that is even smaller than grains of sand?」

「So you know about that..... Yes, exactly. It is a special ore with traits where it can be changed into various kinetic energy, stimulate the growth of crops, or even neutralize gravity. It's an ore that is really hard to be collected, but it can even allow an airship this big and sky battlecrafts to fly like this, and it can also produce light, heat, cold for our daily life.」

「.....This ship, it's not using that thing that is like the dragon's heart?」

「-. Obviously-. Please don't lump us together like those Qwailent bunches-」

「.....Calm down. I'm completely ignorant what is common sense and what is not in this world. I'll properly listen to queen-san's story, so please explain.」

「ah, my, my apologize.」

Roze whose boiling temper got cooled by Hajime's calm words cleared her throat. According to the explanation that she resumed, the thing that seemed like the dragon's heart——that was something that was called dragon core, it seemed that even just a cubic centimeter of it possessed the same amount of energy of a fist sized sky core.

Naturally, processing dragon core was very much better in labor and efficiency, but it seemed that Roze and others who were the descendant of dragon kingdom who didn't discard their country's ideal of coexisting with dragon even now when their country had perished, they were only using sky core. Because of that, their airship's spec was several level lower compared to the airship of their enemy——Sky Divine Country Qwailent. They also had difficulty in resupply, so they were always struggling with lacks of materials.

Somehow, it made it hard to drink the richly fragrant tea in front of them.....

「Nkuh. This is delicious. Second please.」

「Ah, yes.」

Hajime-san mercilessly asked for second. Right after Roze was explaining with a bitter smile about their destitute living situation. The expression of the Crow siblings shuddered. 'Is this man's nerve made from special alloy wire!?' They wondered.

「And? The continuation?」

「Ah, yes. Eerr.....that's right. While the technology development is continuing, a certain researcher discovered it. That the dragon core is far more efficient than sky core. The dragons who were the great companion of mankind had their remains buried courteously even after death. The dragon core that should be called as that dragon's soul was buried along with the dragon's remain, returning back to the land. That was the norm in that time.」

「So curiosity, stepped across that common sense?」

「I don't understand the feeling of that researcher. In the record, it was said that at the end of his research he created the fastest aircraft at that time using the dragon core of his partner who died from an unforeseen accident. And then, he didn't create anything other than that.It's possible, that man might only wished to fly together in the sky one more time using an aircraft that is inserted with the soul of his departed friend.」

The truth of the matter was unknown. However, the fact was that at the same time with that man's discovery, the countries all over the world also noticed it. The value of dragon core.

And then, it began. The cruel and terrifying act of dragon hunting.

Technology that made use of sky core required extremely much effort starting from the collection of the sky core. Sky core at the very least need to be fist sized to be useful, but the sky core that could be collected was only small things that were like sand. Just collecting it and compressing it into usable size consumed so much time and cost. Major effort was necessary just to research it.

Those necessities were removed by using dragon core. The research advanced rapidly and technology was developed with striking momentum.

「It was said that the countries all over the world unanimously gathered dragon core and the technology race intensified. In the middle of that, it was only the dragon kingdom that was trying to stop the tide of the world that is making dragon hunting as right. The kingdom used all kind of method. Economic sanction, preferential treatment from the dragon kingdom, the export of sky core.....sometimes they even used military force along with the monarch dragons.」

「.....How long they could do that?」

Roze made a troubled smile at Hajime's words.

While the countries around them were continuing to develop technology, they rejected dragon hunting as wrong——that had the same meaning as being left behind by the world. Even if they were an influential country, but if their technology level was overwhelmingly left behind, it wasn't hard to imagine what kind of evaluation other countries would have against them.

Even so the dragon kingdom continued to reject dragon hunting was because the dragon species shouldered the role as balancer of the world. It wasn't something that was proven scientifically. It was something like a superstitious belief. But, it was believed that dragons had a role of taking in toxic substance of the world into their body, and then they purified it to return it back to the world.

That was the belief in the dragon kingdom.

In a world where technology development advanced, a fact without proof wasn't worthy to be believed in. Even when the dragon kingdom persuaded that if the dragon hunting continued at this rate a calamity would occur, no one bothered to listen.

Like that the authority of dragon kingdom wavered, their influence lowered, and shadow was looming on their power.

「The one who showed unease at such situation was the first prince of the dragon kingdom at that time. He became unable to endure the declining of his

homeland. He casted away the belief as superstition and strongly appealed for technology development using dragon core.」

「Naturally, it didn't end well wasn't it?」

「Yes. In the record, harsh writings about him.....like he was the shame of dragon kingdom, or a traitor were written. However, even when he was showered with criticism from all the people of his homeland, he didn't stop. No, exactly because he loved his homeland from the bottom of his heart, that he couldn't stop anymore.」

「.....I can picture it somehow. So he did it?」

Hajime looked up to the ceiling with an air that seemed to say 'dear god'. Tio too seemed to be able to imagine what happened. She sighed as though to say that it was depressing just hearing it.

Even while smiling bitterly at the two, Roze talked with sadness at the forefront of her eyes.

How the prince, laid his hand on the monarch dragon who was his greatest friend.

A research of dragon core technology that was advanced behind closed door. As the last finishing touch, he murdered his partner, and with that dragon core——he constructed a gigantic flying warship that used the dragon core of monarch dragon for the first time in the world.

That ship's majesty was tremendous, to the degree that the military balance at that time was tilted slightly just by that one warship.

Surely that prince felt relieved with that. With that his homeland was saved. There would be peace. The other countries wouldn't make light of them anymore than this, they wouldn't be invaded so easily.

「Thus, the dragon kingdom recovered its authority, but in exchange they lost their pride and persuasiveness huh.」

「Must be. Even if they called for the cessation of dragon hunting, no one wouldst listen to them. After all, they hath murdered a king of dragon to create a warship. Even putting aside other countries, the kingdom's own people

wouldst be the one that gave up on the country most of all.」

「Exactly as you said. A storm visited the dragon country and they even met a crisis of internal disunity. But then, an occurrence so terrifying as though to say something like the risk of civil war is just a trivial thing was starting to happen.」

Black rain was starting to fall.

「Coming this far, the world finally noticed that they were mistaken. The true identity of the black rain is the end of the road of the energy that is released from sky core and dragon core. This thing that is dispersed into the air and changed in nature possesses a property that doesn't grant vitality but instead steal it.」

「I see. Let's put aside the detail about the underlying theory, it's true then that the dragon race, and perhaps the sky core are really balancer of this world.」

「Fumu. The world art holding true above a balance. Noon and night, man and woman, positive and negative.....it's natural for a negative energy to also exist if a positive energy exist. The dragon species and sky core take in negative energy, they then turn that energy into positive energy that they release back, when the released energy accomplished their role they wouldst turn into negative energy, then that energy wouldst be taken in by dragon species and sky core once more.....the world art in circulation.」

The role of dragon species that was proved for the first time with the manifestation of calamity.

However, mankind who noticed that fact then charged headlong to the unforeseen direction.

「The dignity of the dragon species was trampled down. The choice that mankind took wasn't the abolishment of dragon hunting, or the safeguard of dragon race——it was cultivation.」

「Oou. I knew it already but.....even in different world, human's karma is really deep anywhere huh.」

Several countries publicized their breeding farms that were made in secret. Mankind had already soaked their hand with sin that couldn't be taken back

since before the danger of the world. They made those breeding farms not because they thought that this would happen in advance, they surely didn't even imagine that it would turn out like this. Their conduct of selling over the know-how of the cultivation brazenly to the world, just how foolish was that.

Who would be angry at the deed of mankind?

That was obvious. The royalty of dragon.

They believed. The royalty and people of the dragon kingdom loved them the dragon species from the heart, even when the country was on the verge of danger the people didn't give up to coexist with the dragon species. Because of that they believed, that surely human and dragon could walk together once more.

They endured. Even when dragon species was losing life one after another from dragon hunting, even when their relative monarch dragon was killed by the prince, because if they rampaged following their emotion then the dragon kingdom they loved would be crushed by the countries all over the world.

「The king made a decision. He told the father of monarch dragons who is his partner——Sutherland, that human and dragon should part with each other for once. The king said to take away all the dragon species and escape to the end of the world. If there are people that survived from the black rain, at that time the king asked for the dragon to grant a chance for the two sides start over one more time. Sutherland accepted and decided to part from mankind. However, that decision was a bit too late.」

「.....So Sutherland's child, couldn't put up with it?」

Sutherland's child, the twin elder brother of the murdered monarch dragon——Helmut attacked a cultivation place and the country it resided in before his father's decision.

At the same time with that, it was an incident that was enough to erase the light of the coexistence faction that still hadn't vanished yet. Every country that obtained a just cause carried out the capture and subjugation of the dragon kingdom using their fleets.

「It was an alliance of many countries, yet regardless of that their pace was

orderly, and their subjugation strategy was swift and precise. Even Sutherland who boasted of an unequalled strength, the best that he could do was to let some number of dragons to escape.」

「That was their aim huh. Perhaps the breeding farms were also provocation. It was to eliminate the remaining coexistence faction and completely taking down monarch dragons that were still a threat.」

「That, must be it. The dragon species that were massing to depart to the end of the world were pushed back by the quantity of the allied army and they were falling to the ground. Sutherland's children were killed one after another, or else their wings plucked and captured.....it was truly a hellish picture. At the very least, it was enough to transform Helmut into evil dragon.」

His siblings murdered, their dignity crushed underfoot, the black emotion that had been piling mountain high, when he saw his siblings trampled before his eyes once more——it snapped. Helmut's mind crumbled and something awoke inside him.

It was said that the moment Helmut raised a howl that planted fear inside everyone that listened, the sky that should be clear was covered with dark clouds in the blink of eye, and then black rain was starting to rain in impeccable timing.

「Fumu. Based from what I heard here.....the power of circulation that dragon race possessed, was it reversed in this case? However, if this monarch dragon possessed a power to the degree that couldst manipulate the weather, I don't think that they wouldst lose against mankind in the first place though.....」

「How common. Wasn't it the rage and hatred that surpassed the limit that pushed up the rank of this Helmut? Aa, could it be, he evolved into this true dragon that queen-san mentioned before?」

Roze smiled wryly at the quick understanding of the two while giving affirmation.

True dragon was said to be the ancestor of the dragon kingdom's royalty and the monarch dragons. Its power was immense, and it was told that it could manipulate heaven and earth and could also transform into human, and so on. There was nothing left of its existence except in legend, a fairy-tale existence.

There wasn't any record of Helmut transforming into human, but it seemed that he was called as a historical true dragon that evolved from monarch dragon due to the aspect of manipulating weather. However, it was also an ability that was limited to covering the world with cloudy weather that made black rain fell.

「Tio-sama is able to transform into human, and that overwhelming ability..... you manipulated wind and flame before this. That, as expected you are a true dragon.....」

「No no, I'm not a true dragon. It's the reverse. I'm not a dragon that turn into human. The correct recognition art I am a human that turn into dragon.」

「Human, become dragon?」

「In our world.....no, more accurately in Tio's world, there is that kind of race. Her family is all able to transform into dragon. If they are really true dragon, then that will be a bargain sale of fairy-tale existence.」

Hajime cackled saying「Well, even though she isn't a true dragon, but she is a god dragon though」while sending Tio a teasing gaze. Tio looked aside saying「I didn't say any lie」. (TN: True dragon's kanji is read as shinryuu, while accidentally god dragon's kanji is also read as shinryuu. Also the kanji for dragon of the god dragon here is for eastern dragon.)

Seeing the relaxed relationship of the two, Roze asked timidly.

「That, then, as expected about the two of you being dragon knight-sama and true dragon-sama.....」

「From what I can guess, this dragon knight is also an existence from a fairy-tale, and he was the true dragon's partner, isn't that right? But it's completely different. Tio can become dragon but she is a fully fledged human, and even if you say partner but she isn't my friend, but my wife.」

「Wi, wife.....」

「Mu, mumu-. Wi, wife.....that's the first time someone called me that. What's this, this itchy feeling in mine chest. Goshujin-sama, this child, she is really a good child!」

Tio got all bashful and fidgety from getting called as wife for the first time. The eyes she were looking Roze with were suddenly filled with color of affection. Really, what a simple dragon.

Ignoring the writhing Tio, Hajime prompted Roze to continue talking. The simple dragon「Nou nou, Goshujin-sama. I'm thy wife」leaning on him was annoying, so for the time being he made her quiet with a slap. Seeing the hopelss dragon raising a coquettish voice「Ahanh」while collapsing on the sofa in ecstasy, the gaze of Roze and others became nailed on Tio.

Hajime's cough made them returned to reality.

「Ah, e, errrr.....that's right. Helmut who became true dragon and began covering the world with black rain was said to have lost his former heart. Without discriminating human or dragon, he raised a loud laugh as though enjoying the destruction while trampling over everything.」

「So that guy degenerated completely. The birth of evil dragon, is it.」

「Yes. It was said that Sutherland began a deathly battle in order to stop his fallen son. At the same time, his spouse Detmers led their surviving children back to the dragon kingdom.」

There was one reason for that. In order to save their friend.

It was unknown whether Sutherland was able to stop Helmut. Even if for example he could, mankind would perish under the black rain that was rapidly covering the whole world. Their beloved dragon kingdom would die out.

Sutherland possessed an exceptional strength even among the monarch dragons. And if he fought seriously, then other would only become a hindrance to him. Understanding that, amidst the falling black rain, Detmers and others dashed in order to save the humans that had cornered them.

「The essence of monarch dragon's power is invigoration. And then, sky core has the property to neutralize gravity.」

「So that's, the reason of the floating islands.」

「Yes. But, as expected although they are monarch dragon, they couldn't do something like making the whole land float. What they could do was only

making land with particularly abundant sky core to float. Even so, there is no mistake that we can live like this is thanks to the act of Detmers-sama and others that they carried out by staking their life.」

Kuwaibel who was snuggling up beside Roze raised a sad cry. Surely he understood the content of their talk. Roze gently caressed such Kuwaibel.

「This child is a memento from Detmers-sama. At that time it still wasn't time to give birth, but Detmers-sama who was in the verge of death because of the black rain and using up enormous power cut up her own body and left behind an egg. She said, this child who will be born someday, will be the hope as the last monarch dragon.」

It seemed that Helmut didn't come chasing after the floating land. According to the record, it seemed he watched the floating island while laughing. It was as though he was looking forward to the crisis that mankind would taste from there on.

Roze who took a breath after finishing the long story moistened her parched throat. And then, she faced Hajime with a gaze that was filled with determination unlike before this.

「After twenty years passed since that day of tragedy, the dragon kingdom that continued to exist in the sky received an invasion from sky pirate. Our country was stolen. At that time I was still a baby, I was able to survive thanks to my parents' close aides taking me away along with Kuwaibel's egg.」

Even without her saying anything, it could be guessed that the king and queen had died from Roze's expression.

The dragon kingdom perished and Sky Divine Country Qwailent came into being. The king was the air pirate's leader. He monopolized the limited resource. Roze and others who were chased out were reduced to air pirate, they slipped through the divine country's eyes and stole resource, and protected the people of the dragon kingdom who escaped together with them until now.

Like that, when Roze became ten years old, Kuwaibel was finally born. The people of the former dragon kingdom were boiled up by the birth of hope, at the same time, they kept hiding Kuwaibel's existence who was still weak so that the divine country wouldn't realize it no matter what.

「Even that end with today. My stomach froze when Kuwaibel came out to the battlefield but.....from there, to think we were able to encounter Hajime-sama and Tio-sama.....」

「Fuuh? And?」

Although Roze faltered for a moment at Hajime's penetrating gaze, she immediately returned back a blazing gaze.

「I beg you. Please lend us your strength. The strength to take back the land of dragon kingdom Avenst.」

It seemed that in the deepest part of dragon kingdom Avenst, there was a spring that could grant power to monarch dragon. If they could go there, even Kuwaibel who was still only a few years old would become able to use a power that equaled a grown dragon even if just temporarily.

There if Hajime and Tio's strength was combined with Avenst's mother ship and other airships, then it would also be possible to defeat the evil dragon Helmut, explained Roze earnestly.

Hajime glanced at Tio beside him. Tio's expression was pondering something, but she noticed Hajime's gaze and shrugged, leaving him to make the decision.

Hajime scratched on his cheek and he lowered his eyebrows a bit while,

「For now, let's put it on hold.」

He answered. Roze went「Eeh, isn't this the scene where you gladly accept!?!」 in fluster because her expectation was betrayed. Hajime said「Something like that is the domain of a hero somewhere or the abyss-san」and deflected easily.

Tio was staring at such Hajime with an expression that didn't expect it. As expected, if Hajime was told something that easily went outside the category of adventure like 'please go to a war with a country, and then please defeat the evil dragon and save the world', Tio thought that he would refuse promptly.

For Hajime whose basis was swift decision, it was a really half-baked answer.

「Well, what. Even us, after hearing the story just now we ain't just going to say "Oh is that so, yes, we will do anything". Various things happened today and we are tired. For now we are going to rest, think it carefully, and then we will

give our decision tomorrow. You don't mind right?」

「Tha, that's right. Indeed I'm too impatient just now. Even though Hajime-sama and Tio-sama has just finished with a battle of that degree, my deepest apologize for my inattentiveness. We have prepared a room. It is a modest thing, but later on we will bring you your dinner, so please rest at ease tonight.」

「Ou. Much obliged, I won't hold back then. Okay Tio, let's go.」

「Ri, right.」

Hajime emptied his tea and stood up abruptly. He led Tio and got out of the room. A crew that would guide them immediately appeared and took them to their room. Roze was staring fixedly at the back of such Hajime and Tio with an expression that was a mix of hope and unease.

The airship Rozeria was gliding through the night sky where multitude of stars were shining.

At a corner of the ship's rear deck, there were the figures of Hajime and Tio. Both of them were sitting at the edge of the deck. Their legs were thrown out to the empty air. The sea of clouds that were shining from the reflection of the stars let the eyes of the two of them to enjoy the sight to their heart's content.

「And, why didst thou put the decision on hold, Goshujin-sama?」

Tio asked Hajime while watching him with a sidelong glance. Hajime was also similarly watching Tio with a sidelong glance while he opened his mouth.

「I'm thinking of deciding after hearing of what you want to do.」

「What I want to do?」

Tio tilted her head. Hajime nodded.

「Yeah. What do you want to do Tio? The restoration of the dragon kingdom doesn't matter, but you have a tii~ny bit on your mind about this evil dragon aren't you?」

「.....So thou noticed Goshujin-sama.」

Getting seen through like this even though she shouldn't have taken any

conspicuous attitude caused Tio's cheeks to redden from feeling too embarrassed. She thought that he really looked at her closely.

Tio slowly opened her mouth as though she was choosing her words.

「I thought that it was similar, just a bit. Of their way of living, and their last days.」

「Is it about, the dragon race's country in the past?」

「Yes. I understand Helmut's feeling, just a little. At that time, when I saw Haha-ue and mine comrades crucified, a black flame was certainly born inside me. A flame of hatred that only wished to burn others, even myself.」(TN: Haha-ue=mother, used in samurai families)

Hajime returned a silence at Tio who was talking bit by bit. He kept quiet while looking forward, lending his ear at Tio's story.

「I was able to stop because of Chichi-ue's words. I was able to change the black flame into power to protect. Helmut art surely the me of that time that couldst not stop.」(TN: Chichi-ue=father)

That was why she couldn't just be indifferent to this. When she thought that the fallen king of dragon would continue to ravage this world with black rain even from here on forever, for some reason, the feeling that this was intolerable was welling up inside.

「This is just a retelling from Yue.....」The track that Tio had walked through until now. That is Tio's everything" isn't that right? That's just a meaningless supposition. Helmut was unable to win against himself. Tio Claus won against herself. That's all there is to it right?」

「Fufu, thou art right.」

Tio smiled fondly and nodded at the words of Hajime that sounded a bit displeased, as though to say 'don't lump together the stupid idiot that ruin the world with my Tio'.

A quiet time was flowing for a while.

Hajime glanced once more at Tio before he scratched a bit roughly on his head.

「Aah, geez. Stop being indecisive and say your answer already. I'm asking you here, what do you want to do huh? You are too considerate to other people other than yourself at various things. I'm telling you, show some selfishness sometimes other than with your perverted attitude.」

「Goshujin-sama.....」

Tio blinked. And then, she reflexively closed her eyes and hid her expression toward Hajime who was staring at her fixedly. She then whispered.

「I want to end this. This art completely unrelated with us. The scale art too big to call it an adventure. The opponent's strength art unknown. This is just mine ego talking. I understand all that. However——I wish to end this.」

That was Tio's true feeling. It was Tio's selfishness that came from her sentimentality, based from her ego, for the sake to cheer up herself.

Hajime who heard that,

「Roger. Let's end this. We are going to end the evil dragon Helmut's everything, just for our own convenience.」

He easily consented to it.

When Tio turned her face, she found Hajime's face that looked somewhat happy there. An expression of happiness from listening to Tio's selfishness.

‘Aah, no more-’ Tio yelled out her indescribable feeling in her heart while leaping at her beloved master.

The light of stars shining in the night sky enveloped the two with faint gentle light.

Roze's group at that time.

「Awa, awawawah. The two of them, doing that in this kind of place-. Aa, amazing-」

「Ro, Roze-sama-. You mustn't look-. Co, come on, we understood already that they didn't disappear, let's go back inside quickly!」

「Pii, piii」

「Kuwaibel-sama..... It looks like you are hiding your face with your wings, but it's obvious you are completely looking from the gaps there.」

「Ou ou. As expected from the legendary dragon knight-sama yeah. Doing that on the deck so brazenly. How envious.」

「Bovid-. What are you doing looking so unashamedly like that! Quickly take Roze-sama inside the ship! Roze-sama too, please release your hands from the railing! Come on, quickly-. Hey, your strength increases-. Just how interested are you-」

Roze-sama was grasping the railing tightly and wouldn't let go with her nose breathing roughly. Olga was desperately trying to take her back inside the ship, but her hold was so tight it made her shudder wondering just where did she hide this much strength!

Kuwaibel in his own way was hiding his face with his wings while also thoroughly peeking from the gaps. Jean acted the straight-man, but Kuwaibel's gaze completely stuck!

Seeing such covert pervert duo of monarch dragon and queen, it was only Bovid who was cackling while nonchalantly making his swift retreat.

Because he noticed that Hajime's gaze was seizing their figure from across the shoulder of Tio who he embraced closely.

A few seconds after Bovid vanished, crimson spark surged in the night sky.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next chapter update is planned to be at 6 P.M Saturday.

Arifureta Chapter 237

Arifureta After II Nation on Ship Avenst

AN: I'm sorry, it's late again. Furthermore the story doesn't advance.

This is bad, I'm genuinely becoming unable to make it in time at 6 P.M Saturday.....

I wonder if I should change it to Sunday.....

The early morning when the eastern sky was starting to be tinged white. Perhaps also because of the high altitude, the air was piercingly cold. The blowing wind made the receiver to feel slight pain.

It depended on the person whether to feel it as refreshing or torture. Although, even if it was someone who felt it refreshing, they still shouldn't wish to stay inside such coldness for long.

In such environment, there were two silhouettes leisurely staying there for thirty minutes already.

On the deck of the airship Rozeria, there were Tio and Hajime relaxing with a steamy cup beside them.

The minerals that Hajime obtained in this world were lined up in front of him. He took them into his hand and stared at them passionately, toyed with them.....it seemed that he was displaying his transmutation master nature without reservation. Beside him was Tio, she was exposing a gentle expression as though her usual perversion was just a lie while staring at Hajime's hand and face.

「E, excuse me~. Is it, a good time?」

A timid voice called at them. When Hajime and Tio turned their gaze, there

they saw a beautiful girl with semi-long silver hair——Roze. Kuwaibel was firmly held inside her arms.

「Aa, what's the matter, queen-san. The queer queen-san who was loitering around there since around ten minutes ago.」

「Please at least greet if you actually noticed already!」

The truth was Roze-chan had arrived on the deck since around ten minutes ago. She witnessed a gentle atmosphere around the two that was hard to interrupt as a third person. And then, what crossed in the back of her mind was this and that from last night. As the result, she didn't know how should she call out at them and so she made an appeal「I'm nearby just by chance. Come on, notice me already! Greet out to me from your side!」.

「Roze-dono's blatant "notice me appeal" art cute, that we acted mean against our better judgment. Forgive us?」

「Uh. That, no, I was in the wrong because I didn't immediately call out.....」

Roze who felt like running away even more from getting apologized honestly like that had her face blushed slightly in shyness from hearing Tio's remark that she was "cute", her mouth moved in mumbles.

「And, what do you want? Queen-san whose act is painful to look at.」

「That thing last night was Hajime-sama's fault! Does Hajime-sama hate me!?!」

Last night, the punishment from demon king-sama was waiting for Roze-chan's party who was peeking at the scene where Hajime and Tio were exchanging love.

——Demon King-style Harassment 108 "From Today You Too Are Hauria"

A harassment by using artifact that reproduced a pseudo "Divine Statement" by applying and enchanting soul magic. The result was "the target's act became chuuni for a period of time".

It went without saying that when they saw the act of Roze and Crow siblings that suddenly turned painful to look at, the eyes of the other crews turned into dot. They even called the ship doctor thinking that the everyday hardships might finally turn them strange. Even after the effect ran out, they didn't even

have the willpower to complain to Hajime and the three harmoniously sat on the corner of the room while grasping their knees to endure their black history.

Bovid who sensed demon king-sama's anger a touch faster and escaped alone watched such trio and laughed loudly while rolling on the floor. Him acting like that made it felt like there was a retort 'is it fine to roll around laughing at your lord's foolishness like that, captain of the air battle squad's first squad' that could be heard.

「Good grief, we cannot progress like this right? Stop making merry and say your business.」

「-. Ho, hold it down me. I am the queen of the proud dragon kingdom. It's fine. Take a deep breath. Suu, haa.....」

With blood vein pulsing on her forehead, including the wretchedness of the punishment last night, Roze renewed her determination 'I won't mistake someone like this as the legendary dragon knight-sama for the second time!' and then she told the two that the breakfast preparation had finished.

「Queen-san herself expressly come here just to tell us that? Even though you can just leave that to your subordinate.」

「No, that's because when I heard that the two of you were on the deck even since when the sun hadn't risen that I'm curious about what are you doing.」

It seemed that it was something like that. Hajime shrugged and his hand beckoned at Roze whose body shrunk from cold. Roze whose gaze wandered around feeling a bit perplexed approached Hajime's side excitedly.

「Ah. The wind is.....」

「Tio is covering the surrounding with wind barrier. A wind that contain heat. Feels really pleasant right?」

「Ye, yes.Whether it's Hajime-sama's tool, or Tio-sama's magic, they are really something that is outside our common sense. About the talk of another world, I think it finally feel real for me after a night passed.」

「Well, even if I told you of another world it's not something that can be accepted right away.」

Roze glanced at Hajime who kept making crimson sparks at the ore in his hand even while they were talking. It was a vibrant crimson light. The ore changed shape right away. It was completely a mysterious power that human of this world didn't have. The supernatural weapon created by that hand easily routed a gigantic battleship.

But, Roze knew that Hajime's power wasn't just making supernatural weapon. She didn't hear about the detailed story, she also didn't think of forcefully asking, but she saw that right after Hajime showed his appearance, he tore to pieces the hook of an approaching sky battlecraft unarmed. That was something different with the power to create thing that she was looking at right now.

Honestly, she couldn't see his bottom. She thought it was terrifying. And now when she knew that this person wasn't the noble dragon knight from fairy-tale who was the personification of justice, she felt it even more.

However, for them the descendant of dragon kingdom who were heading toward a slow ruin, the existence of Hajime and Tio was like a gift from heaven.

Also this timing when the last monarch dragon Kuwaibel had been born, she couldn't help but feel that there was destiny at work.

「Oh, finally.」

「We hath waited long. I hath great anticipation because of that.」

「? Excuse me, both of you what are.....」

Hajime threw his gaze to the eastern sky while one of his hands was carrying an ore. Tio also focused her gaze while leaning close to Hajime. Roze who didn't understand what the two of them were doing tilted her head with question mark floating above her head.

「What you ask, it's that. We are here because we want to see that.」

Hajime said that and pointed, at the thing that was showing out its face right now——the sun.

The sunlight swept away the blackness of night and dyed the world silver. The shadow of the sea of clouds darkened, and the illuminated place started to

shine in sparkles like jewel.

The sunrise seen from the deck of an airship that was continuously flying above the sea of clouds.

That was exactly the reason why Hajime and Tio got out on the deck since early morning. For the sake of settling it firmly inside their memory, the superb view of another world they went astray into through a strange phenomenon.

「.....It's not bad. Yeah, it looks really great.」

「This art a harsh world, but the strength of the light that wipe out the black of night art the same no matter what the world. Yes, it's wonderful. It's a beautiful world.」

「.....」

Roze was dumbfounded.

The words “beautiful world” that came out from Tio's mouth echoed many times inside her head. When she thought about it, when was the last time she watched the sunlight like this? She thought that this sight entered her sight every day.

However, she didn't think anything about that view. She was merely desperate to survive and to accomplish her duty, she didn't even look at the sky despite living in the sky. She noticed that although at this late hour.

The world was getting brighter moment by moment.

「.....Yes, it's beautiful. Really beautiful.」

Words of agreement. However, in contrast with those words, Roze's expression was vaguely dark.

「The food is delicious even with how simple it is. Ah, give me another of this.」

「You, you are really not holding back huh.」

On the breakfast table, there were Hajime and Tio, and then Roze, Kuwaibel, Crow siblings, Bovid, and then a male crew that seemed to shoulder the role as a waiter. Usually they didn't have anything like a waiter, even the queen Roze

and also the imperial guards leaders Crow siblings would do everything by themselves.

This time it was a special situation where they were welcoming guest that were Hajime and Tio.

Hajime's remark of "another" despite saying that the food was simple while also understanding the reason why the food was simple caused the waiter's cheeks to twitch a bit, even so he obediently obeyed. Bovid retorted with an amazed expression. His attitude to the two of them was the most casual among the crews of this ship.

「Yeah. I'll stop if I'm told to stop, but as long as no one say that, it's my principle to receive the hospitality I'm given with my all.」

「Hahah, I get that. I was also taught by my father to receive the good will I'm given without reservation. You had even saved our life, so eat as much as you want. Though even after I say that, the one who create and prepare the food is actually not me! Ahahahah」

‘Really, don't say anything you.....’ The gaze of the Crow siblings that was wordlessly appealing so was piercing Bovid. However, Bovid didn't pay that any attention. Right now, rather than the serious Crow siblings, it was more important to make Hajime and Tio felt welcome. He had finished saying thanks last night from getting his life saved, but as expected it was best to show the thanks with action. That was Bovid's cherished opinion.

It seemed that they was used to Bovid's unserious attitude, so Olga sighed while turning her gaze at her master. Olga couldn't stop frowning at Roze's state that was clad in a vaguely dark atmosphere since she went to call Hajime and Tio on the deck.

「.....Roze-sama. Did something happen?」

Leaving a glance at Bovid who was talking cheerfully with Hajime, Olga talked at Roze with a quiet whisper.

Roze who looked taken aback and returned to her senses then shook her head and showed a smile to avoid the question.

「We still, haven't heard the decision of Hajime-sama and Tio-sama.....so it

looks like my unease came out in my face.」

「Is that, so.」

Orga looked like she couldn't accept the explanation and she sent a glance of doubt, thinking that as expected the two of them had done something to her master.....her body twitched.

Because Tio's hand stopped moving at the meal and she was staring fixedly at Roze and Olga.

When Tio's eyes met Olga's, she showed a smile that looked trouble, but also looked somehow gentle. Olga twitched even more from that expression.

Hajime and Tio who finally finished their meal after asking another helping twice then enjoyed the after meal black tea made in another world. Choosing the timing, Roze then asked with determination.

「.....Hajime-sama. Regarding the answer for my wish last night, can I ask you to please tell us your answer?」

Defeat the divine country together and revive the dragon kingdom Avenst. And then, after putting in order a complete force, subjugate the evil dragon Helmut.

That was their cooperation request. Thinking from the aspect of their battle strength, they wished for Hajime and Tio to become the leading part in the battlefield. Especially in the part to defeat the divine country where Kuwaibel was still powerless, almost all of that part would rely completely on Hajime like that.

Last night, when Hajime and Tio got out on the deck, they thought that perhaps the two of them would then disappear without telling anyone and so they spontaneously ran after them.

But, seeing the two of them were still staying here like this, then surely the two would grant their wish.....

Although they were thinking so, but they couldn't help but gulp their saliva from nervousness.

Inside the room where complete silent had descended, Hajime slowly put the

cup of tea he drank on the table,

「We are going to slaughter Helmut, but we don't give a damn about that divine country something. You guys work hard yourself about that.」

「Wait, I don't understand what you are saying.」

They almost trembled in happiness when they heard that the two would kill the evil dragon, but they suddenly went cold hearing the sentence's latter half. Roze asked back with a half smile looking as though she was running from reality.

「I told you, I cannot be bothered about your country's revival, but as for Helmut, we are thinking perhaps we will go kill that guy a bit, purely for our own convenience.」

「.....Wait, I don't understand what you are sa——」

「Aa?」

「Understand. Evil dragon subjugation banzai. Sayonara the future of dragon kingdom's revival. That's what you are saying right. I understand.」

Roze who tried to do her best added with escaping reality, but she returned to reality due to Hajime's voice and expression that looked like yakuza. She couldn't stop her eyes from getting teary. Replacing Roze who fell silent, the Crow siblings stood up so fast their chair fell down while raising voice of protest and persuasion.

「Why!? If you two have that much power, then it shouldn't be that difficult to defeat the divine country! This is our dearest wish-. Please, I beg you two to rethink it-. Please-」

「Right now, even in this time the people of the dragon kingdom are suffering in hardship! The dragons are also in the same situation! Didn't the two of you repel the mother ship of the divine country yesterday and saved the dragons-? Here please show your righteousness one more time!」

Olga and Jean's words resounded loudly. However, the expression of Hajime who received those words showed not a single ripple.

「This is not really something you need to raise your voice that much right? If

Helmut is defeated, the world will clear up. When that happen, then you can build your country anywhere on the vast land down there. Something like the land that might be polluted, or the battle against the divine country of that, those things are matters that are not related at all to us resident of another world. We don't happen to have any duty or responsibility to become your substitute in war.」

The sound argument that was returned to them caused the Crow siblings to be at loss for words. However, the power that Hajime and Tio showed wasn't something that worthless that they could give up that easily. The two weren't that farsighted that they could just say「Oh, is that so」in acceptance, even though there was the possibility to defeat the hateful divine country right in front of their eyes like this.

That was why, they raised their voices asking how the two of them could abandon the suffering humans and dragons even after they knew the situation and also getting begged on like this.

「Hajime-sama. Please we beg you to lend us your strength. At the very least, even if it's just a cooperation to make it so Kuwaibel can reach the underground of the palace, can you please help us with that?」

Roze's pleaded fervently. Hajime retorted back without any particular change in his expression.

「What kind of compensation you can give me?」

「Eh? Co, compensation?」

The Crow siblings were going to make a ruckus once more, 'even though this concern the future of the dragon kingdom's people' like that, but Roze stopped them with her gaze. And then, she thought of what she could present, and the result, with determination she——

「I, I'll offer myse——」

「No need.」

「Hauh!?!」

She was unable to say it until the end. Even though she was going to offer

herself with a determination of the lifetime, yet it was cut down and discarded instantly. Roze whispered a line「E, even though, I am a queen」that might make a certain princess-sama somewhere to go「Comrade♪ Comrade♪」while jumping for joy.

「Or rather, you are really going to say that in front of Tio huh. The nerve you have there is really quite something.」

「Eh, ah. My, my apology, Tio-sama! I am not intending to insult Tio-sama by any means.....」

「It's fine, it's fine, I understand.」

If she knew that actually Hajime also had multiple wives other than her, just what would this queen-sama of another world think? Tio averted her gaze with a vague expression.

Roze sank into silence with a difficult expression and her gaze wandered around furiously while her head was working desperately.

Hajime opened his mouth with a sigh to finish the talk soon.

「Certainly, I have great power, and I can brag that just destroying a country won't take much effort. But, it's because of that that I won't use my power because of other people's will. My power is only mine, and it has to be wielded constantly by my will. Save me, help me, those wishes aren't something exclusive that only you have. The world is overflowing with that kind of wishes, as many as the stars in the sky. I don't have even the littlest bit of intention to spend my life and my important people's life until it run dry from responding and rush about everywhere to that kind of wishes just "because I can".」

That was why, even if it was everything for the people in question, Roze's wish that was nothing but a common wish for Hajime wasn't something that he would undertake that simply as long as it didn't even have any merit for him that could make him overturned his decision.

「And, you guys who are wishing for me to slaughter several thousand people and overthrow a country in your place, what kind of compensation you can pay me that can make me overturn my will that is flatly refusing to do that kind of thing and make me decide to wield my power?」

「.....」

Roze couldn't say anything at all this time for sure. Olga, Jean, and Bovid were also the same.

Hajime stood up from his seat. Roze twitched and trembled.

「As expected, I'm not that shameless that I can keep remaining here after refusing your dearest wish like that. I and Tio will go to visit Helmut after this. I'll only promise that I will clear up the dark cloud from this world. I don't know how you queen-san and others will live in the new world where the black rain vanish and the sunlight shine on the land but.....at the very least, I'll pray for your success. It'll be great if your dearest wish can come true.」

「ah, wa, wait-. Please wait-」

Hajime said that and prompted Tio with his gaze to walk out from the door. Roze threw herself at such Hajime. Of course, she wasn't attacking him but stopping him from leaving. She clung on Hajime's arm and desperately formed her words.

「Sa, say, err, tha, that's right! Even though you say you will subjugate Helmut, but you don't know where his location is right? We will show you the way! That's why, please don't leave-. Putting aside the matter of the divine country's subjugation, we still haven't be able to return our debt of you saving us!」

「If it's Helmut's location, we can do something about it ourselves. About the debt, the delicious meal and empty bed are enough for that.」

Hajime quickly shook off Roze's clinging arms, but Roze circled around him and took position in front of the door with both her hands spread out. Hajime's eyes narrowed quietly, but even while sweating coldly, Roze didn't show any sign of moving at all.

「Pl, please, come to Avenst by any means!」

「You are trying to take us away?」

「That's not it! I'm not thinking that such thing is possible!If it's in Avenst, then we will be able to show our gratitude a bit more properly. Even the cooking there is incomparable with the food in Rozeria, also in Avenst's airspace

there are also island with lake and island that grow rare fruit! After that, after that there are also a lot of dragons living there-. It's only a few, but we are living in coexistence. Among us there are also people that can ride dragon, the sight of human and dragon flying together is really beautiful.....after that.....the people of Avenst are all good natured, ah, there is also craftsman that specialized in handling ore! Surely you will be interested. Besides, err, that.....」

She was already desperate. Even while getting incoherent, Roze was trying to make her invitation to mother ship Avenst into reality by speaking out things that might attract Hajime's interest one after another. It was also just a bit painful seeing her like that.

Roze spread out her hands with all her might to not let anyone pass while narrating the charm of her country that didn't even have any territory with teary eyes. It seemed that she was thinking if she invited Hajime to Avenst, then there would still some possibility left they could move his emotion and receive his cooperation.

There, Crow siblings and Bovid also joined. They kept speaking on and on so that they wouldn't lose their connection with Hajime somehow. Kuwaibel was raising s small cry while approaching Tio's leg.

Staring at those brave figures of the queen and her group desperately clinging to their hope, Hajime's expression suddenly turned gentle. Roze and others got taken aback, then their eyes shined with hope thinking that perhaps Hajime would hear to what they were saying.

Hajime was making an expression that seemed to say 'can't be helped huuh', yet it also looked really gentle, while——his hand was reaching toward Donner.

(Wait wait wait wait-, wait a second, Goshujin-sama! As expected, there art no way thou wouldst shoot them to death here correct?)

(Tio. You, what do you think I am. Of course I won't open up any hole in them. I have properly changed the bullet with non lethal rubber bullet. I'm just going to give them a bit painful forehead poke.)

(.....I, is that so? No, even so I think that art still too much though.)

Roze and others were puzzled seeing Tio who suddenly held down Hajime's

right hand and began to whisper from point blank range. Surely they didn't imagine even in their dream that if Tio was late just by a step, they would get *dopan*--ed.

Tio glanced at them who were actually in a pinch and whispered to Hajime with her body glued on him.

(Goshujin-sama, this art a rare chance, how about accepting the invitation?)

(What, you are interested?)

(Yes, I'm interested in the point where human and dragon art coexisting. Besides.....)

(Besides?)

Tio looked down shyly. Hajime's eyes blinked at the unexpected gesture.

(Helmut's subjugation wouldst not take that much time correct? As expected, after closing the books of one history of this world, we wouldst not be in the mood of continuing to adventure aimlessly again. Helmut's subjugation wouldst be the end of this adventure.)

(Well, I guess.)

(Yes. After subjugating Helmut, we wouldst *return to earth*. That's why.....)

(You are saying, you want to continue this adventure of just the two of us a bit more? Well, certainly an adventure of just two day and a night sound questionable.)

(Ye, yes. So just a bit more.....is it no good?)

This was Tio whose vocation was protector, so honestly Hajime didn't know if that was all of her true feelings. Perhaps she more or less had sympathy toward the dragon species of this world and Roze and others.

But, Tio's selfishness where he usually needed to ask her before she finally said it out, now she said it by her own initiative. Hajime's answer was decided already.

「Aa, then, perhaps I should take a look, just for a bit, at this country of queen-san and others.」

「Ah, that means.....」

「Yeah. I'll accept your invitation. However, that's all there is to it until the end. Understand that this doesn't mean I'll agree to cooperate with you.」

「I, I understand!」

They somehow held on to the hope. Of course, they also understood that at this rate it would be only an empty hope. Even so, they couldn't help but felt relieve and happiness.

Seeing Roze and others, the four of them rejoicing with each other, and Tio who was linking her arms with his in a good mood, Hajime smiled wryly.

Approximately a day after that.

Deep inside cloud mountain range area where giant cloud mountains were stretching out, the nation on board a ship Avenst finally showed up.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I plan to end Tio arc in about two more chapters.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday if possible.

Arifureta Chapter 238

Arifureta After II The Determination of the Queen

Part 1

Inside the corridor of a magnificent palace before the dawn, hurried footsteps echoed.

The servants who were already starting to work turned their gaze in wonder about the loudly stamping footsteps, there their expression turned startled because they recognized the figure of the high official with a grim expression. That was because the high official of the divine country wasn't a commendable character with the habit of waking up before the dawn.

The male high official turned through several passages, and before long he arrived in front of a room that was guarded by soldiers armed with firearm. Even though the guards recognized the high official's face, but they instinctively put themselves on guard seeing his unusual state.

「You guys, announce my arrival to his majesty quickly! This is an emergency business-」

「Silas-sama. However, his majesty is still in the middle of his rest.....」

The male high official who raised an angry voice——Silas was answered by one of the guards, but Silas cut him off with angrier voice.

「I don't care-, wake him up! Quickly! I told you this is an emergency-」

「Ro, roger!」

One of the guards called out to inside the room. After a while, who came out was a woman wearing thin clothes with a displeased expression. When the guard explained the situation, the woman's expression was becoming even more displeased even while she drew back into the room.

Silas was tapping his foot in irritation while waiting. The guards were stirring awkwardly seeing that.

After a while, the displeased woman just now showed out her face with her

clothes in order this time. And then she prompted Silas to enter.

Silas entered the room by pushing aside the woman and he ignored the small curse of the woman that came from behind while heading toward the door inside the room. The room he was currently in was the room before the bedroom. It was a place for reception.

He knocked on the door a bit roughly, then he obeyed the voice「Enter」coming from inside that was said with a voice that sounded deliberately bad-tempered and he opened the door.

「Silas. Do you really have a reason to rouse me out from bed?」

It was a man who was past his middle age. He was gulping amber colored alcohol that was poured into a glass while asking that. Although his appearance was only wearing a gown, his eyes' sharp glint and grim expression had the pressure that naturally overpowered anyone who saw.

This man was the king of Sky Divine Country Qwailent——the usurper Gregor Cluzet Qwailent.

This king who had lived until now by stealing from other people since the time he had awareness of his surrounding would easily turn his back on other even if it was his trusted confidant. Silas knew that. This man's overwhelming violence, and his craftiness that fully made use of that violence, and then his atrocity that was deeply dyed by his pillaging nature, his aura that came from all those wasn't just papier mache.

Such atmosphere would usually make Silas shrank into himself, however this time Silas only gulped his saliva and opened his mouth.

「The mother ship Ostinato, fell. ——It was shot down.」

「.....What did you say?」

A mother ship getting shot down had never happened since the founding of the country. Gregor's eyes slightly opened wide from hearing that report. His pressure was increasing further than before while he urged Silas「What happened?」to continue.

「Last night, a sky battlecraft that belonged to Ostinato returned back alone.

The pilot was a man named Higgs from Glowser squad. His sanity was mostly lost, so it was difficult to question him about the circumstance, but according to him, they were attacked by two monsters in the middle of a battle against Avenst, and then Ostinato got shot down.」

「Monster? Is it about Bovid's squad? Indeed, their skill is like a monster but——」

「No, that's.....he said that they were done in by a man who fired a bombardment in the level of a mother ship's main cannon by his lone self, and a black dragon that flew in the speed of sound while manipulating flame and wind at will.」

「.....Redo the questioning. No matter how you think, he must be crazy. Don't tell me, you aren't waking me up because you swallowed that kind of nonsense right?」

Gregor whose displeasure was increasing drastically had his finger gliding toward the gun placed on the desk. He must be thinking that if Silas was that kind of incompetent, than he didn't need him anymore.

Silas continued his report even while he was trickling cold sweats.

「Of course, I'm reporting this after confirming that it's not nonsense. After the questioning, we sent a call at Ostinato using wide area communication. But, there was no result. And then when we sent an investigation unit at the place where Ostinato fell.....」

「It was true?」

「Yes.」

The investigation unit here referred to a unit that mainly investigated the land. They were mostly unarmed, in exchange their airship was fast and thickly armored, the unit members were also wearing special protective clothes that could defend against the black rain's encroachment for a little while.

The component of black rain that had been raining down for many years on the land was also included by a lot into the moisture in the air, so even if someone didn't get touched directly, their body would get eroded just by breathing the air. To investigate the land, what was needed wasn't respiratory

device that purified the air, but a fully sealed protective clothes with oxygen tank.

Therefore, even if they were called as investigation unit, but their activity on the land was limited timewise.....

「It was an investigation unit that was sent urgently, so they didn't look around for much detail but——」

Silas was at loss for words. His lips distorted as though he was hesitating and choosing his words carefully. Gregor urged him「Doesn't matter, just report it as it is」in irritation.

「It seems that the exterior of Ostinato, its 3-gun turrets as well as the ship's rear bottom are gouged out wholly. The sky battlecrafts onboard are mostly gone, most of the important spots were blown off as though they were exploded from inside. And then.....about the crews.....」

「Hmph. They are annihilated anyway right?」

「Yes. But, it seems that the cause wasn't just the black rain.」

Saying that, Silas took out a data storage of recording video inside the mother ship that was brought back by the investigation team. Silas's expression was pale for some reason. Gregor received the data storage while looking suspicious and inserted it into his personal console.

What was projected in the display was.....

『That guy-, that guy is coming-. Run away quickly-』

『Stop-, it's me! Don't shoot-』

『Noooo-, no moreeee-. The voice won't go away-. Someone-, hel——』

『Aa, aAAAAAAAAAAAA-』

『Die-, DIEEEEEEE-』

It was a scene of chaos and madness that would make one covered their eyes. The recording was only showing the crews of Ostinato. However, everyone was fighting, bawling, or desperately running away as though they were being chased by something unseen.

And then, the people who lost their sanity early attacked the people nearby, and then the stray bullet from the attempt to counter attack that would attack other people.....after that it was just like a stone that rolled down a slope. It was a crucible of madness that created unseen terror and excessive paranoia against the comrade before them.

「What, is this.....」

「.....」

Silas couldn't answer at the mutter that unconsciously came out from Gregor's mouth.

Before long, when the madness reached its peak, everywhere inside the ship exploded unnaturally, and Ostinato ultimately crashed to the ground. The lightning strike inside the sea of clouds further destroyed the inside of the ship, but someone must be displaying their last obstinacy, because the ship recovered its floating power for a moment just before it crashed on the ground and it somehow avoided complete destruction. Even so the ship still exposed a figure that looked atrocious even just from looking.

「Silas, what happened with Ostinato?」

「I don't know. We cannot confirm the existence of intruder from the ship's recording. Just what is "it" the crews were frightened at.....or perhaps, it might be the "monster" that Higgs was talking about.」

Inside the room became deathly silent. It was an eerie silent that would make one wanted to express it by saying it was like even the insect was holding breath.

「.....What about the battle record against Avenst? You will know what was "it" Ostinato was fighting from there right?」

「That's, because of the explosions from unknown cause, all the record inside the ship except this one was destroyed and couldn't be recovered.」

Perhaps, that too was the work of the "monster"even without putting it into words, the two of them thought of the same thing.

Silence ruled the place for a while. Gregor was looking across the window at

the sky that was nearing dawn while he suddenly gulped down his alcohol. He drank directly straight from the bottle. Its alcohol content was high and quite some amount was remaining in it, but he drained it dry without feeling bothered by that.

And then, he threw the bottle to the floor that it broke into pieces. He wiped his mouth roughly and looked at Silas with a fiercely blazing gaze.

Silas's body jumped while he fell into hallucination as though he was being glared by a wild beast. Gregor made a grin that displayed his brutal nature and gave his order.

「Summon the ship captains. Everyone of them except the defense fleet.」

「Wha-, that's..... Your majesty, you will finally take care of those guys?」

「Yeah. The struggle of those Avenst bunches was a suitable amusement. I don't know what they are starting to raise, but this time they overdid it. I'll have them disappears now.」

By no mean Avenst had succeeded in applying guerilla tactics against the divine country. In the first place there was overwhelming difference in resource and technology between the two sides. If Gregor felt like it, it was a trivial matter to annihilate them.

They were surviving solely because battle that happened unpredictably became Gregor's amusement. That was all.

But, as expected the prided mother ship of the divine country getting shot down was a situation that he couldn't turn a blind eye on. Because they introduced themselves as country of god that ruled the sky, they couldn't have themselves got even a single scratch from the like of pirate. This concerned the dignity of the nation.

Therefore, he would overwhelm them with all his forces excepting the fleet that was left behind for the country's defense. He would exterminate them from this world, not leaving a single dust behind.

Silas lowered his head wordlessly and turned on his heel in order to accomplish his task.

「Come to think of it, that princess too should be in a suitable age about this time.....kukuh, maybe it's also not bad to take in the royal blood. Or perhaps, I should even show how the last royalty fall in front of the survivors.」

A delighted laugh echoed.

Gregor Cluzet Kwailent——he was without a doubt a usurper.

Part 2

The gigantic mother ship Avenst was moored in the valley of a cloud mountain..

The mother ship of divine country Ostinato that Hajime sank was also gigantic, but Avenst was two sizes larger than it.

Although, if it was asked whether its majesty surpassed Ostinato because it was superior in size, then the answer could be no other than “No”.

After all,

「.....The gun turret, has a lot of laundry aired there.」

「.....The deck, hath plantation spreading through the whole thing there.」

Hajime and Tio who were observing the gradually nearing Avenst using binoculars muttered so spontaneously.

Yes, the mother ship Avenst was horribly peaceful from the outside. The gun barrels and turrets on the exterior were linked with each other by wire and laundries were hanged in a row there. A panty of some madam was hanging on the tip of the main cannon. Honestly the two of them couldn't help but felt their strength drained from them seeing that.

In addition, there was a splendid plantation on the deck. There were a lot of people taking care of it diligently even now. And then, on top of such deck children were running around energetically. There was even a daredevil that slid down something that looked like a slide that stretched to the outside from the deck until the bottom of the ship in one go.

「I, it's more or less treated as the “royal capital”, so it's attaching importance to the livelihood or something.....in the first place, Helmut had collected the dragon core of the monarch dragon that became its driving force, so even though it has weapons but they won't work satisfactorily. And so, if that's the case then it's better to use it for valid practical use.....」

Roze made that kind of justification with her cheeks reddening slightly in shame.

Actually this mother ship Avenst was the battleship that the prince once created using the dragon core of his partner. Although, its dragon core was taken out by Helmut, so right now it was moving using only sky core, and the most it could do was only flying just barely.

Knowing that, Hajime threw a questioning gaze of what they would do if they were discovered by enemy, to which Roze puffed up her chest and pointed with her finger.

「It's fine. Its weapons are mostly not functioning, but the thickness of its armor is top class even among the existing airships in the present time. Even if it got hit by the main cannon of a mother ship, it is able to endure several shots with room to spare. What's more, airships protecting Avenst are always at its side.」

Looking closer, there was an airship moored beside the mother ship Avenst.

Airship Averia——it was the sister ship of Roze's battleship Rozeria. If it had to be said then Rozeria put importance on speed and maneuverability, in contrast Averia was a battleship that put importance on firepower.

These two ships had protected the descendants of dragon kingdom Avenst until now, said Roze proudly.

Hajime was glancing at such girl while cocking his head in puzzlement inside his heart.

(Just two ships, what's more their mother ship is not even in destroyer level.....they are really pulling through continuously until now while burdened with protecting baggage? Is there just how much the difference in skill between the two sides? No, even so.....)

Hajime turned his gaze to Tio. Coincidentally Tio also turned her gaze to Hajime at that time, so their gaze met and their expression was at loss for words. Roze herself said that they had protected all these continuously until now, but perhaps, that was.....like that the two of them reached the same conclusion.

While they were doing that, the mother ship Avenst was gradually getting closer and closer.

Naturally the existence of the airship Rozeria was also noticed by the other side, so the people who were tending to the plantation, and also the children were gathering toward a spot on the deck bustlingly. That spot must be the spot where Rozeria would come alongside.

Roze waved her hands energetically. A loud cheer was raised just from that. It seemed that her popularity was becoming of a queen.

The Crow siblings and Bovid and others of sky battlecraft squad also came out to the deck and started the preparation to transfer to Avenst.

When the airship came alongside the mother ship Avenst, the deck of Avenst was jammed with people. Although Hajime had fixed it to a certain degree, but Rozeria was really in a terrible state. It seemed that it was enough to make the expression of the people welcoming the queen to turn pale.

「Everyone, there is no need to worry. We were attacked by Qwailent, but it's as you see! I and also Kuwaibel are safe!」

「Piuh!!」

When Roze lifted up Kuwaibel high with both her hands, joyful cheers occurred once more. Roze hugged Kuwaibel back on her chest and lifted one hand to calm down the cheers, and this time she raised her voice with a meek expression.

「But, a lot of pilots offered their precious life in order to let us survive. Please direct your feeling toward the brave warriors who are unable to go back home. And then, please give them praise. We are protected by them.」

The sky battlecraft pilots were lining up on the deck. Sobbing voice resounded from here and there from the people who didn't see the figure of their important people that they should have seen off at the departure. Bovid and others put their fist on their chest and looked up to the sky. That was the salute in dragon kingdom. They offered a silent prayer at their comrades who had gone ahead of them.

The people on the deck naturally also offered a silent prayer.

Silent prayer was spreading in the sky where gentle breeze was blowing.

After the silent prayer continued for a while, an aging man stepped forward in front of the crowd.

「Roze-sama, welcome home.」

The white haired man with splendid moustache bowed his head deeply with his back kept stretching straight.

「Gramps. I'm back. Was there any problem?」

「None, there wasn't any such thing. This Sabastian Orto is entrusted with looking after this place during Roze-sama's absence. No problem would occur that easily as long as I'm here.」

This man who answered calmly yet with a definite confidence seemed to be Roze's trusted retainer. His appearance, his way of speaking, and his atmosphere were absolutely that of a butler despite the normal work clothes he was wearing. Hajime and Tio had a thinking in regard to this man.

That thought was,

『『Almost』』

Hajime and Tio spontaneously retorted. 'If only his name wasn't "Sa" but "Se", they would be able to proof the existence of the implicit rule shared through parallel universe that speaking of butler meant "Sebastian", and yet!' was what they thought.

When the alternate world duo who didn't read the place's atmosphere made a complicated expression, Roze mistaken that expression thinking that the two of them were getting bored, and so she started to get down the ramp in panic. She did that while calling Hajime and Tio's name by attaching '-sama'.

Naturally, there was no way the people didn't get suspicious when they heard their queen calling others using '-sama', and as their representative Sabastian raised a question.

「Roze-sama, can I ask who are these two people?」

「They are guests. This gentleman is Nagumo Hajime-sama, and this lady is Tio Claus-sama. They will be staying in Avenst for a while.They are important,

really really important people, so please take care of them absolutely politely.」

「.....Roze-sama's, important, person?」

Gramps's gaze seized Hajime. Knowing the meaning of that gaze, Hajime averted his gaze. 'This is because you said important "people"', Hajime retorted inside his heart.

「I'm sorry to be rude, but Roze-sama, more specifically what kind of acquaintance they are for you? By any chance, are they from Qwailent?」

「No, Gramps. They aren't related with Qwailent. That, about their background, saying it here is a bit..... Anyway, I request this to Gramps no matter what! Please give them our greatest hospitality!No matter what, we have to please Hajime-sama.」

The last sentence was said in small volume that couldn't be heard by the people at the surrounding, but Sabas who possessed the ears of an excellent butler caught it perfectly. Sabas who had taken care of Roze since she was born loved Roze like she was his own daughter.

And that master of his that should even be called as his beloved daughter was now desperately trying to please a man that he didn't know.....

‘Okay. I don't really get it. In other words, he is enemy isn't he?’ He concluded.

Of course, Roze whispered that in the meaning that she wished for Hajime to be pleased with Avenst. She understood that if Hajime felt like it, then it didn't matter what Tio wanted, and so Roze made that utterance because of that, but the eyes of gramps Sabas who didn't know one bit about that instantly turned into the eye of a killer. While smiling friendlily and gently.

「So that's how it is. Well then, I will immediately prepare the room and meal. Nagumo-sama, Claus-sama, if any of you need something, then please order anything from this Sabas without any reservation.」

As expected from the steward that directly served the royalty. He showed a truly elegant manners. While smiling friendlily, and gently. With the eyes of a killer.

Thinking that for now he should clear up the misunderstanding before this gramps gave them trouble, Hajime opened his mouth.

「Aa, Sabas-san? I'll say this because it seems you are having a misunderstanding, what queen-san there is saying doesn't mean like that okay? Or rather, I'm a married man. See, this woman here is my wife.」

Saying that, Hajime grasped Tio's arm and jerked her to the front. For some reason, Tio bowed her head gracefully while saying「Nice to meet you, thank you for always taking care of my husband」, she was making a greeting as though she was meeting the superior of the company where her husband was working for some reason.

It seemed that it was something she wanted to try saying at least once after seeing an afternoon drama. Tio was giving glances at Hajime saying「How's that? How is that? Didst I look like a wife just now?」.

Hajime smiled wryly thinking that this wasn't that kind of situation, even so he brushed Tio's hair unreservedly. Tio's cheeks were dyed red from a sweet pleasure that was different from when she got slapped.

Even seen from the side, it was obvious in a glance that the relationship of the two wasn't something shallow.

When Hajime tried to look at Sabas thinking that the misunderstanding must be solved with this.....indeed, it seemed that the misunderstanding that he was a scoundrel aiming at their important master was solved, but in exchange a new misunderstanding seemed to be created.

The eyes of Sabas whose body was trembling all over were moistening with sadness and,

「Roze-sama.....gramps feels really sad-」

「Eh? Eeh? Wha, what's wrong gramps!? Why are you suddenly looking like wanting to cry!?!」

Roze-chan got flustered. Gramps's hands gently grasped Roze's shoulders and he opened his mouth in admonishment.

「Roze-sama——you must not commit adultery.」

「Gramps, is your head okay?」

Roze tilted her head wondering, 'has he finally starting going senile?'. Behind her the Crow siblings were making an amazed expression, while Bovid was desperately enduring his laughter.

「Indeed, gramps was looking after Roze-sama strictly. I am keeping a watchful eye at Roze-sama even in regard of the matter of love. Even though currently there is hardly anyone with lineage that is a good match for Roze-sama, there is no way I can just leave Roze-sama to any man. Therefore, the love letter for Roze-sama from those people who doesn't know their standing, I tore up and discarded all of them after I inspected them but.....」

「Eh!? Please wait a second. That's the first time I heard that though? There is someone who gives me love letter? In this Avenst? Or rather, what do you mean by inspecting them and then tearing them up!?!」

Roze's popularity in Avenst was high. And then, she was living with the people in the same ship, and she was always talking with them normally, on top of that she was treating everyone amiably. She was boasting a tremendous popularity among the young men.

Of course, Roze was idolized as a queen, and those men didn't believe that they would be able to build a really good relationship with Roze, the most that they did was only writing up their heart's feeling and sent them to her. And it was done by a considerable number of people.

However, Roze had never received something like a love letter even once. She had also never getting confessed at. She was at that age, so it wasn't like she didn't have interest for that, but she thought that no one was thinking of her like that because her social position was in the way.

But, she never thought, that it was like that because.....

Roze-chan morosely pressed her question to the gramps, but it didn't reach the ear of the brooding gramps.

「Roze-sama, please give up your idea! To aim at a man who is married..... even before thinking about the moral as a royalty, it's already mistaken as a human! Please, think again and stop from something like a looting love!」

「Really, what are you saying gramps!? I'm going to stuff you into Rozeria's main cannon and blast you off you know!?!」

The people of Avenst stirred.「Her majesty is, looting love.....holy cow」,or「She abducted a man she is pleased with, altogether with his wife.....as expected from our queen」, or「My, love letter.....」, or「Or rather, just who is that man who shot through Roze-sama's heart?」, or「That breast. That beautiful black haired woman is his wife.....how envious, I'm jealous」, or「You, you like that kind of woman more than me? Then, look forward to an encounter at the next world okay」, or「Wai-, that's a joke. I only have feeling for you-. Ah, wait, don't push! I'll fall, I'm going to fall-, sto-, aa~~~~-」, those voices could be heard.

Roze desperately raised her voice in denial. However, putting aside the male camp, the female camp's misunderstanding was also unexpectedly not really clearing up. It seemed that the female camp of Avenst knew quiet well that their queen who was at that age was a hidden pervert.

Roze who got lukewarm gazes directed at her no matter what she said yelled「This is misunderstanding~~~~~!!」resoundingly through the blue skies.

Two whole days passed since Hajime and Tio arrived in mother ship Avenst.

During that time, Hajime and Tio received the greatest hospitality possible from Roze and others.

At the first day, Roze gathered the top brasses and shared the information regarding the circumstance and background of Hajime and Tio, so the top brasses with Sabas whose misunderstanding was solved at the forefront were giving their hospitality by their own initiative, to the degree that was desperate. Hajime and Tio tasted a treatment a bit like VIP.

They had their fill of various cooking that was using the mysterious ingredients of this world. The foods fundamentally were grain, fruit, and vegetable, but those products had extremely good flavor from the grace of the sky core's effect, coupled with the skill of the cook, it was enough to satisfy both of them.

They were also guided to a floating island that possessed a large lake. The water that was flowing out from the floating island dispersed midair and turned into white mist which was covering the whole island, that sight truly should even be called as a secret region that was covered by a mystical veil, to the degree that just by being able to look at that made the two thought that it was worth it to come to this world.

Also, the sky cores that were dotting the lake's surrounding seemed to possess the property to take in the humidity in the air and turned it into spring water. The fact that its nature was subtly changed due to that area and the environment caused Hajime's blood as a transmutation master to boil up.

Hajime also exchanged a piece of god crystal with the craftsmen of Avenst who were handling the sky core and they had discussion. They got along greatly with each other. The expression of Hajime who comprehended the various natures of the sky core looked pleased with himself.

There was also the matter of the misunderstanding about Roze's illicit love with the married couple spreading, but the people of Avenst also came into contact with Hajime and Tio with immense curiosity. Someone would surely call out to them kindly when they walked inside the ship.

And the best thing in the two's opinion was that they were able to see this coexisting livelihood of dragon and human.

Human and dragon flew around to patrol and repair the ship's exterior, to harvest on the floating island and deliver luggage, and sometimes just to dry the laundry. The human and dragon that became partner numbered very few if seen from the whole, even so the good old way of living of this world could be found there. It was something that Tio admired very much.

In general, the country aboard the ship called Avenst really matched Hajime and Tio's preference whether in the people's trait, their senses of value, and also their way of coexistence. It was a comfortable country. At the very least, it was far better than the trait of the country that tried to kill them without question and spewed out outrageous remark to Tio the very first time they met.

And then, when Tio and Hajime welcomed the morning of the third days they were enjoying enough this country called Avenst and this world.

The two were waiting for the appearance of the sun for who knew how many times at the front deck of the mother ship Avenst.

There, a voice that was filled with faint nervousness and resolve called out at them.

「.....Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. What do you two think about our country?」

When the two looked back across their shoulder, over there was Roze who was holding Kuwaibel in her arms like usual. No, it wasn't just her, the Crow siblings and Bovid, Sabastian, and then the top brasses of Avenst starting with the captain of airship Azeria were arrayed there. Everyone was making a complicated expression like a traveler that was made to stand in the fork road.

「I think it's a good country. I can even think of it as normally comfortable even without the hospitality.」

「Is, that so. I'm, glad to hear that.」

Roze's expression who heard that showed a wry smile. She must have guessed it. That the thinking if they could moved the emotion of the two, then perhaps Hajime would change his mind and gave them their help, such thinking didn't work.

「As expected, something like a status of being our hero, it's not enough as compensation isn't it?」

「You already knew that right from the start right? A man who will change his mind easily after receiving that much hospitality, do you think that kind of man can be expected to become anything like a hero that saved a country? Something like that just isn't in my nature, and it don't even suit me.」

「Fufu. Indeed, when I think back about your deed when cornering the mother ship of Avenst, the title of hero really don't suit you Hajime-sama at all.」

「Now you have said it queen-sama.Conversely, it feels like it's you who become a bit unbound from something instead.」

While the expression of the top brasses looked frustrated and pained, it was only Roze whose eyes were containing resignation along with a vague resolve.

Roze took a deep breath at Hajime's pointing out so.

「Perhaps. During these two days, I have been looking at the two of you all the time. Even when you two were having fun, I saw that your heart is unwavering. Why? Even though all these nice people might die, how can you still abandon them? What a terrible person. I also had that kind of thinking.」

「Hmph? You think differently now?」

「I will lie if I say that I'm thinking completely differently. Because no matter what, I am an absolute ally of Avenst. But, somehow, the two of you, aren't inhuman people who doesn't show interest to us.....let's see, if I have to say, I come to think of the two of you like a "large tree".」

Hajime tilted his head not understanding what Roze meant. In respond to that, Roze talked while choosing her words. The top brasses who were making complicated expression were also lending their ears to Roze's speech.

「An unshakeable existence, that is just existing there. Sometimes it protected us from cold rain, or softening the illuminating sunlight. But, it would never hold out its branches because it is asked, that kind of existence.」

「.....That's a strangely fitting phrase.」

Roze chuckled while saying「I'm honored with your praise」seeing she was able to make Hajime blink.

The eastern sky was starting to grow light bit by bit. The dawn was near. Roze turned her gaze at the eastern sky that was starting to brighten while adding on her words. The top brasses were also lending her their ears silently.

「At that time, when the sun came out, the two of you said to me that "this world is beautiful". I had forgotten that all this time, but certainly, even when it has ended up in this state, this world is beautiful. Even though it's this beautiful, even though it has been broken like this, but mankind is still not repenting.I thought, just for a little. Taking back our country, defeating Helmut, and then taking back the world before this——is there any meaning in those?」

The top brasses were suddenly starting to get noisy. That was only natural. After all, their king was blurting out something that sounded like she was denying mankind's continuation.

「A destructive thinking huh? But I think that you were persuading us really

desperately considering all that though?」

「Of course. Because it was something that I only thought for a bit, I'm not throwing away our dearest wish or anything.」

Relieved sighs were leaked out. The top brasses were stroking down their chest.

Amidst them, Roze talked to Hajime who was tilting his head wondering just what was it she wanted to say.

「Surely, there is no meaning in it.」

「In your dearest wish?」

「No. In being saved.」

Kuwaibel cried out sounding vaguely troubled. It was Kuwaibel who sought help the first time at Hajime and Tio. However, he didn't seek help to break the deadlock in the dangerous situation of that time. He was seeking for the salvation of the dragon kingdom itself from Tio's overwhelming presence that his senses as a monarch dragon detected.

Guessing what Roze wished to say, the expression of the top brasses looked taken aback and turned into a vaguely troubled look.

「We surely have to save ourselves by our own effort. If not, in the world after it is saved, we will surely walk on the path that destroy the world once more..... that's what I think.」

「I think it will be fine if it's the people of dragon kingdom though?」

「No. As long as we don't even massacre all the people at the fight against Qwailent, the one living in this world won't just be the people of dragon kingdom. Even if we tell them let's live in repentance after having everything ended by a supernatural existence, just what kind of persuasiveness that can be found from that kind of words?」

After having their country destroyed by an incomprehensible existence that suddenly appeared, there was no way the people would then lend their ears toward the preaching of the people of a dead country who didn't even really fight.

The overwhelming power that Hajime and Tio displayed was a lethal poison in a sense. If such power could be wielded, then the wielder would undoubtedly be able to force their will to happen. Seen from the view point of people who were lamenting powerlessly, the people who were reaching out their hand toward their dearest wish, it wasn't an exaggeration even if such power was called as a magic with unequalled charm.

Therefore, Roze who was charmed and became captive of that power where she then asked for help, after she saw the figure of Hajime and Tio living a really normal daily life, showing admiration and wonder at everything in the trifling ordinary day, it seemed that her boiling mind recovered its calmness.

「Originally, we should also say “Don't get involved, this is our problem” about Helmut's subjugation too, but.....」

「You are awfully different from two days ago huh. Well, those are admirable words but.....my wife said, ‘I want to beat up Helmut-kun viciously until you cannot even recognize how he looks like!’, so just give up on that.」

「N, no, Goshujin-sama? I, didst not really speak that far.....」

Actually, Hajime-san also thought that he wanted to go and took a look at an “evil” dragon. This wasn't just a mere dragon they were talking about. It was an “evil” dragon. ‘Isn't that tickling the soul!’ Though currently it was a serious scene, so he read the mood and kept such thinking only in his heart.

「I see. Then, we will fight in the world that stop raining. We will pray for your success in Helmut's subjugation. And then, if possible, it will make us happy if you will remember us, the dragon country Avenst, oh horrible dragon knight-sama from another world.」

「I told you already right, I'll pray, so that the dearest wish of you all queen-san and others can come true. Or rather, what's with that horrible dragon knight-sama huh. As I thought, you are holding a bit of grudge aren't you?」

「Who knows, what are you talking about?」

Roze said that while chuckling.

It seemed that she really wasn't planning to request the two of them to become their proxy in war anymore.

There were two kinds of victory. A meaningful victory, and a meaningless victory. Surely the path Roze and others was walking on was filled with hardships, but if they were looking for the former, then they had to fight by their own. Her smile was a bright one must be because she had clearly realized that and resolved herself.

The top brasses were making a troubled expression at their queen's decision, but when Roze looked back and asked「Is there any objection?」with her gaze, they bowed their head unanimously. And then, when they lifted their head back, the same resolve and determination like Roze were dwelling in those eyes.

「Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. I'm glad I can meet the two of you. Please, stay healthy.」

「Ou, you guys too. I won't forget about the people of the sky who are living together with the dragons.」

「Roze-dono. I'm praying for a limitless happiness for thee, and for thy important people.」

The morning sun showed its face. Warm light filled the world from beyond the sea of clouds.

Hajime and Tio shook hand with Roze, and like that, they were about to part——

「-, Cross Bit!!」

Suddenly Hajime yelled. Right after that, the huge flash that was launched from the sun assaulted the flank of mother ship Avenst.

Hajime defended against that attack using barrier that was formed by the Cross Bits he secretly deployed two days ago when they arrived at this ship.

Thunderous sound and impact shook the world. Roze screamed and she was about to tumble down, but Tio helped her to stand still.

Because the barrier didn't cover the whole ship, the extremely violent flash was making mother ship Avenst to tilt with its after wave. The top brasses on the deck were falling to their knees altogether.

Was it ten second, or one minute?

The flash fired from the sun was vanishing as though it was melting into the empty air.

「Hiding in the sunrise, they are acting witty.」

When Tio and Roze turned their gaze toward the sunlight at Hajime's mutter——

There were countless black dots there.

It wasn't just one or two. A great number of black dots could be seen inside the sunlight that was illuminating the world with blazing light.

No, those were, what appeared with the sun on their back using that light to hide their figure were——

「Qwailent's fleet.....no way, why are they here!?!」

Roze's words that sounded like a scream resounded.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just, one more chapter.....you know?

Next time the update plan is at 6 P.M Saturday too. That's the plan.

Arifureta Chapter 239

Arifureta After II Black God Dragon Manifestation

AN: I don't get it.

Whether it's about the harmony that the people of Narou sometimes showed, or about the trust toward Shirakome that is non-existent.

Even though I said that there is only one more chapter left, but no one trust me!

Right, fine then. Then Shirakome also has my own thinking.

Yes, I'll answer to that trust. I'll continue for two or three more chapters okay!

It's not ending at all! Even though I had written twelve thousand characters, but even the fight didn't start yet!

I'm sorry for lying!

.....It will really help if you all can laugh it off 'just like usual, what a hopeless Shirakome huuuh', like that.

Tio arc, please accompany it for a little bit more.

A fleet that was formed from easily more than a hundred ships appeared from inside the dawn. The number of the airships was countless, and there were 30 ships at the same level with the mother ship Ostinato that was sunk before this, and then there were ten mother ships of Avenst's level that surpassed Ostinato's level, the number of the sky battlecrafts was very much like the stars in the sky, and then there was one super gigantic battleship that seemed to be the flagship, advancing forward leisurely.

Their majestic appearance showed with certainty that it wasn't an overestimation to call them as the country that ruled the sky.

「.....Why, how, are they here?」

They thought that their location wasn't known. Because if that was the case, then they would have been annihilated already since a long time ago. The fact that they were fighting even if it was with guerilla method was the proof that the nation on ship Avenst wasn't discovered, that was what they thought.

That was why, Roze could only stand dumbfounded in front of the embodiment of death that suddenly showed their figure. She could only let out meaningless question of「Why」「How」.

Crow siblings and the other top brasses were also in similar state. The combatant Bovid and then Sabas were showing a resolved face that said「Aah, so they finally come」. These two might be the only one who vaguely noticed this possibility. But, even though they noticed there was still nothing that they could do.

Silver color flashed.

「Chih. Oi, queen-san! How long you are going to stay dazed like that-. If you don't have any motivation, then I won't defend the next one anymore!」

「-」

Right after Hajime's yell shook the air, the second wave of attack from the fleet assaulted mother ship Avenst. It was an attack like previously, a silver bombardment that thrust toward the flank. Twelve came in one wave.

In respond, several variable chakrams "Orestes" were floating around before anyone knew it.

The Orestes instantly cut into the line of fire and they unfolded with *kashun* sound. They opened a gate that crossed space in their inner area.

Each of the silver bombardment that was approaching while making the air screamed got seized into the internal of Orestes, and instantly they were returned back toward the fleet by another Orestes that were floating above Avenst.

The fleet got the main cannon attack they launched themselves returned back as it was toward them, however, they didn't show unsightly appearance like

getting sank from direct hit of that. Several airship class ships that were deployed at the front shined silver, at the same time a barrier was deployed at their front line.

The barrier that was also shining silver completely blocked the returned main cannon bombardment. And it didn't stop there, the bombardment's might was shaved off as though it was getting sucked and then the attack was erased in just a few seconds.

「Hee. As expected, they are also making countermeasure against their own weapon.」

「Something of this scale, it seems that the country itself art moving out. It's unknown whether this art only a part or their whole force though..... Goshujin-sama, it seemed that there was survivor wasn't it?」

Tio guessed that there was survivor from the mother ship Ostinato who reported back to their country and she hummed in admiration. To think that there was a survivor from that attack of Hajime that should even be called as a savage deed, and that survivor even managed to struggle until he reached back home.....surely that survivor was a possessor of a powerful fortune, she thought.

In reality, that possessor of powerful fortune was returning home in half crazy state, and after that, as the result of receiving an inquiry that was like a pseudo torture, his personality then became calm as though his nature was reversed or perhaps he had even reached enlightenment, and now he had become a character that was like a saint who loved dragon and nature and the sun above all else.....

「Whoops, so it's physical attack this time. For now it looks like they are evading us.」

Several hundred missiles flew out from the fleet. All of them looked as though they were avoiding the vicinity of the front deck at the warship's bow where Hajime and others were at. They were flying toward the rear half of mother ship Avenst and the two airships at the side.

It seemed that they had noticed the existence of Hajime and Tio. On top of that, they weren't aiming at direct hit course toward the two of them surely

because they were thinking to capture the two of them if possible.

「Well, it's easier to deal with when they are bunched up. Goshujin-sama, please take care of the straggler.」

「Okay.」

Tio thrust both her hands forward. The stance looked like she was going to hold something from left and right. And then focused jet black magic power came into being instantly. It was sparking and compressed— —and it was fired.

GOU, a bombardment in a scale that didn't lose to the enemy ship's main cannon before this surged.

Tio was launching the prized breath attack of dragon race. It easily erased a part of the approaching missile swarm. In addition, when Tio swung her arm, like a giant laser blade that was made from jet black light, the missile swarm was mowed down horizontally.

Several dozen missiles that got away were shot down by Hajime's sniping.

At the same time,

「Now then, to conform to manners, we have to return the favor properly.」

What Hajime took out while saying that was of course the sky *chu.....the sunlight convergence laser "Burst Hyperion".

「First Compression Reactor— —"Release"」

The sunlight energy that was already focused was launched directionally. The fiercely extreme light burned the retina as though it was further overwriting the sky's morning glow.

Naturally, the barrier fleet formed the silver barrier. The light of Burst Hyperion mercilessly pierced through that barrier. The impact sound that made the air screamed resounded, a part of the barrier fleet was pushed back by the might.

「Second Compression Reactor— —"Release"」

The laser bombardment mercilessly increased its might. Different from the silver bombardment, the barrier was making unpleasant sound "bikiri-, paki

paki-* without even being able to absorb the attack. The battle line was disarrayed and the silver light that was enveloping the barrier ship that was nearby the place where the laser impacted was flickering weakly.

「Third Compression Reactor——”Release”」

Of course, Hajime-san further pushed hard. The maximized sunlight laser was finally going to pierce through the fleet’s barrier.

But, perhaps it should be said as expected from the fleet of a country. It didn’t look like it would go that easily.

The warship with the biggest size shined brilliantly. That ship which seemed to be the flagship was enveloped by similar silver light like the barrier ship and then it radiated the light toward the barrier ship.

「Hmph? It looks like monarch dragon granting power to other dragon huh.」

Hajime whispered while releasing the fourth compressed reactor. Just like how monarch dragon granted power to other dragons, it seemed the flagship was also able to grant power to other airship.

「.....That’s, the ability of the exclusive ship of Qwailent’s king——Durgrant. As long as that flagship exist, there won’t be any way to defend against the fleet’s bombardment and there won’t be any hope to slip through the barrier.」

The one who answered Hajime’s whisper was Roze’s spiritless words. Shadow of despair peeked through her eyes. She must know it really well. The reason they couldn’t win even if they fought from the front. Until now they must have been brought to grief many times by this enemy.

As though to make doubly sure, there were also another fleets separated from the fleet in front, floating from three directions with the mother ship Avenst at the center. It seemed they were advancing while hiding on the outer layer of the sea of clouds and finished the encirclement.

「I see. That’s certainly a tough barrier.Though it seems it’s taking considerable compensation for it.」

A scream suddenly resounded. It was the yell of death agony that came from a beast. A clear ill will could be felt from their action that was purposefully

broadcasting that voice using speaker to the outside.

「.....The fleet is all linked up with equipment that magnified the dragon core energy. Naturally that means that their driving force is using dragon core. They are using the land of Avenst for breeding dragons, so they are literally consuming dragon core as disposable item.」

To shed more detail, dragon core would become bigger along with the dragon's growth. Dragon that was grown up through the years would possess fine quality dragon core inside their body. Because of that, with the objective of harvesting usable dragon core immediately after the birth, they were also using drugs to quicken the dragons' growth.

The scream of the dragons who were continuously killed having their source of life exploited one after another even right now in this moment caused Roze and others to make a pained expression as though it was themselves who were being cut apart.

Hajime saw them looking like that and he let out a sigh and he stopped the firing of Burst Hyperion.

Actually he was thinking to take out all his Burst Hyperion and launched his maximum bombardment that was concentrated in one spot + sublimation magic but.....he saw Tio beside him who were obviously boiling with emotion of rage and grief despite her expressionless face, so he refrained from doing that.

The attack of Burst Hyperion ended and the unharmed fleet was resuming its march leisurely. It seemed that the fleet was vaguely enveloped with the atmosphere that was convinced they had endured through Hajime's attack.

But, at that time, a man's voice resounded in the airspace that was rampant with despair and scream. It was a voice that was heavily coated with ridicule, ill will, and atrocity.

『So the bombardment just now is your doing, the black hair there.』

There wasn't any self-introduction. There wasn't even any preface. If he asked, then the one asked would surely answer. They could do nothing else but answering, they wouldn't even be allowed to stay silent. It was a question that couldn't even hide such haughtiness.

And so, for the time being Hajime shot Acht Acht.

A life-sized gun barrel. Zero time sniping without even focusing to aim.

Surely it looked like a peashooter after seeing the extremely big bombardment of Burst Hyperion.

But, that was a mistake. After all that sniper cannon was specialized in penetration. The speed that was beyond the pale of the knowledge of electromagnetic acceleration was equal with destructive force. Under the condition of one point penetration, it was far above Burst Hyperion that was a weapon of extermination.

「Well, the main unit is also considerably tough huh. It would be quick if the boss is blown away by just now.」

「That place looks like the bridge, but it didn't mean that place was really one. Look, somehow his anger was transmitted to here. I didn't know who was this person, but it looks like he is still alive.」

A dangerous atmosphere was conveyed through the speaker of flagship Durgrant. That was only natural. Because his question was replied by a shelling, what's more that shelling easily pierced through the barrier and then blew up a part of the place that seemed to be the bridge of the flagship Durgrant.

Seen from the whole, it was really just a damage to a minor part but.....

It was really easy to see how shaken the fleet was. And it was even easier to understand the anger of the man who asked the question just now.

And then, that feeling of shaken also came from Roze and others behind. Lines like「Lies, Durgrant that had never even been scratched until now is.....」, or「The legend, is easily broken like this.....」, or「That mercilessness that is just like usual.....I'm going numb here y'know, Hajime-san」could be heard from them.

The radiance that was enveloping Durgrant increased. At the same time the screams of the dragons were also reverberating once more.

『You black hair, can you hear this? I'm not taking out fuel from them or anything you know? I'm only simply torturing them. They are crying with a nice

voice right? This crying voice of these animals you bastards are treasuring.
——If you want me to let you all die painlessly, then don't you dare making light of me aga——』

『What the hell you are talking about since some time ago? Speaking sluggishly like this after I've been waiting patiently like this. What a slow guy. Stop wasting time and speak your business. I'll listen so talk quickly.』

Against the haughtiness, even more haughtiness attacked back. Hajime answered using telepathy while still acting arrogantly with his arms folded. That attitude looked like he felt all of these were troublesome, it was unthinkable that he was doing bombardment contest like a space battle that would come out in an SF just now. He didn't even ask the identity of the one talking to him.

Hajime had no interest about the identity of the one talking to him from the bottom of his heart. This was an opponent of little importance.

That implicit thinking was conveyed vividly to all the people in that airspace.

『.....You doesn't even know who I am? Looks like the collaborator of Avenst is a dumb guy huh.』

『There is no way I'll know that when you don't even introduce yourselves. Well, from your way of talking there is not even a fragment of refinement in it, are you an upstart punk or something? It's better to not trying too hard to make yourself look threatening y'know. You might feel like a big shot after bringing a lot of your friends along like this but.....the smell of a barking dog is intense even from here.』

Bursting out sound from Roze and others who knew about the true identity of the voice's owner could be heard from behind.「Bufuh」It seemed that they reflexively leaked out a laugh.

Or rather, there was now Hajime didn't understand just who was it riding the flagship in this situation. In other words, everything except when he said he didn't know the speaker's identity was merely his true feelings.

『What a cheap provocation. You said that, but you are desperately thinking about a plan to breakthrough this even now aren't you? That's a laugh. In

deference of your comical figure I'll introduce myself. —Gregor Cluzet Kwailent. The king of sky divine country Qwailent. Now you understand? The one in front of you is the god king of this world.』

In a sense that claim wasn't a mistake. He possessed the greatest military force and also monopolized most of the limited resource in this world. Whether to give or steal, to let live or kill, it all depended on him. There wasn't anyone who could object even if he introduced himself as a god.

But, Hajime who heard that claim was,

『I see. Well, say, that. Do your best okay, God-sama. I think you must have it hard in various things though.』

For some reason, Hajime gave him words of encouragement with a very gentle expression.

What crossed at the back of Hajime's mind was a god of a certain another world. The existence who when he was insisting「Because I'm a god. I don't have friend, my country was also ruined, and I'm an attention seeker who liked to create doll, but I'm seriously a god! That's why, everyone, listen to what I'm saying okay!」instead got a wind hole opened on his body and went *pop*.

Thinking back, that guy was someone really pitiful. Good grief, just who it was, who was the guy that beat up that kind of unfortunate and pitifully hopeless god to death leaving not even a dust behind. What a terrible guy.

『Goshujin-sama. Art you waiting for a retort for that? I wouldst say this, just in case, it was Goshujin-sama who obliterated that self-proclaimed god in rage. Also, I wouldst say this because it seems thou hath forgotten but, it was also Goshujin-sama who shaved the retainer god to death. That deed of chopping off his four limbs to instigate his pain and fear, and then shaving him to death slowly from the edge of his body, it was something that was really hard to forget.』

It seemed from the middle the event of Ehito going *pop* was leaked through the telepathy. An exasperated straight-man retort came in from Tio.

Roze and others were taking a step back with a creeped out expression. It was really not a method of killing that human could do! They were taking distance

with their shudders laid bare. The top brasses could be heard whispering things like「I vaguely thought it but.....as expected he is a demon」, or「A brute, there is a brute hereee」, or「What lack of mercy.....I admire that yeah」and so on.

Naturally, it was a telepathy that was broadcasted externally, so the words of *self-proclaimed* god and the words of unfortunate and pitifully hopeless god were also overheard by all the people in the area. And the king of the divine country who was talked to be at the same rank with that kind of god and in the end even got a gentle expression directed to him was,

『Roze. Choose. Will you all fall into ruin altogether, or will you come under me along with the monarch dragon and abandon your country?』

He changed his target. It wasn't like he was feeling awkward or anything. His emotionless voice was displaying really clearly the rage that was boiling like magma inside him.

Those were the words of the sworn enemy who usurped the throne and took over the country, however Roze was unable to answer immediately. Gregor's objective was clear. He was aiming for the power of monarch dragon from Kuwaible, the blood of royalty from Roze, and the enjoyment of seeing Avenst struggle after it lost these two.

In such case, then the people of Avenst would surely going through annihilation exactly as though they were shaved to death. And then, Kuwaibel would be forced to go through experiment and mating to mass produce monarch dragon, while Roze would also become a plaything.

But, if they didn't obey, then Avenst would perish immediately. The only difference between the two choices was whether it would be a slow or fast death.

Originally even if they were going to challenge Qwailent in the cleared up world, but they wanted to leave behind those who couldn't fight in a safe place. But it seemed even that choice was already gone.

After closing her eyes for a bit, Roze made her decision.

「Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. Please head toward Helmut's subjugation without reserve. Surely it will be easy for you two to breakthrough the encirclement

with your strength.」

Hajime turned only his gaze toward her across his shoulder.

「You are going to have a decisive battle here?」

「No. Only I and Kuwaibel will go under Gregor.」

Screams were suddenly raised. The Crow siblings, Sabas, Bovid and the others combatant, and all the other top brasses unanimously called at her to stop. They didn't wish to have a long life so much that they would sacrifice the queen and the monarch dragon. They insisted that such way of living that knew no shame wouldn't save anyone!

「I'm not giving up. Even if it's only a faint hope, even if it's a thorny path, as long as we are still alive then there is still hope. Furthermore, if Hajime-sama and Tio-sama are going to kindly subjugate Helmut for us, there might be a chance for us to make a comeback by making use of the resulting chaos. Right now, right now we have to live!」

Roze dignifiedly ordered to the top brasses, and also toward the people of Avenst who were starting to show up on the deck because they were awoken by the first cannon attack. Seeing the piercing light in those eyes even in this edge of despair made them comprehended, that indeed, there was definitely no color of resignation there. What was there was merely an earnestly firm resolve and nothing else.

This time everyone but Roze was at loss for words. They instinctively knew that the decision of the queen couldn't be overturned just by their words. Her command to them to live for now pierced their chest.

The lips of Hajime who was watching at them like that across his shoulder, it warped slightly. That was the form of a small smile.

When he looked beside him, Tio was making a really gentle expression that was filled with affection. That figure who wouldn't give up until the last moment even when she understood that it was a hellish path——was really beautiful.

Hajime shrugged his shoulders. And then, he asked about something that he had already understood since the time the fleet appeared from inside the

dawn.

『Oi, Grugor. To say the truth, I'm actually unrelated with this woman and Avenst. Do you feel like overlooking us two?』

『.....』

It seemed that he didn't have any intention to answer. He must have washed his hands already from Hajime. He didn't care what would happen to Hajime after this even if Hajime ended up all but dead, as long as he was still alive in the end and he could be experimented on through something like torture to search for the secret of his strength. His intention against Tio should also be the same.

.....Surely, he wasn't sulking or anything because his name was mistaken so naturally just now, yes, there was no way it was so.

Hajime who took the silence to mean no felt Tio making an expression that looked itchy as though she was holding down the emotion welling up inside her while he took a deep breath——

『Cough-. Aa~, informing the criminals who are abducting and confining the innocent dragon hostage~. Release all of them right no~~~~w! Your mother in the countryside is crying you knowww!』

At once Hajime felt gazes piercing him from behind that were asking「This guy, just what is he saying?」. At the same time, that kind of atmosphere was also transmitted toward him from the fleet somehow.

But, Hajime-san didn't pay any attention to everyone's bewilderment and began to dash leaving everyone behind. Because, that was Hajime Quality after all!

『All of you, don't have the right to request a lawyer! You also don't have any ground to plead for any extenuating circumstance! But, I'll allow your right to keep silent! If you let go of the dragon hostage, and then stay silent and return home, I'll be merciful and won't shoot from behind! Now, this is a chance of a lifetime for you to avoid death penalty you know! Who cares about Beroder! Kidnapper gentlemen! Just scurry back home with all your strength without fear!!』

What he was saying was already absurd. Also, even the name of the king-sama that he said was absurdly mangled.

『Are you listening, this is a warning! If you don't release the dragons right now, I'm telling you it will be re~ally terrible for you all okay! Just ignore what Hageter is telling you to do! I'm not lying y'know? It will be a cold day in hell before I'm lyi—』

A bombardment from the flagship Durgrant! Surely it was the payback for the name calling that was totally wrong already except the letter「r」.

Roze called in panic at Hajime who blocked that with his barrier.

「Hajime-sama!? Just what in the world are you planning!? Why are you provoking them like that-」

「Either way, it was already too late by the time we hadn't departed from here when that fleet arrived. Surely they won't overlook us anymore now. Of course, it's possible for us to escape right away but.....」

It was impossible for Hajime to show his back toward people who were attacking him hostilely. Of course it didn't change even now that should be Roze and others should be the one fighting. That was why, at present Hajime had no intention to make a move directly.

Then, why.....Roze who was asking that was replied by Hajime with a grin.

「In this world, there are fellows who should also fight other than queen-san and co right? The fellows who ought to burn their soul betting their survival and dignity on the line.」

「Eh?」

Hajime averted his gaze from the bewildered Roze and gazed at Tio.

「Tio. Won't you show to your junior this rug rat dragon, the real king of dragon?」

「Kufufuh. Actually the screams of the dragons hath been clinging into mine ear and it wouldst not go away since some time ago. Even if Goshujin-sama decide to leave this place, I'm planning to do it. But, I believe with mine all that Goshujin-sama wouldst surely meet mine expectation in this kind of time.」

Tio's lips warped happily yet ferociously. Her pupils split vertically and they had already turned into dragon eyes. It seemed the meaningless torture to the dragons made her stomach boiled up much.

Hajime showed a similarly ferocious smile and then he sent telepathy to Gregor with a tone that sounded a bit serious.

『Mensor. You know that we possess unknown power, you know that we already sink a mother ship of your country without it being able to do anything, and yet even knowing all that, you don't feel like stopping huh?』

『.....Indeed, the power of you bastard is of unknown quantity. But, exactly because of that there is worth in stealing it. I'm someone who steal. There is a first rate treasure before my eyes while I'm able to wield my maximum strength, no way I'm gonna stop don't you think? As long as there is even a percent chance of victory, I'll always go to steal what I want. This time is the same.』

『I see. So you also have something unshakeable inside you in your own way.But, hey self-proclaimed god, you are mistaking one thing yeah.』

『What?』

The bombardment from the flagship Durgrant ceased. Right after that, Hajime and Tio leaped up from the deck.

Hajime and Tio who jumped to the sky nestled close to each other midair and hovered still.

And then, both of them stared at each other from really close range it looked like they would kiss anytime, and like that.....

bachikon-

「Ahahn」

Hajime's spanking burst on Tio's butt. Seeing how there was a crimson ripple spreading from that, it seemed that the spanking was accompanied with "Magic Shockwave". Even though there was almost no damage from that, but the masterful slap that sent numbing pleasure(pain) running through the whole body until the deepest core caused hopeless dragon-san to reflexively got on all

fours. Even though she was midair but it was done skillfully.

「Come on, do your best, hopeless dragon. Even though you are the princess of the dragon race, but you pervert is gasping in front of this large army.」

「I, I'm gasping, because of Goshujin-sama's fault.....」

bachikon-

「Ahiih. Just now, it reached amazing place-」

「Even though you are the pervert, what are you doing blaming other huh?」

After saying that it was one more spanking. Tio's large butt undulated from the impact. It was accompanied with a bewitching voice that resounded once more, through the whole airspace.

Of course, everyone of Avenst, and everyone of the divine country's large fleet, and also that Gregor-san, everyone of them without exception was shocked「Just what the hell these people are starting so suddenlyyy!?!」so much their eyes almost popped out from their socket.

Hajime was building a world of only the two of them that was different from the one with Yue while he mercilessly kept spanking Tio's butt. And then he took out a test tube vial from his pocket and took off the cap using his mouth. Next, he plunged it into Tio's mouth that was opened gaspingly.

「Nnguu!?!」

Tio who suddenly got something plunged into her mouth, and furthermore liquid was flowing in from that, coupled with the butt spanking it caused her expression to change into a terribly joyous one! What a pervert! As expected from the hopeless dragon!

Gregor who finally returned to reality around that point gave out his order. He didn't understand what was going on, but for the time being he was going to shower them with bombardment. The main cannon of several mother ships were aimed toward Hajime and Tio.

「Nnmuu!?! It came-! It came, Goshujin-samaaa-! As expected, the conversion rate from personal reward of Goshujin-sama art in different level! Just like Yue's blood pledge contract, this art truly the master and servant contract that art

build on love!」

「No way. If this thing is going to get a skill name, then it will absolutely be something like pervert contract, or SM contract, something like that.」

Tio who were breathing ‘haa haa’ roughly on all fours with expression of ecstasy yelled with a voice that was oozing with excitement. And then, she was standing up unsteadily while fidgeting before she received a necklace with red jewel attached from Hajime.

「Is it okay without transforming into dragon?」

「Fufun, haa haa, don’t look down on me. Haa haa, nnnh. This art different from the battle in Holy Precincts where I hath to do it without any rehearsal. Afuuu.....I hath trained diligently and mine skill was further polished then before. *Haa haa*.....to say nothing, of how I hath received reward personally from Goshujin-sama now. For the current me, nothing art impossible!」

「Hm, is that so.」

Hajime’s indifferent reply cause Tio to tremble from feeling shivers.

And then, now, just when the main cannons were in the verge of firing, she bent greatly backward while taking a deep breath.....

GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA—

She let out a dragon howl with human body. Still with an extremely disgusting smile as though she was going to throw out all the pleasure in one go.

The howl radiated, however, it wasn’t a mere yell. The howl turned into black colored ripples with Tio as the center and it rushed through the airspace. The black ripples that undulated repeatedly, over and over again, they ignored the barrier and passed through the fleet.

Was it an unknown attack..... But look there, that woman’s smile. It wasn’t normal!

The fleet’s main cannons cautiously stopped in the stage of firing preparation completed.

Right after that, pulsation resounded in the world.

Thump-

Thump-

Thump-

It wasn't just one or two. There were innumerable pulses that couldn't be counted. It was as though the world itself was going to wake up, and then there was bizarre yet overwhelming presence, presence, presence-!!

—Now, awaken. O mine brethrens. O proud, powerful existences.

A voice that resembled telepathy, and yet was vaguely different somehow was coming down.

—The eyes of dragon, art not something for the sake of expressing grief. They art there for the flame of conviction to dwell inside

『Your majesty-. The full, no, the dragons-』

『This is, the second mother ship Ambition! Strangeness is occurring in the fuel bunker! Those guys, just what in the world is going on!?!』

A solemn and dignified voice resounded in Gregor's ears, at the same time there were also screamed reports coming one after another. Every one of those reports were conveying about the strangeness of the fuel in each ship.

—The claws of dragon, art not something for hugging tight the trembling self. They art there in order to tear apart malice, and protect what ought to be protected.

『Eighth mother ship Granada! The dragons, they are getting dyed! Something is happening!?!』

『This is the tenth mother ship Fudelta-. The dragons are enlarging here! At this rate the cages will be broken! Your majesty, your order please-』

『Reporting-. The dragons that are dyed black are spewing out heat energy from their mouth! Shit-, the fuel bunker is destroyed-』

The report didn't come only from the fleet. A screaming report and panicked yell asking for instruction were also coming from the fuel bunker of flagship Durgrant. Furthermore, there was a thunderous sound booming and the tremor

from that was transmitted until the flagship where Gregor was at.

「What is happening!?!」

「-. The restrain of the dragon that is let out from the cage for torture is destroyed! It's rampaging and killing the crews!」

「Impossible. That restriction is for anti-dragon use that is equipped with Synthesizer! Why didn't it activate!?!」

「It's activating! Other than the one in the restriction tool, the crews are also activating theirs! But it's not working against the black dragon!」

「What the hell happened-. Aargh, broadcast this to all ships too! Kill all the dragons that are turning strange. Kill them right away!」

The moment the order was given, killing weapon was aimed toward the dragons who were continuously pulsating inside the fuel bunkers. The dragons who were still bewildered at the change that was happening to them saw those gun muzzles and the menacing crews. They were shrinking back in fear.

——The fangs of dragon, art not something to be gritted in front of death. They art there in order to crunch thy own weakness into pieces, and display the soul of struggle tempered with reasoning.

The dragons who were going to huddle into themselves suddenly stopped still. That change caused the crews who were readying their weapon to stop moving for a moment in suspicion. They stopped completely.

「Gururururuh」

Countless low growls were echoing. The dragons who were dyed jet black and grew up to adulthood regardless of their former size slowly raised their head that was lowered as though begging for forgiveness before this.

「Hih」

「U, a」

Several crews raised a short scream. Those were undoubtedly voices of terror. Their eyes met. With the dragons who raised their face. They were pierced by those dragon eyes that were filled with fighting spirit and soul of conviction.

——Raise the howl! The dragon's howl! Demonstrate to the world, of thy existence! Lift up highly, thy proud soul! All of thee——art the dragons!

Instantly, countless howls shook the world and spread through the sky.

It caused a hallucination that perhaps the whole fleet might rupture from the inside, from these furiously grand dragon howls!

Just from that, the eardrums of the nearby crews were damaged, and among them there were even people who lost consciousness with the white of their eyes exposed.

——Soul – Metamorphosis – Sublimation Composite magic 【Black God Dragon's Authority】

Once in the Holy Precincts Tio used【Dragon King's Authority】. It was an age of god magic that transformed other creature into black dragon. Before, she could only change the target one by one by using black slavery whip in conjunction.

But right now, although there was the requirements that she needed to be in a state that had stocked up power from using Pain Conversion, and also the targets needed to be creature that was close to dragon, but she was able to transform all the dragons within range into black dragons that possessed tough black scale with one roar. Furthermore, by using an arrangement of【Divine Statement】——【God Dragon's Word Soul】, it could also awaken the dragon instinct.

Yes, by Tio's power, all the dragons who were confined by the fleet in great amount as fuel——were transformed into gallant black dragons!

As the result,

DOG0000000000

Countless explosive sounds reverberated. The cause was one. The “breath attack” that became usable after the black dragon transformation exploded inside all the airships.

『It's no good-. We cannot hold them ba-gyaah』

『Shit-. What's with that scale!? The bullet cannot go through-』

The reports were gradually turning into mere screams. And then, the fired

breaths smashed the internal walls, the black dragons that were surging out from the cage were trampling down the ship's inside, and they finally flew outside.

Like ashes that were whirling up from the stirring winds, the dragons went home to the sky one after another from the external walls that were melted by the flashes of the breath attack.

Even just a single mother ship would confine dragons in number that easily surpassed a hundred. The number of the black dragons that were flying out was uncommon.

『Fire-! It's convenient if they are going out by themselves! They are coming out so shoot them down!』

Gregor's instruction was transmitted. The heavy weapons on board the ships immediately spewed fire.

The bullets were approaching like falling stars toward the crowd of black dragons that flew out to the sky. But, another dragon that flew out first cut into that firing line. It spread out its wings and used its body as shield to cover its comrades!

The black scales it inherited from its parent weren't something that could easily get pierced by the heavy weapon. But, even so if it was asked whether it could come out unscathed, then the answer was no. Its black scales were smashed and scattered each time bullets hit it, and finally the bullets gouged its body and blood and flesh were scattered.

But, the black dragon who turned its body into shield for its comrades' sake didn't waver even with death before its eyes. Its merely, with the will of fighting till the end, the will to protect its comrades, it even fired its last breath attack just from those wills.

It was a small breath that was already powerless, however it splendidly destroyed one of the ship's weapons. At the same time, the hole-riddled black dragon vomited blood while losing strength.

But, thanks to that sacrifice, several dozen black dragons were able to fly out to the sky from the hole without getting sniped.

——Flap thy wings, o noble child. Blessing to that soul

A grand howl reverberated. The ripples that were spreading once more in the sky enveloped the black dragons that were falling powerlessly.

At the next moment, the black dragons that were definitely wounded all over their body flapped their dragon wings strongly. They rearranged their posture midair and then looked down at their own body with puzzled feeling. There they witnessed the sight of their wound gone already with their black scales regenerating swiftly.

The cause of that? That was obvious. It was their mother that awakened them as “dragon”.

The gaze of the black dragons caught sight of the great existence that was standing in air with human form. That figure was going ‘haa haa’ somehow though.

「KUWAAAAAAAAAH」

「GAAAAAAAAAAAH」

「GURYAAAAAAAAH」

There was only one meaning of the howls echoing through the sky.

——Gather. Toward the great dragon who was going ‘haa haa’.

The black dragons simultaneously started flying toward the center of the battlefield. Naturally, bullets and missiles were coming at them from behind, but several black dragons were constantly covering their comrades at the rear, in that chance they would roll and fired their breath to intercept. And then, the wounded black dragons would have their body healed when a soul-stirring howl echoed and they would return to battle.

「What.....sight.....」

That was Roze’s whisper. Kuwaibel who was within her embrace was unmoving with his gaze fixed forward unblinking as though to burn everything into his eyes. And then, the people of Avenst were also looking still at the sky in a daze without moving. But, just from looking at their expression it could be understood that their emotions were completely the same like Roze.

——A tornado made from great number of black dragons.

With Tio at the center, the black dragons circling around her were creating a sight that had never been seen before in this world.

The light of the sun that was showing out its face completely was reflected glitteringly on the scales of the black dragons. It was as though black diamonds that were perfectly cut by artisan's hand were dancing while reflecting the light at random.

What a truly grandeur, sublime, and beautiful sight.

Amidst the rising up emotions that jolted the soul of the humans of the fleet, Tio's words were directed toward the king of pillage.

『Thou the so called god king that rule the sky. No more tedious talk art necessary. ——Open wide thy eyes. Witness, what kind of existence dragon art. The true meaning of ruling the sky!』

『-. Who cares-. Fire-. Don't get absent-minded! I permit lethal attack! Aim all weapons at them! Flagship, turn around-. Whole fleet, cover for Durgrant's retreat! I'll kill the whole family of anyone who disobey!』

A command to kill resounded. There was also a resolute retreat command at the same time. However, it was only for himself who was the king. The long rule of terror didn't allow anyone to disobey his words even when they understood that they were obviously in an ugly situation.

The flagship Durgrant turned around, at the same time the whole fleet launched simultaneous attack. There were silver bombardments and also missiles attack. All those that were fired from all direction were like a cage that was made from firing lines.

「Thinking again, this is the first time I'm going to see it live huh. I'm looking forward to it.」

「Fufu, I'll answer that expectation. ——"Limit Break"」

The necklace that was handed to her before this——"Last Zell".

With the combined effects of the artifact that brought about Limit Break, and the Cheatmate II (Umaobo walleye pollock roe flavor, drink version) she drank

just now, the finishing move of Tio Claus that originally couldn't be activated without getting damages all over her body was now activated!

GOU- The wind roared. Storm of magic power where crimson and jet black mixed. It spiraled up and pierced the sky, with size so big that it enveloped the tornado of the black dragons from further outside. The sea of clouds twisted and whirled like a typhoon.

The flooding silver bombardments and also the swarm of missiles got rolled up and jumbled together where not even a single one went through the storm. The overwhelming torrent of power turned anything and everything powerless!

The light of sun was vanishing.

The sky above the sea of clouds was getting covered further.

「Aa, as I thought, your great self is.....」

A true dragon manipulated even the heaven and earth. It was the legend that was taught to her. And now, it was occurring right before her eyes. Roze was trickling tears naturally. Was she deeply moved? Was she scared? Roze, and also the people of Avenst who were similarly shedding tears didn't really understand. However, there was something pressing on their chest.

Thunderbolts and bursting sounds overran the world.

What was generated at the sky further above the sea of clouds, was a sea of lightning and flame. Lightning was flickering like prominence in the flame sea of sky that was spreading as though to burn the world to ash.

The tornado of crimson and jet black dispersed. The black dragons that were left behind were merely looking up to the sky. It was as though they were worshipping the existence there.

slither Something was protruding out from the sea of lightning and flame. It was a part of a long torso. Jet black scales that seemed to suck in the light could be seen. It was undulating, emerging out from the sea of lightning flame with top and bottom reversed, it vanished, and then emerged out once more.

On the whole, it wasn't a body of dragon, whether in size or shape. But, all existences in this airspace understood.

——That thing which was beyond human understanding was.....a dragon
zuzuzu-, It made a sound that was like a rumble in the ground and the
existence that was swimming in the sea of lightning flame showed its
appearance.

It appeared with skin of flame while clad in tremendous sparks. The golden
dragon eyes that were split vertically in the middle were glaring at everything in
the lower world.

The giant body that easily surpassed three hundred meter long was coiling
and the surrounding was colored by flashes of lightning and prominences.

A beat.

——GOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

For a moment, everyone hallucinated whether the world was burst open.
Because of the howl that was like an explosive sound.....wasn't the cause.

『The god.....that control.....the sky.....』

Yes, it was truly the heaven's might. Just a single howl caused everyone to
feel the will of judgment that seemed to break the world.

Without any distinction of ally or enemy, this was an existence that would
make all existence to feel awe.

——Black god dragon Tio Claus

Manifested here.

Something like the chance of victory for the fleet, there was no way they even
had a percent of it.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about
misspelling and omitted words.

※ Dragon + Hostage = Dragon hostage (coined words) (TN: In Japan, hostage
is read 'hitojichi'. Hito=person, jichi=collateral. In this chapter the author used
made up words of 'ryuujichi' or dragon hostage.)

A lot of people pointed that out, so I wrote it just in case. I'm sorry that it was hard to understand.

I was late this time too. Really forgive me.

And so, the plan for the next chapter, if possible it will be at 6 P.M. Saturday, or perhaps at 0 A.M Sunday, if I cannot make it even then, then it will be at 6 P.M Sunday. Please treat me well.

Arifureta Chapter 240

Arifureta After II King's Understanding First Part

AN: Sorry it's late.

Sea of lightning flame in the sky. Sea of clouds of death whirling below.

It could be seen as the sight of the end of the world, or perhaps as the sight of the creation of the world. Surely the impression would differ depending on the person.

But, in any case, there wasn't anyone who doubted that this was a scene of legend that would be engraved into the history of this world.

——Where art thou going?

The solemn soul of language came from the sky. All the people who heard it would be made to hold awe whether they wanted it or not by that voice.

That voice was directed toward the flagship that was trying to escape first by making the whole fleet into sacrificial pawn. No, more accurately, it was toward the master of flagship Durgrant that gave the order——the god king of pillage Gregor.

Even that person himself must understand that the question was directed to him. Inside the bridge of flagship Durgrant that was already turning around and moved to escape, Gregor who was watching dumbfounded at the absurd sight behind the ship through the display twitched and trembled.

『Don't listen-. Full speed——』

Gregor yelled in panic toward the helmsman with shaken eyes. However, he was unable to speak his order until the end.

——O false king, know shame

『Yo, your majesty-』

『-, dodge!』

A scream came from the helmsman. Because suddenly a giant tornado descended from the sea of lightning flame. The tornado of scorching heat that burn the air with hell fire and heat wave spiraled and dyed the inside of the bridge with brilliant light.

The helmsman reflexively tilted the ship faster than Gregor's command to dodge. The flagship Durgrant veered right away to the right with a motion that didn't suit that giant frame.

——Thou couldst not escape

Along with those words, the second blazing tornado descended. It didn't stop there, as though to invite despair toward the flagship Durgrant that was trying to slip through somehow, the third, fourth, fifth tornado descended.

『-, impossible to dodge! It's coming!』

『Barrier full strength! Breakthrough-』

The loud yells of the helmsman and Gregor echoed.

Flagship Durgrant tried to slip through the countless flame pillars that were connecting heaven and earth, but it finally couldn't evade and came into contact.

Instantly, the giant body of flagship Durgrant was attacked by fierce vibration. The posture control system didn't work and the ship's bow was lifted up as though it got hoisted, the ship was rotating uncontrollably. In addition, there were even consecutive impacts that followed. The thunderbolts that were generated inside the tornado were assaulting the ship.

The crew who was in charge of the silver barrier control saw how the ship's energy was consumed with frightening speed and he raised his voice with pale expression.

『The barrier output-, it decreased by fifty percent! Your majesty-, at this rate-』

『Chih, start replenish.....shit-』

Gregor unconsciously cursed when he was about to give instruction. In order to maintain the barrier's output, they needed to exchange the pod of dragon core fuel, but he remembered that there were no more dragon for that.

『Turn around.....turn the ship around! At the same time, fire at full power toward that black dragon!』

They couldn't retreat.

Gregor who made that judgment then ordered to turn the ship around while feeling indescribable rage and unease.

At the same time, the weapons loaded on board the flagship Durgrant fired simultaneously. Missiles in the amount that was absurd to be counted, storm of bullets that should be called as a wall already, and naturally the silver bombardment too.

Of course——all those were shot down. Anything and everything, without a single exception. By several hundred, several thousand lightning showering from the sky.

While flagship Durgrant was retreating, the other fleets were naturally joining in offense using their full power to push back Tio. Yet regardless of that, Gregor was unable to even retreat.

The reason of that was this.

From all directions. In the range diameter of several dozen kilometer. Sniping of roaring lightning was shooting out every target under the heaven simultaneously and swiftly.

The world that was covered with the sea of lightning flame was literally the absolute territory of the black god dragon.

『Charge the Henkhaborg-. All fleets, buy us time!』

The fact that their attack didn't reach caused Gregor's voice to turn increasingly disarrayed. Even so, all the fleets reflexively obeyed the words of the king who symbolized terror and violence.

The barrier fleet form multi-layered formation to protect the flagship Durgrant, the other fleets aimed their maximum firepower without pause from

all directions, sky battlecraft squads were unleashing attacks suicidally.

At the same time, flagship Durgrant's multi-column 3-turret cannon was focusing silver light with terrific momentum. However, that light was something mixed with black color like what mother ship Ostinato showed in the end, so it was obviously different in aspect with the normal bombardment.

——Main cannon Henkhaborg

It was a silver bombardment that took in the property of the black rain to become an abominable energy wave. The bombardment that focused and mixed the impure energy that filled this world, when it hit the target, even if the ship's frame itself was protected by the barrier, the energy that caused necrosis to the cells would encroach inside the ship and annihilated the crews.

Of course, after it was fired, highly polluted energy would get scattered at the surrounding area, so one's own army also would not escape the effect. It was a forbidden weapon that was hard to use, it bared its fang not just to enemy and ally, but even to the world.

And now, it was fired.

A flash shined and filled up the burning world completely.

It didn't matter even if it was against existence that had veered really far from the beaten track, as long as it was still a living thing, it should be possible for it to experience cell necrosis. And then, as long as they could just succeed in eroding its body, they would be able to kill it for sure!

A twitching smile emerged on Gregor's lips.

——Fool

It was fired in no time.

The black god dragon's——breath!

The flash that was fired from the jaw that was opened wide was pure black. It was an absolute color that wasn't polluted by anyone, painting over everything.

The bombardment of silver and black that exemplified taboo was certainly mighty, it could pulverize even a mother ship in a single shot. But, the breath that was fired from the black god dragon far surpassed it. The difference in

power was overwhelming, like a needle that was thrust to intercept a log.

GOU- When the atmosphere growled, this world's strongest bombardment was easily swallowed by the black breath after a moment of resistance.

『Impossible-』

Gregor's yell echoed.

But, the scene before his eyes was a definite fact. The strongest attack of flagship Durgrant was swallowed right from the front, and it didn't stop there, it was getting annihilated along with the negative energy by the aberrantly scorching heat.

The first layer of the multi-layered barrier that was deployed by the barrier fleet was smashed open like a paper waste. The second layer was also breached like scattering glass after a moment of resistance. The third layer, the fourth layer.....

『Dodge-』

『Ro, roger!』

At the same time with the barrier's pulverization, several ships of the barrier fleet were hit by the breath and they exploded everywhere. Gregor recovered his sanity seeing the figure of the defensive ships going up in flame and he gave his command, and then the helmsman who similarly managed to go back to reality steered the ship with miraculous reflex.

When flagship Durgrant rotated, the last barrier was broken through at the same time.

『All hands-, brace for impa——』

The yell that was raised by someone couldn't be finished until the end.

Right after that, a terrific impact attacked flagship Durgrant. Thunderous sound and fierce alert sound rang.

The breath Tio released didn't stop and opened up a large hole in the whirling sea of clouds and vanished toward the ground. No one had the leisure to observe where it landed, but if they could actually do that, surely they would experience the feeling of a block of ice thrown on their spine without doubt.

After all, the place that was impacted by the breath that descended from the sky——a mountain with elevation around two kilometer was hit directly and it got blasted away spotlessly.

It was the breath of a god dragon that changed the geography.

Flagship Durgrant got hit by that, however, it still wasn't sinking. Its mobility that didn't suit its large built and the great reaction of the helmsman saved them, that they got away with only its main cannon part wholly gouged out.

Although, the figure of the flagship tilting diagonally while on fire and smoking was giving a shock to the whole fleets as though it had been sunken down.

The captains of the fleet were staring dumbfounded without giving any order at the symbol of despair the flagship getting cornered, as though time had stopped. The attack of the fleet also stopped and naturally the sky battlecraft squadrons were also staring at the flagship with their eyes opened wide.

There was no way Tio would overlook that opening.

——O proud warriors. Flap thy wings. Raise thy howl. Drive into the heart of these invaders who acted as though they owned the sky, just whose territory this place art

Those who answered was naturally the black dragons who were protected from the all-directions fleet attack. The dragon howls that shook the soul resounded through the blazing sky.

It was too late even when the enemy returned to their senses in shock.

The pilots of sky battlecrafts that were staring at the flagship Durgrant while circling saw the opened large mouth and fangs of dragon through their cockpit at the next moment——right after that, they were swallowed by scorching heat breath and vanished.

The other sky battlecraft squadrons also got their back taken instantly and they exploded due to the black dragons' breath, others got hit by the tackle of the falling black dragon and they got crushed along with their cockpit.

The airships and mother ships resumed their attack.

However, the current black dragons didn't let go of the opening of the paused barrage.

The last sight that a male captain who was sitting on the command seat inside the bridge saw, was the scene of a black dragon swooping down while flapping its wings in a big way, its large mouth opened across the windbreak. Right after that, his consciousness was expelled into the perpetual darkness along with the black flash that blanketed his field of vision.

Black dragons were clinging on a mother ship. They were outside the firing range because they were too close. The sky battlecrafts who originally should be playing active role so this kind of situation didn't occur were unable to protect their ship due to another dragons attacking them with clever cooperation and suicidal resolve.

Like that, with deadly attack toward the bridge, the black dragons were sinking the fleets one after another.

Even in that battlefield that presented a chaotic situation, there were also tough ships that were defeating the black dragons using skilled maneuver, but the black dragons that should be shot down already were revived as though nothing happened at the next moment and attacked again.

Of course, there were black dragons who got hit by main cannon class attack and they were exterminated without reviving back. There were also those that were falling in tailspin and vanish into the sea of clouds without the revival making it in time.

But, however.....

『These guys.....don't they have any fear?』

A captain of a certain mother ship whispered.

Immediately after that, a black dragon on the verge of death whose wings were turned into tatters and its dragons scales smashed, even so its fighting spirit wasn't dulled even by a fragment, it was howling as though to burn its life into ash and charged toward the bridge. And then, it destroyed the bridge with its breath!

They didn't have anything like fear. If they had fear, then it would be fear

toward death without even fighting, living with their soul rotting.

『Shit-. Why, are they not stopping-』

The captain of a certain airship screamed.

A black dragon received all attacks with its body while protecting a comrade behind it, even so it advanced forward without stopping. Even when half its body was blown away from a missile's direct hit, the strength dwelling inside those dragon eyes didn't waver in the slightest.

It definitely, delivered its comrade toward the enemy's location! Of course, the breath of the protected black dragon blew away the bridge.

They wouldn't stand still anymore for the second time. Because this was the sky. This was their territory.

Therefore, they were outdoing their opposition.

They were outdoing their greatest enemy. And above all else——their past self!

「Aa.....really, what a sight this is.....」

The voice that was blurred with the overflowing feeling came from the descendant of the country that loved dragon, and swore to live together with dragon——Roze Phiris Avenst's.

Their greatest friends who were oppressed, their dignity trampled down, even their right to live stolen, now they were reborn once more. She had no words. Roze didn't understand any way to express this emotion inside her.

However, the one thing that she understood was——

「Piuh, piiihih」

And the last monarch dragon——Kuwaibel also felt the same like that. The heroic and grand battle of his brethrens, with their existence staked on the line caused a roar to leak out naturally. He dreamed it, longed for it. They floundered, to make it reality. And then, the sight of the future that they ought to struggle to arrive at, was right here right now.

He didn't know his father and also his mother. He also had no sibling. When

he was born, there was only the human girl who was his partner before his eyes. He didn't think that he was lonely. However, actually he was wishing from his heart from brethrens that would fight together with him.

That was why, their awakened figures made Kuwaibel's young soul trembled. He wondered what should he do to express that overflowing feeling.....

But, there was only one thing that he understood.....

『Do you want to fight?』

「-」

「Pih!？」

A question suddenly resounded.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned their face together at that voice's owner.

The silhouette standing above the coiling black god dragon. There was no need to ask, it was Hajime. There was a lot of distance between them, but they understood that Hajime was turning his face toward Roze and Kuwaibel.

The reply of the two was concise.

『Yes.』

「Pii.」

Yes, they wanted to fight.

With dignity, betting their right to live. In order to proof, that the flag they hoisted up was indeed right.

They wanted to stand shoulder to shoulder with their brethrens that were demonstrating a fierce battle. So that they could call themselves their “friend”, their “king” with their head held high.

Roze and Kuwaibel looked behind. Over there, they saw the figure of Avenst's people clenching their fist staring hard at the battlefield. Everyone saw the figure of their fighting friend, their will to fight ‘We cannot just remain a spectator in this kind of place!’ seething inside.

Hajime who made a small smile toward such them was,

『Queen-san. I'll ask one thing, for fleets that big to depart for here, doesn't that mean that the battle strength in their country right now is relatively few?』

『Eh? That's, certainly.....most likely, there is only a defense fleet that excelled in defensive battle remaining there I think.』

Even though the sudden question caused Roze to be taken aback, she answered like that after pondering for a bit. Hajime's expression distorted fearlessly.

『This battlefield is the battlefield of this world's dragons. Perhaps it's also fine for you to join the battle as friend, and as king but.....in this battlefield there is Tio, the black god dragon. And then, there are the "awakened" dragons who obtained the divine protection of the god dragon. Then, defeat is impossible even in one in a million chance.』

『But-, while that may be true, to remain a spectator in this battle that be our existence——』

『That's why, I'm saying to use this chance to overthrow the divine country.』

『I don't really understand what are you saying.』

Roze reflexively returned a reply that sounded joking to those words that sounded like a joke. Kuwaibel and other people were also making a bemused expression thinking「Just what is this person saying?」toward the content of the telepathy that they hear.

Hajime's expression suddenly turned serious toward them all.

『Roze Phiris Avenst. Right here is surely the turning point. Even after they lost their king and their battle strength plummet rock bottom, if the divine country hardened their defense when they grasped that information, will you be able to defeat them then? Just with those two airships and few sky battlecraft pilots?』

『That's.....』

『In a battlefield, to be separated from those important to you, to leave them to face formidable enemy.....such things will be accompanied by terrible pain. But, did such brittle relationship that couldn't do that exist between the human and dragon of the dragon kingdom of the past?』

Even if their body was separated, but their heart was always beside each other. Sometimes they were separated by heaven and earth and advanced for the sake of their purpose. That was the bond between human and dragon in the dragon kingdom of the past.

『Right now they have Tio's divine protection, they are able to display the greatest strength as black dragon. But, later after we leave, the infinite regeneration and also the enormous magic power will be gone. Even if the black dragons cooperate with you all to retake the kingdom, the obstacle you have to overcome will be great.』

『.....』

Hajime asked the wordless Roze.

『Don't you all, have your own battlefield?』

Once in the battle in Holy Precincts, Hajime left behind his comrades in the battlefield and advanced forward. It was done under a definite bond. That was why his words now was conveyed to Roze with a definite weight.

『.....But, the distance from here until Qwailent——』

『If you wish, then I'll open the door. It's a little bit of present from the instigator. ——Now, what will you do, queen of a ruined country?』

In a sense, this battlefield was ideal. There were the awakened dragons, there was the supreme ruler of the sky, and there was the divine protection from such being. If they fought together, Roze and others would be able to clear up the pent-up resentment of the many years almost unharmed.

But, indeed it was just like Hajime said, even with only the black dragons there wouldn't be any problem here. What's more, there wasn't any reason for Roze and others that they had to join the fight no matter what. It was nothing but the problem of emotion.

They didn't understand how Hajime would send them until the divine country, but if he said that he could then surely he was really able to do it. Roze was convinced of that.

And then, a surprise attack toward the divine country was certainly also their

biggest effective chance to retake the kingdom.

However, there was no doubt that the danger would be far above this battlefield. Most likely, many of the soldiers gathered in this place right now would lose their life.

Roze shut her eyes.

The enemy's battle strength. This move to recover from their hopeless situation. The degree of damage. The chance of victory. The merit and demerit after they took a step forth. In case they didn't depart for battle here, the state of things in a world with cleared sky. The action prediction of the divine country that lost its main fleets.....

「Your majesty.」

「Roze-sama.」

Roze came back to herself suddenly and she looked back. There, she saw the figures of Bovid and Sabas staring at her with a strong gaze. No, it wasn't just the two. The Crow siblings, the other top brasses, and then, all the people regardless of gender and age, they all were staring at Roze with a gaze that contained a flame that was even hotter than the sea of flame spreading in the sky.

(Aa, that's right. If it's resolve, then we already have it.)

Didn't they decide to fight already? Didn't they wish, that they want to fight?

Wasn't the will of dragon kingdom Avenst, displayed already?

Roze made a bitter smile at herself who was flinching back now when the time came for that. And then, right after that she declared loudly with definite dignity and resolve as the king of a country.

「People of dragon country Avenst. My beloved people. It looks like the time has come.」

The explosive sound of battlefield struck the eardrums. However, no matter how much noise resounded, their ears didn't fail to hear their queen's words.

「If we leave all the fight to our awakened friend and run away because we treasure our own life——our heart will die. Even if we plunge into this

battlefield following our emotion——there won't be any significant meaning. To consider escape as battle, that escape is fighting just like what we have done until now in the cleared up world——that's something that our pride won't allow anymore. I'll say it one more time. ——The time has come.」

Breaths were held. Everyone corrected their posture and they stared straight at Roze.

「Resolve yourself. From here on, we will challenge a next to impossible battle.」

Let's rescue the friends of the dragon kingdom that are born merely to be exploited and killed. Let's liberate the people of the dragon kingdom that are captured and treated like slave. And then.....

「We will make over the world. As the first step of that——let's take back our kingdom!」

The answer was naturally a soul-stirring war cry that wasn't outdone by the dragon howls.

At the same time with that war cry that sounded like it would blow away the thunderbolts and explosions, the top brasses were giving instructions one after another. Everyone was starting to move swiftly. In the middle of that, Roze turned her gaze toward Hajime.

『Hajime-sama. Please guide us. To the land of our longstanding desire.』

『Welcome to the battlefield. Queen-sama.』

Hajime who made a wide and villainous grin made his fingertip shined and took out an artifact. It was a sparkling key colored with mystical blue. A key that opened even a door that crossed over worlds——the Crystal Key.

Hajime threw it with just a movement of his finger tip. The crystal key flew while leaving behind trail of azure light and it pierced the space between Hajime and mother ship Avenst.

The crystal key that had been given improvement with gravity stone inserted in it rotated at the same time when Hajime twisted his wrist, as though it was unlocking something.

——*gakon-*

The sound of opened lock rang in the world.

Of course, it was an optional extra. The sound was meaningless, but Hajime was struck with the idea so it couldn't be helped. This too was also Hajime Quality!

Incidentally, previously the opened gate looked like shining membrane, but right now the gate looked like an impressive two-leaf door that appeared from thin air that was opening while making solemnly heavy sound *gogogo*-.

Of course, that was an optional extra! It was meaningless, but Hajime got carried up from excitement so it couldn't be helped! This too was also Hajime Quality!

By the way, the door was merely three-dimensional projection, so the size and also the design could be changed based on Hajime's current mood! It was his prided item that he made from a month of hard work combining the film technology of earth and magic of Tortus!

『.....Hajime-sama. By any chance, are you someone that is affiliated with god?』

No, he was just an obsessive inventor desu. To the level that he would even forget eating and sleeping once he got absorbed into something, and he wouldn't stop until he got drained dry by the legal wife, or eating the suplex of the rabbit-eared wife.

『Go. May the luck of war be with you.』

『-. Thank you very much. ——I'll pray that someday, we will be able to meet once again in a world where the world, the people's heart, and also the dragons' soul are all cleared up.』

Roze bowed, and then she turned on her heel toward airship Rozeria in order to take command over the whole force.

『I feel a bit uneasy with only those children.Oho? Fumu, is that so. Very well, leave thy brethrens to me.』

Tio who was staying still above the sky to watch over the battle of the black

dragons sent a sidelong glance at Roze and others. And then, several black dragons came back from the battlefield and soared toward airship Rozeria while sending their gaze at Tio.

It seemed they were conveying to Tio that they would follow them, so they asked her to take care of their brethrens.

『What an overprotective god dragon-sama.』

『What art thou saying? If Goshujin-sama say that, even thou were lending thy hand that thou open the gate.』

『Something like that doesn't count as lending hand. I was only sending those guys to hell.』

『The act just now art something necessary for them to be able to live proudly holding their head high in the future ahead. The act of instigating also count as lending hand. Fufu.』

While they were talking telepathically just between the two of them, airships Rozeria and Averia vanished inside the gate followed by the nation on ship Avenst.

.....They passed through the impressive shining door that was created by the throwing tantrum Hajime「Just a bit more-. Just a bit more until it's finished-. That's why, I'll eat properly when it's finished okay!」Even while having his cheeks stretched *munii* widely by Yue and his body locked by Shia's Cobra Twist.

『You bastard-, where are they going-? Just what the hell are you two!?!』

An angry yell rose from the battlefield that had reached the one-way intensification. Gregor's voice that was filled with unease and confusion didn't have even a speck of its former dignity anymore.

『This kind of incomprehensible power-, suddenly appearing out of nowhere-. Don't screw with me-. How can something like this is allowed! Damn it-, damn ittt-. I am, the king of the divine country you know!?!』

Gregor's yell complained to Hajime and Tio——or rather, it was closer to a soliloquy. The number of the ships was already decreased until half. They were unable to even replenish their dragon core energy. The energy output of the

fleets that was declining didn't even have the spare energy to fire their main cannon anymore.

There was already no trace left from their majesty when they first appeared from the dawn.

That must be cornering Gregor's mind even further. He was continuously yelling things like『This kind of reality, this kind of absurdity, how can this be allowed-』.

Toward such him, Hajime said.....

『You are weaker. That's all there is to it right?』

Gregor's clamor that was like a child throwing tantrum stopped still.

——Gregor Cluzet Qwailent was weaker.

Certainly, that was all there was to it.

The foundation of the king of pillage, was a conviction toward strength.

Whether it was violence or ingenuity, anything was fine. Anyone that could surpass their opponent would be able to make the other submit, trampled on them, or destroyed them. A person who could that was right, the words of the weak was nothing but nonsense.

The strong was right, the weak was wrong.

That was the thing that Gregor exactly believed in.

『.....Is that so. So I'm the weaker one even after becoming the supreme ruler huh. Hahah, that's really a harsh joke yeah.』

Gregor raised a dry laugh that sounded somewhat comprehending.

There was no more defensive ship nearby, flagship Durgrant was also raising white smoke everywhere while tilting. There was no energy replenishment and the ship was in a state where maintaining its floating power was the best it could do. The great number of weapons the ship was equipped with were laying out barrage using physical attack like bullet and missile, because of that it still wasn't sunk down yet but.....

『Yoo, tell me. Just what the hell you two are?』

That was likely Gregor's last question of his life.

Hajime showed a thinking gesture for a bit before he answered with a grin.

『Just a passing by monster.』

A black dragon finally slipped through the barrage even with wounds all over its body and arrived in front of the bridge's windbreak. It opened its jaw widely. Light of death converged inside there. The crews screamed and ran away.

Amidst that, Gregor threw his body on the commander seat and sat down heavily. He then rested his chin on one hand while, with a small voice,

「So I pull the utter failure at the very end huh. Good grief, what a joke.」

He whispered such thing.

The bridge of flagship Durgrant was destroyed. The sight of it falling down powerlessly was enough to dishearten the surviving ships.

The black dragons raised their howl toward they who couldn't even took satisfactory battle maneuver and got reduced into a disordered mob.

And then, the dragons threw their body into the last decisive battle.

It didn't take that much time until the whole of this world's greatest battle strength became a squall of wreckage showering down on the ground below.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It was late but I posted it somehow.

Next month I should have more leeway and can post more.....

Now then, it was raised up in the impression column, so I'll explain it for a bit.

For Shirakome,「竜」= the lizard like one.「龍」= the snake like one.

When in god dragon mode Tio is snake-like, so the description letter is also「龍」. But, there is no concept of「龍」in this world, so I wrote「竜」in the conversation of this world's human. I'm sorry that it's puzzling.

By the way, Tio become「龍」shape when in god dragon mode is

because— —preference. Hajime's.

PS

I also wrote it in the activity report, but the comic version's latest chapter is in the middle of display at Overlap-sama's homepage.

Finally it's Yue-sama you know! Only at the end though! Please go there to take a look by all means.

Also, I'll report this just in case.

This month, light novel volume 5 and comic volume 1 will be released.

The special content information is also displayed in Overlap-sama's homepage, so if it's fine please go take a look there.

My best regard.

Arifureta Chapter 241

Arifureta After II King's Understanding Middle Part

AN: Butler = The strongest warrior class. When I was writing this common sense, it became long again.....

The sight that unfolded ahead after passing through the solemn door was a calm blue sky.

「This place.....」

It was Roze who whispered that. Roze who returned on board the airship Rozeria passed through the sky door Hajime created along with airship Averia and mother ship Avenst. They had made their resolve for their battlefield that was waiting ahead.

Even so, when she thought back of the battlefield in between the sea of lighting flame and the whirling sea of clouds that should be called as a scene of myth, she fell into a doubt whether they were dreaming now that she saw this calm sky.

「Roze-sama-. Be, below, it's Qwailent! The distance is 1000!」

「Eh?」

The report from the person in charge of observation caused Roze to let out a dumbfounded voice. The sky that could be seen from the bridge was very transparent blue, the morning sun was rising slightly higher than the sea of clouds. Thinking what was this person saying in the middle of this peaceful sight, Roze turned her gaze toward the monitor that projected the image below the ship.....

「I don't really understand what are you saying.」

She unconsciously muttered such thing. While making twitching face & dripping with cold sweats that looked like waterfall.

Of course she would be like that. Because below where airships Rozeria and Averia, and mother ship Avenst were floating, was the land of their birthplace that they couldn't even approach until now——sky divine country Qwailent, no, dragon kingdom Avenst's floating land was right there.

『Your majesty! Look sharp! Avenst is also coming here remember!』

「-」

A scolding came from Bovid who was boarding his sky battlecraft in the dock while standing by.

Roze who got taken aback and recovered herself from that gritted her teeth hard. At the same time inside her heart「Hajime-sama you idioo~~~~t. I'm the one who asked for guidance but-, to suddenly toss us out right above the target like this-, idiottt! Stupid-. You bruteeee!」she was hurling abuse at Hajime grandly.

『Avenst, can you hear!? Evacuate right awa——』

Roze was about to command the commanding captain to evacuate mother ship Avenst that not only was unable to fire its main cannon, it couldn't even lay out barrier or perform battle maneuver. But, before she finished,

A loud alarm sound rang in the early morning sky. The alarm that could even make people indulging in laziness to jump awake in one go caused Roze's body to jump and trembled.

Inside her head, 'what to do, what to do, Hajime-sama you idiottt, what to do!' the same words and insult were repeating. Roze was about to fall into panic, but there, a scolding「Get a hold of yourself!」reached her from her partner.

Kuwaibel that was hugged tightly by Roze from an instinctive habit slapped his tail on Roze's cheek *pechi*-. When Roze dropped her gaze toward the partner that she was hugging, there Kuwaibel who if it had to be said had a pampered child trait was staring fixedly at her.

The unshakeable dragon eyes that were surprisingly deep were staring straight at Roze.

—Aa, that's right. If it's resolve, then I finished it already together with everyone.

Roze let out a long exhale 'fuu~~', then at the next moment she opened her eyes in a flash. And then, she firmly surveyed her comrades inside the bridge whose face was turning pale, and her comrades in Averia and Avenst through the monitors.

『Let's fight.』

Those words were calm, yet they possessed definite dignity and strength.

『In order to stand equal with our old friends who are fighting even now at that sky.』

Those were the words of the queen of the dragon kingdom.

『In order to save our imprisoned friends and brethrens.』

Those were the words of a person who even while her status fell into being air pirate and she lost her important comrades on countless occasions, by no meant she had abandoned the feeling of the halcyon days.

『In order to change the world.』

There weren't just combatants here. There were also civilians. Rather, the civilians were a lot more than the combatants. Normally this wasn't a place they should be taken to. But, surely the old and young, the men and women in mother ship Avenst wouldn't listen to that.

If Roze and others were lost, then they would have no future. Here was the turning point. A future where they would be welcoming a slow ruin while simply running away and getting toyed with, not a single descendant of the dragon kingdom wished that.

If not, then they wouldn't pass through that sky door.

That was why,

『Let's fight.』

There was one reply to that call of the queen. Only words of answer『By your will-』and resolute gazes.

A smile emerged on Roze's lips. That smile was the same fearless smile like that man who she thoroughly hurled abuse at until just now.

『We will take back everything! The battle of revolution is right here! Let's bet our body and soul! Sky battlecraft force, all planes take off-. Deal damage as much as you can to the defense fleet before they can move completely! Averia, concentrated fire at the defense fleet's flagship! Avenst, support fire using physical weapon from above!』

Orders came like a storm.

Like a butterfly that came out of its cocoon flying out all at once, sky battlecrafts were flying out from all ships. Their main force received severe damage from the previous attack and their number was decreased, but their number was a force that reached two hundred.

It was genuinely the greatest battle strength that the nation on ship Avenst possessed. There were also youngsters who hadn't finished their training among them, there were also old men who retired already. The planes used also didn't consist from just plane of good condition. There were also many planes with old armament.

But, the height of their fighting spirit was the real thing.

『All force, aim at the flagship of the defense fleet! Don't get left behind and fly into their bosom before they could lay out the defensive barrier! The barrier of the defense fleet is a tough one-. Consider yourself useless if you are outside the barrier once it's formed!』

The leader of first squad of air battle force and the overall commander Bovid gave his instruction. It was an extremely dangerous tactic where if the pilot was inexperienced they would die right away from crashing. But, the barrier of the defense fleet here was even more powerful than the defense fleet before this. The barrier would be deployed about fifty meter from the ship. It wasn't something that could be destroyed by sky battlecraft's armament at all, they wouldn't even be able to approach then.

But conversely speaking, if they could approach within that fifty meter before the barrier was deployed, their attack would go through.

It was that kind of reckless tactic, however, there wasn't a single plane that was faltering. Rather, they were approaching with a momentum that would make anyone thinking they would even launch kamikaze attack without stopping toward the twenty ships of the defense fleet that were finally starting to from their anchored state.

「Roze-sama. Our preparation is finished.」

A voice came from Sabas who was standing by behind Roze. Roze nodded briskly. She showed a resolved fearless smile toward Sabas who could read her feeling. Sabas too also nodded with a gentle smile that was hiding beastly ferocity inside.

Roze surveyed inside the bridge.

「Everyone, I'll leave Rozeria in your hand. Please endure somehow until Kuwaibel come back.」

「Piuh.」

The man who took charge of Rozeria in Roze's place——Carter Gilton nodded deeply accompanied with the strong nod of the other crews.

Behind Roze who turned on her heel, Sabas and the Crow siblings, and then ten of the most elite imperial guard members followed.

Their strategy was simple. The spring at the deepest part of the palace that could grant power to monarch dragon——【Spring of True Dragon's Tear】, they would take Kuwaibel there. And then with the strength of Kuwaibel who would temporarily awaken as a grown dragon they would crush the defense fleet.

If they could just destroy the fleet, then there wouldn't be any existence in the divine country that could defeat Kuwaibel that could wield the power as monarch dragon. This was a country that was built from the rule of fear and violence of the king named Gregor. They shouldn't be able to maintain their fighting spirit by the time the defense fleet fell.

The problem was how much time Avenst could buy with the defense fleet as

the opponent. There wasn't any guarantee that Avenst wouldn't be annihilated during the time they infiltrated the palace with few elites until Kuwaibel returned to the battlefield.

Explosive sounds roared outside. Bovid and others, the air battle force was starting a super close range battle that should even be called as the dance of death. How much damage they could inflict on the defense fleet with this surprise attack would become the key of this battle.

Because Bovid understood that, surely he would be reckless. Just like how Bovid made himself into shield to accept the enemy bullet in order to save Roze and others, there was no doubt he would put his life at stake here.

「Please, everyone.....be safe.」

Roze whispered that while equipping herself with firearms in Rozeria's bottom. Even though she was determined, even though she had resolve, but there was no way her heart wouldn't be pained thinking that the people she loved might die. Roze's lips that were strongly biting showed that pressure on her heart more eloquently than anything.

「Pii」

「Ku-chan.....」

Kuwaibel's strong eyes.

「Roze-sama.」

「Gramps.」

Sabas's unshakable smile.

「Your majesty.」

「Roze-sama.」

Crow siblings' fearless smile.

The accompanying imperial guards also smiled similarly.

Seeing that, surely everyone in Averia, and also everyone in Rozeria, and then also the people she loved in Avenst, they were undoubtedly making the same powerful and fearless smile. Roze was convinced of that.

There wasn't even a single complain toward Roze who decided to head to this hell.

The hatch below the ship opened. Rozeria was evading the surface-to-air attacks that were starting sporadically while flying toward the palace. The scenery below that was flowing through was the townscape of the birthplace that she was seeing for the first time.

'Aa', inside her heart Roze leaked out an admiring sigh. Roze who were taken away when she was a baby didn't have any memory of the dragon kingdom, the feeling of "coming home" overflowed inside.

And then, surely such feeling was much stronger for the senior people who knew about this country compared to herself who didn't know of her birthplace.

Those people riding the sky battlecraft, those people who were looking down from the airships and mother ship, what kind of feeling they were having?

Were they holding flood of emotions? Surely the scenery wasn't exactly the same compared with in the past, so were they enraged seeing their changed motherland? Perhaps they would die in the next moment while still holding such feeling. In this battlefield where the chance of survival was remarkably low, their feeling would rain down along with the flame blast.

But, surely, not even a single one would stop flying until their last moment without a doubt.

For what sake? That was decided already.

——Aa

Like that, Roze let out her deep feeling one more time.

With an automatic rifle in one hand, she touched the barrel on her forehead and she closed her eyes as though praying.

Right now, she understood. Just what a king was, what she was. What her existence ought to accomplish.

「Thinking of the future, in order to seize the day——I make my decision. I place my important things at the two sides of the scale.」

Gregor was a king of pillage that embodied the truth of power. Control to those who obey, death to those who defy. Surely that was also one way of living.

Even Roze might be similar.

She couldn't choose everything. She had to make her choice. With her body that wasn't a god, she couldn't grasp at the ideal. Even if as the result of her choice someone would be cast away, in order to not lose everything, Roze had to make her choice.

Just like how she made herself and the soldiers who had went through joys and sorrows together with her to leap into hell, for the sake of the future, and for the sake of the people who were living for the moment.

But, she didn't think that it was mistaken. The reason was because that would be an insult toward the soldiers who answered at her will.

That was why, she would change.

「I'll change. Become a warring queen. The queen of the soldiers.」

‘Someone else after me could become the kind king. In order to connect our future toward that someone, I'll become a warring king.’ The powerful words of Roze that contained such feeling made Sabas's expression turned a bit lonely, the Crow siblings shut their eyes, and the imperial guards displayed a tensed expression.

Roze turned toward them and,

「Let's go. To our battlefield.」

Saying that, she leaped down without hesitation.

Sabas and others nodded at each other and they similarly leaped down following the beloved person they decided as their master by themselves.

Roze and others who jumped outside to the air naturally obeyed the planet's truth and began freefalling. The roaring sound of wind entered their ears while they spread both their arms to balance themselves.

Their distance until the ground was gone instantly and the palace was below them.

「Ku-chan-. To that terrace-」

「Piuh」

When Roze spoke with a volume that didn't lose to the wind, Kuwaibel responded immediately. When Kuwaibel who was clad in silver light raised his cry, the same light immediately enveloped Roze and others too.

Lightly the body of Roze and others were liberated from the wedge of gravity. They rotated midair and took the landing stance. Kuwaibel adjusted their falling position and guided them toward the terrace nearby the highest floor of the palace.

But, at that time, dry bursting sounds resounded at the same time with the sharp sound that cut through wind. Fortunately the bullets didn't hit them, they rushed between the group toward the sky.

When they looked, there were several soldiers at the palace's garden. They were pointing at Roze and co while aiming their rifle.

「Leave this to me.」

Right after that, silver glints rained down on those soldiers. Those things that were launched cutting through the air pierced the face of the soldiers peremptorily, and then they went limp like a marionette with its strings severed.

When Roze turned her eyes at the perpetrator, he——Sabas was running his gaze vigilantly at the garden while between his fingers there were three——knife for eating held in between.

It seemed, this pseudo butler was dealing with multiple targets on the ground a hundred meter away using tableware.

But even while that was going on, soldiers who heard the gunshot showed up from the terrace and the garden ahead——but,

「Shi-」

Tableware was flying. Polished silver knives that were usually stored in the

kitchen of mother ship Avenst!

suta- Roze and co got down safely on the terrace. And then, with an unknown principle, *shakon-* Sabas stowed away the tableware knives into the cuff while making such small sound. Roze asked him as the representative of the imperial guards who were making an expression that was loss for words.

「Why, tableware?」

「Because I'm a butler.」

The history of Sabas who was the former captain of the imperial guard, who then became Roze's butler after picking out Crow siblings and turned his position to them was known by everyone there. They also knew his true strength. But, not one of them knew that he owned the inhuman skill that allowed him to snipe enemy on the ground from a hundred meter above using tableware.

They more or less knew that in his active duty period he specialized in quick draw using revolver that should be reduced to a relic of the old era, but they never imagined that after he retired he would acquire a new ability——an outrageous ability of quick snipe using knife for eating of all thing.

「What are you all doing getting absent-minded like that. Now, quickly mov——shi-」

Even while he was talking, the meal knife that manifested like a sleight of hand pierced the eyeball of a soldier that rushed out from the neighboring terrace.

Furthermore, Sabas unhesitatingly threw a meal knife at a completely wrong direction toward another soldier who drew back his face in panic. The meal knife rebounded from the ornament nearby the terrace's ceiling before it flew into the entrance while rotating fast——

「Gueh」

A single groan could be heard. Next *thud* the sound of something heavy collapsing also resounded.

「「「「「.....」」」」」

「What's wrong Roze-sama? Quickly go inside.」

「A, yes.」

Roze-chan who decided to become the queen of soldier. Seeing the superhuman skill of a true (?) soldier (butler), her heart very quickly cracked.

Roze and others stepped inside the room while taking grip of their mind.

「Gramps, you are the vanguard. We should be able to go straight to the underground from the hidden passage of the royalty right?」

「Yes. That's if the passage isn't blocked though. It's unthinkable that Gregor would seal his own escape route. I dare say there won't be any problem.」

Sabas slightly opened the room's door and he quickly took stock of the corridor. And then, he nodded once and moved at the front as the person who thoroughly knew the inside of the royal palace.

After him was six imperial guards following with ordered movement without the slightest bit of disorder, behind them was Roze with the Crow siblings at both her sides, their back were secured by four imperial guards.

「Muh」

Suddenly Sabas let out an aler voice. Right at the next moment, he suddenly accelerated!

The soldier that leaped out from the corridor's corner ahead was hit with a body blow that gave out *zudon*- impact voice as though he was hit with a large cannon. Without any voice or free time to writhe, the soldier collapsed with his eyeballs rolling and the white of his eyes got exposed——

Yet he wasn't allowed to fall, his collar was grasped and he was made to stand.

And then, several gunshots rang at that time. The soldier who got hoisted up by Sabas danced like a badly made marionette. At the same time, Sabas's palm heel struck at the abdomen of the soldier he turned as shield as though he was beating up the dead.

Even though he and the corpse was in posture where they were mostly glued to each other, the pitiful soldier A was sent flying like a cannon ball.

「Uoh」

「Wha, what-」

The soldiers behind who were firing lost their cool seeing their comrade's corpse suddenly flying horizontally at them and they dodged. Their firing stopped.

「Fuhn」

「Gahah」

The pseudo-cannon body blow once more burst at the soldier B. He was holding down his stomach while his body was leaning forward and he fell on his knees. His mouth vomited out froth mixed with blood and he convulsed in twitches.

「You bastard——」

「Hah」

「Goeh」

Soldier C aimed his rifle, but what was reflected in his sight was only the flapping end of the butler uniform. The elbow strike of Sabas who slipped into his bosom struck the center of his sternum, *bogyu* a wretched sound that had never been heard before rang.

Without even paying attention to soldier C who was limply collapsing behind, Sabas pulled out a handgun from the holster on the waist of soldier C who was falling.

.....Surely, soldier D and E who were behind soldier C were witnessing an unrealistic scene of an old man in butler uniform appearing from the shadow of their slowly falling comrade, pointing a gun at their way.

tan-, tan-.

Two gunshots. The headshot was also two.

thud- Soldier D and E collapsed.

「Ah, over there-」

「Shit-, Fritz and others got done in! That butler uniformed man there-」

More soldiers who heard the gunshots appeared from the corridor's corner bustlingly. The corridor was a straight line. There was around ten meter until the corner where the soldiers were appearing.

「Gramps-, come ba—」

Roze was about to yell「come back」. But, before she could, Sabas had moved. Forward.

With a low stance as though crawling on the ground, he sprinted like a fired bullet.

The flapping fringe of the butler uniform was beautiful.

Gun muzzles flashed grandly. Bullet storm was fired.

However, that didn't even graze the old butler.

「How the hell!?!」

One soldier reflexively acted the straight-man. The old butler who was moving with small sways to left and right without even slowing down for a bit and couldn't be touched even by rifle bullet was already in horror territory.

The truth was he only calculated the firing line from the direction of the muzzle and before he was shot he evaded to a place where bullets wouldn't hit, but seen from the side it was a really incomprehensible situation.

「Dammit all-」

Soldier F was unable to put up with it any longer and he jumped out from the corridor's corner, he held his rifle to shoot from the hip and unleashed it in full-auto.

So that it couldn't be dodged, he must be intending to scatter bullets from left to right uniformly.

「Laughable!」

Butler-san said something.

Right after that, the rifle bullets that were mowing down in fan shape were passing down right below Sabas in vain. Yes, Sabas kicked on the corridor's wall and with a triangle jump he took refuge midair.

At the same time, he was firing bullets at the soldiers hiding at the corner to stop them from moving while his fingers caught the ornamental part of the ceiling's light, and like a pendulum he increased his leaping range while accelerating further.

While showing a midair twist that would make even the famous move Shioi of a certain gymnastic athlete who twisted too much to go pale, Sabas's posture became upside down just right above soldier F. Like that, he threw the handgun that ran out of bullet to another soldier, grasped the chin of soldier F, and using the momentum of the twist the neck snapped. (TN: I don't know which athlete and move it referred to here)

Sabas performed a beautiful landing at the shadow of soldier F that was spinning and spinning as though in a dance while his body was collapsing down, when a bullet approached him.

kan-

Such light sound rang out.

「How is that possible!?!」

「How can that be possible!?!」

The straight-man act of soldier G and queen-sama overlapped. If it was said that it couldn't be helped then it couldn't be helped. After all, Sabas-san had just deflected a rifle bullet.

——Using a polished shiny silver tray that he took out from somewhere.

「A butler has to be able to deflect something like a bullet using a tray at the very least-」

「No, that's stran——gueh」

To be specific, the silver tray that Sabas took out was specially made to be tough enough to deflect bullet, furthermore rather than calling it deflecting he was putting angle on the tray when the bullet impacted so it was more correct to call it “averting” though.....

In any case, normally nine out of ten the tray would get sent flying and the target would still get hit, so it didn't change how uncommon what happened

was.

Anyway, soldier G who acted the straight-man had his throat crushed by the silver tray that flew at him like a Frisbee and he fell while raising a groaning voice that sounded like a frog's croak.

The other soldiers returned to their senses and they re-aimed their rifle. Soldier H's rifle muzzle locked-on at the forehead of Sabas who had approached until right in front of him.

But, when he was on the verge of pulling the trigger,

「He, he vani——」

「Too slow.」

Unable to follow the figure of Sabas that sank down deeply, it looked like he vanished and the soldier was shaken. And then, without even any time to shudder from hearing the voice from below, the butler kick that sprang up pulverized the jaw & snapped the neck and soldier H ascended.

「You-, monster-」

「Die, old maann-」

「You bastarddd, I'll kill——」

Soldier I, J, K surrounded Sabas. Three rifle muzzles were aimed from three directions at him in a really close range. Instantly the three of them each raised a short scream. It happened at the same time when Sabas made a rotation from riding the centrifugal force of the kick that drew an artistic circular orbit.

Looking closer, there was a sewing needle in soldier I's eye, a knife stabbed on J's arm, and blood spurting out from soldier K's wrist.

The three who were flinching back from the pain exposed a fatal opening. Naturally, there was no way the old butler who was letting out sharp eye glint that could even be mistaken as dragon eyes would overlook that opening.

「Shi-」

Butler-sama performed a beautiful break dance in a world with up and down reversed.

Let's say it, one more time. The flapping butler uniform was beautiful.

Sabas's long legs were swung circularly. A sharp knife sprang out from the tip of the glossy butler shoes. It caressed the throat of the soldiers as though they were sucked into its orbit.

pisha- Matching Sabas's legs orbit, a line of blood was drawn on the wall.

Sabas was on one knee when he recovered from the extremely dangerous break dance. He stood up and dusted off his hem before taking out a folding umbrella from out of nowhere as expected.

At the same time when he opened it with a smooth motion, *pusha*—— rain of blood showered down. Of course, it didn't touch Sabas who was under an umbrella.

Thud The soldiers whose carotid artery was tore open crumbled down.

「Fumu. I tried to create it to kill time, but unexpectedly it was a bit useful.」

Sabas-san muttered such thing while he twisted the folding umbrella. Its frame came off and only its center pole remained, at the same time *shakin*- a sharp double-edged blade sprang out from its tip.

And then, he readied it, and like an athlete of javelin throw, he threw it deeper inside the corridor.

「U, UOOOOOOH」

In a superb timing, the last soldier who seemed to be in hiding leaped out. And then, in the right timing his throat received the umbrella attack and he blankly collapsed backward.

「Now, Roze-sama. For the time being I have removed the danger ahead. It will be unfavorable if they approach in force. Let's hurry on ahead.」

「Ah, yes.」

Heaps of corpses all around. The faces of Roze, the Crow siblings, and the imperial guards were twitching at such disastrous scene of the corridor while rushing toward Sabas's position.

「He, hey, gramps. Just now, when you were surrounded by the soldiers, what

did you do?」

Roze must be referring to the time when soldier I, J, K suddenly received damage. She knew that Sabas had done something, but it was too fast that she didn't know what he actually did.

It seemed that it wasn't just Roze who had that question, the Crow siblings and the imperial guards were also the same, rather it was them who looked more curious, so Roze unconsciously questioned while understanding that this wasn't the time.

Sabas who was rushing through the corridor with sure footsteps even while putting his guard up sent a sharp gaze at the Crow siblings and the imperial guards「Even all of you couldn't see it?」. Seeing them twitched, Sabas shook his head as though lamenting their inadequacy very much while answering.

「It's nothing significant. I was shooting the sewing needle inside my mouth while hurling knife from the launcher inside my sleeve, at the same time I swung a bit sturdy thread that can also be used for sewing to cut the wrist. That's all.」

「Is, is that so? But, gramps. Why sewing tool?」

「Because I'm a butler.」

Hearing the words of their teacher Sabas, his personal pupils the Crow siblings thought,「This person, he become stronger since retiring and becoming a butler」. Sabas sent an even sharper gaze at such Crow siblings.

「Of course, even Olga and Jean can also do just this much.Isn't that right, you two?」

「Ye, Yes-Sir——」

「I, it will be easy victoryy-」

Of course, they couldn't. The two could also crush enemy of the same number in the same situation like just now if they used gun. But, something like facing multiple fully armed soldiers in only close-quarter combat almost without using gun and taking care of all of them in less than a minute was.....

The imperial guards were sending sympathizing gaze at their captain and vice

captain.

By any chance, the vocation butler was endowed with strongest as the default might be the same in any world.

「Perhaps, it will be fine with just gramps alone.....」

Roze unconsciously muttered in small volume. The imperial guards got faraway look hearing that.

Roze and others who were traveling for some time while the engagement against the enemy was dealt with Sabas who was fighting like a fierce god, they finally reached a private room of the royalty that was in the center of the palace.

「Roze-sama. This room, is the private room of Roze-sama's mother——Averia-sama. Averia-sama was cuddling Roze-sama who was just born in this room.」

「This room, is Okaa-sama's.....」

Inside the room was simple. There was almost no furniture or implements, in exchange there was a lot miscellaneous luggage put in there. It seemed it was used not as someone's private room, but as a storage room.

Even so, Roze could somehow imagine it. Her mother that she had only even seen in photo was here, yes, surely she was near that window there, comforting her baby self inside her embrace.

「Roze-sama. Soldiers are coming.」

One imperial guard who stood watch at the corridor called with a small voice.

Roze put a lid on her overflowing feeling and she looked at Sabas. Sabas nodded and he stepped strongly on a spot at the floor. And then, he moved to left and right as though to confirm his step while stepping with the same strength at another five places.

The result, a part of the wall made a small mechanical sound *kiin*, and a lid the size of a palm slid. There, they saw a letter board of this world.

「——Roze-sama, it's "the one who walk together proudly(Roze Phi Erute)".」

「.....Yes.」

That was the password to open the hidden passage. The nuance of those words resembled her first and second name. Holding the feeling that was inserted into her name inside her heart, Roze typed in the letters.

Mechanical operation sound was coming from inside the wall.

Instantly,

「Roze-sama-」

「-」

What resounded was Sabas's voice, and consecutive gunshots.

「Kuh-. A trap-」

Olga bit her lips while firing bullets at the automatic interception mechanical gun that looked like a sentry gun which sprang out from behind an implement.

「Gramps-!？」

「-, I let my guard down. So they put a trap that operated together with the authentication device.....」

Perhaps Gregor had assumed that the driven out royalty would come back here. The people who knew about the procedure to open the hidden passage in this room even before the kingdom got usurped were only the royalty and Sabas who was the imperial guard captain.

And then, the royalty, Roze's family would never leak out that information to the enemy, therefore, Sabas thought that the enemy couldn't open the hidden passage here but.....

If there were a few decades since that day of tragedy, then certainly it was possible to at least installed a trick at the authentication device. Perhaps this was revenge for being able to reach until the authentication device, yet they weren't able to advance further ahead than that.

Sabas spat out「I'm growing dull」at himself who didn't notice that this place was noticed already and he stood up. The instant he did that, bloods were

dripping down. The flank of the butler uniform could be seen changing color despite the black color that made it not standing out.

「Gramps-, your wound!? Me, medical treatment quickly-」

Roze reached out her hand at Sabas's flank, but that hand was stopped by Sabas himself. At the same time, gunshots rang out from the corridor. Their position became known from the gunshot just now and the soldiers were rushing here.

The imperial guards guarding the entrance raised an angry voice「Their number is more than twenty! We won't hold out for long! Hurry-」while returning fire.

Sabas nodded and he turned a sharp gaze at Crow siblings.

「Olga, Jean. Fulfill the duty of the imperial guard. Roze-sama and Kuwaibel-sama, take them to the Spring of True Dragon's Tear even at the cost of your life.」

「.....Yes-. Without fail.」

「Yes, teacher-」

Seeing Sabas gave such order while emitting a dominating aura that was really unthinkable to come from an injured person, his personal pupils the Crow siblings held their breath. They felt Sabas's resolve.

「Gramps, what are you saying——」

「Please go, Roze-sama. Gramps, will hold back the enemy here.」

「Why!? We only need to all enter the passage and then close the door!」

Sabas shook his head. And then, he fired toward the painting that decorated the room.

「I was careless. That's a hidden camera. Most likely they know the password already. Through there is a small passage that continue until underground. We will be helpless if we are attacked from above. This is my failure. It's my wish to be given the chance to redeem myself.」

「Such thing-. It's fine already, everyone quickly enter the passage!」

Roze grasped Sabas's arm and she walked toward the passage. Right after that,「-, grenade! Get down-」A warning resounded. Sabas covered for Roze, at the same time a flame blast enveloped the area near the door, the four imperial guards who were returning fire were blown away.

It seemed he avoided fainting with his trained body, but seeing the blood flowing from everywhere and also the bloody cough, there was no doubt that the internal organs were harmed. It was obviously a heavy injury.

Countless footsteps resounded. The rushing soldiers showed up their face from the door.

suton-

Like that, knife pierced their eyeball or throat. Furthermore, the thrown black object——a hand grenade rolled into the corridor and exploded.

After the explosive sound that resounded once more, groaning voices leaked out from the corridor.

「Olga, Jean-. Take Roze-sama away from here!」

Sabas's voice resounded.

Sabas rushed toward the corridor and he stole the rifles of two soldiers who were killed by knife. He spread both his hands and fired to the left and right of the corridor. Anguished voices「Gyah」「Gaah」rose once more.

「Gramps, come back! This is an ord——」

「Haven't you resolved yourself-」

Roze who was about to order him to come back was pierced by Sabas's angry voice that she had never heard until now. Roze turned speechless against Sabas who was hiding with the door's cover while continuously pulling his rifles' trigger at the corridor. For Roze, Sabas was a good natured old man. He had never raised his voice like this at her.

「Gra, gramps.....」

「You decided to fight aren't you! You swore to weigh your important things aren't you! For the sake of the future, you will seize the day, you determined to do that aren't you!」

Then,

「Show that you are going to choose! Or else, are you going to abandon the future for the sake of this old bone!?!」

That's right. The path that she determined was this kind of path. A king, had to make a choice.

She had made her resolve. Even so, for Roze who didn't know her parents, Sabas was, her real.....

「.....-. Olga-, Jean-. Choose the members who will stop the enemy along with Sabas! The rest is with me!」

「Ye, yes-」

「By your will-」

Roze who roughly rubbed her eyes that were almost spilling over adroitly turned her body toward the hidden passage.

The four imperial guards who were blown away were injured all over their body, yet they took up rifle by themselves and stood up to return fire along with Sabas. And then, Roze looked back across her soldier toward Sabas.

Sabas also turned her gaze at Roze while reloading.

「Sabas, defend this place, to the last.」

「Fuh. By your will. Roze-sama.」

She thought of him as her real grandfather. Or perhaps, even as a father. The unexpressed feeling was put into the order that was said brokenly.

That feeling, it certainly reached Sabas who had been at her side all this time since she was born.

Roze vanished deep inside the hidden passage. Olga and Jean, and other imperial guards, they nodded deeply at Sabas and their comrades before following behind. The door closed.

Sabas shot out the letter board after they passed through. With the technology of the divine country, even with the letter board destroyed there was still a high possibility of opening the path with the password known, but it

could buy more time.

「Advance forward, my beloved child. I also thought of you like my real granddaughter.」

The remaining imperial guards showed a wry smile hearing Sabas's monologue, thinking that he should just say it directly. Sabas who noticed them cleared his throat looking a bit embarrassed.

「What's with those eyes, you guys. From here onward will be hell. Put your back into it.」

「Kukuh, you're right. We will accompany you until the end you know, Sabas-sama.」

「The demonic imperial guard captain is revived huh.」

「It has been an honor.」

「Let's show them the reserve strength of us, Avenst's imperial guard.」

While fully wounded all over the body, the imperial guards replied fearlessly. Sabas smiled「fuh」and nodded.

Something like a rocket warhead like before peeked out from ahead at the corridor. Sabas's rifle muzzle pierced the warhead with pinpoint accuracy and it exploded. The imperial guards sent in storm of bullets toward the corridor that was enveloped in flame.

「You guys, hold down the left corridor. I'll return in three minutes.」

Saying that, Sabas leaped out to the corridor. Bullets were flying from the right corridor, but they were avoided by kicking on the wall and ceiling using unrestricted movement and he pounced at the corner where the enemies were hiding.

The soldiers didn't think that someone would break through amidst those rifle bullets even in their wildest imagination and they were taken aback,

「Now then, I received the command from her majesty the queen to defend to the last—to “defend by slaughtering all the enemy”. Can I have every single one of you depart to the next world?」

shakin- Three meal knives each sprang out from both sleeves. Each knife was held between fingers, as though they were shining silver claws.

「Fi, Fireee-」

An angry yell resounded from a person who seemed to be the captain.

The next moment, there were also agonizing cries that resounded.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday, tentatively, regards.

Arifureta Chapter 242

Arifureta After II King's Understanding Last Part

AN: The story doesn't advance.....

Recently I say this every time but, sorry it's late okay.

Their steps were relying only on the emergency light shining faintly to descend the spiraling staircase that looked like it would continue until the bottom of earth.

Other than the short exhalation and footsteps, there were only the faint vibrating sound and explosion sound that could be heard. The place was quiet. The atmosphere was heavy with no one speaking any word, further fostering that silence.

「Pii」

「I'm fine, Ku-chan.」

Kuwaibel who was flying beside Roze turned a slightly worried gaze toward her. When Roze answered inside the broken silence, Olga and Jean, followed by the imperial guards were also sending her expression of consideration.

「Right now, let's concentrate in accomplishing our objective.」

Surely no matter what Roze said, the expression of the Crow siblings and the imperial guards wouldn't clear. That was just how terrible the expression of Roze who was giving the order to defend to the death at her parent replacement. Because Roze was aware of how her face looked, her words toward them naturally became like that.

「It will be fine Roze-sama. This is Sabas-sama——teacher who we are talking about. After all even among the imperial guards there is argument whether it's

really fine to classify that person as human.」

「Roze-sama, it's just as Nee-san said. It might be even the case that he is only able to perceive the command of defending to the death to mean『defend by slaughtering all the enemy』. Even just worrying about teacher is only a waste of time.」

Olga and Jean's consoling words were followed by the imperial guards too. Their mouth were saying「That isn't human, but something else」, or「Actually he is a weapon of massacre that was created by the ancient civilization」, or「Rather, he won't get hit even when in the middle of crossing fire using machine gun」「I mean, if it's slow bullet like rocket or missile, he can normally catch it and then throw it back, seriously」, or「Every time he gave us hellish training while yelling 'what are you doing unable to do something this easy!', but we are just normal human here」, or「I want to hit the me ten years ago who thought that I absolutely will get payback when he turned senile」and so on.....

Midway the complaints of the imperial guards were overflowing. The complaints were already coming out like flood. The eyes of all of them were gradually losing vitality even though they were in the middle of mission. The imperial guards were getting killed by their memory with gramps!

「Kufuh, fufufuh. The, then, surely, he will be fine.」

A small giggle resounded. The imperial guards were taken aback and returned to reality. There they saw the figure of Roze with trembling shoulders. It seemed that her heart was cleared slightly from the lovely reminiscence of the imperial guards.

While they were doing that, Roze and others came to the bottom of the spiral stair. There was a slightly spacious landing there with double-leaf door that opened by sliding. There was a console emitting bluish white light. Seeing the display, it seemed it would perform confirmation by putting a hand palm on it. Most likely it would analyze the royalty's bloodline.

Olga held back Roze who was standing in front of the console while she manipulated something like a tablet in her hand.

「Roze-sama. In the interior map that I received from Sabas-sama, the other side of this door is the floor that was a level above the lowest floor. If we go

straight through the right and corridor, there will be a stair to the lowest floor.」

Roze nodded briskly and then she continued while turning her gaze to Kuwaibel.

「If I remember correctly, the lowest floor is partly like a labyrinth isn't it?」

At the lowest floor, so that even in the case of intruder the deepest part couldn't be reached easily, there were several traps installed through the way from the surface. Even the level where Roze and others were currently at were originally set up with traps that might make anyone without qualification to lose their life and also several locks that had to be unlocked.

If they had reached this far, then what was left was only to break through the labyrinth of the underground's lowest floor that was created for the sake of buying time against intruder, at this point, there wouldn't be any problem if there was a monarch dragon. Perhaps it was related with the【Spring of True Dragon's Tear】, because it was only a monarch dragon that could advance without getting lost.

Kuwaibel was confidently crying「Piuh」, perhaps because he had already grasped some kind of intuition.

「Yes. Just a bit more.But even though I said that, it has been a few decades since the palace was snatched away. There is enough possibility that the underground's state isn't the same with the past. No matter what, don't get separated from us.」

「We will leave it to the two of you. However, we have to hurry as much as possible. Because right now, even while we are doing this, everyone in the sky is in the brink of death.」

When Roze said that, Crow siblings and also the imperial guards nodded strongly. And then, they faced the door with their rifle at ready. Olga and Jean took position at both sides of the door. And then, when Olga nodded quietly, Roze determinedly put her hand on the console.

pi- A small confirmation sound rang for a beat. After that came a small activation sound and the door slowly opened along with it.

Outside the door they found a passage that continued straight and a passage

that that stretched to the left and right. There wasn't any sign of people.

「Let's go.」

The Crow siblings and the imperial guards nodded at Roze's words. They stepped out to the right passage with a smooth column movement.

After a while, they came to see a stair in front of them. Roze and others carefully and yet speedily rushed to the lowest floor.

They went down the long stair and jumped down on the last stair step——at that time,

kiin

Flash and sound exploded along with such small sound.

「-!？」

「Roze-sama!」

「Kuwaibel-sama!」

Olga immediately leaped at Roze and like that they retreated to the stair's wall as though falling on it, Jean called at Kuwaibel while returning back to the stair. The surrounding was overran by terrific light and high-pitched sound that paralyzed the eardrum.

(Kuh, sight and hearing got done in! Is it a trap, or else-)

Olga cursed inside her heart and uneasy expression emerged on her face from being unable to grasp the situation around her at all. Really sadly, Olga's fear was proved to be right.

A beat later, Olga's senses that got two of the five senses crushed by the light and sound that surpassed the permissible range recovered rapidly. What entered her sight that was painted white was a silver light enveloping her body and Roze who she was covering. It seemed, that her senses that were temporarily paralyzed by something like a flashbang got recovered by Kuwaibel.

But, naturally they didn't have any leeway to feel relieved. It was clear that the situation was urgent from the pained familiar voice of her family that reached her ear.

「Jean-」

「-, Nee-san, an ambush-. This place is bad-」

Jean was kneeling in front of Roze and Olga while showing his back. Blood was flowing from his shoulder that was desperately supporting the collapsible small shield which looked like it was going to be blown away by impact.

Originally this small shield was something to be carried into a close-quarter combat in order to endure a few bullets. If it was unfolded to the maximum then it would have the size that could cover the whole upper body, but its impact mitigation's efficiency and endurance wouldn't be that high.

Even so, the shield could defend against the fired bullets this long was because Kuwaibel responded to Jean's call and he enveloped that small shield with silver light. And then it was also because of Jean's vigor that wouldn't let the existence behind him to get even a single scratch no matter the cost.

「Pike-, what about Serio!?!」

「-, it's no good.」

「Shit-」

The imperial guard called Pike answered at Jean's call while enduring bullets using similar small shield. There was a blood soaked figure of an imperial guard beside him lying on the floor. From Pike's expression, it was obvious that the body wasn't breathing anymore. Jean reflexively cursed.

Olga and the imperial guards covered behind Pike read the lines of shots and they returned fire. Right after that, multiple short voices of death agony rose from deeper into the passage.

The shooting stopped for a moment. Using that opening, the imperial guards gathered around Roze and then constructed a barrier using their small shield.

Olga fired even more bullets. However, this time she didn't fix her aim, she adjusted her bullets so they ricocheted into the visible passage and the passage at the blind spot. At the same time, she closed her eyes while focusing her ear.

「.....Five people at the front passage. And then three people each at the left and right passage. Kuwaibel-sama, which is the right path?」

「Pii. Pipih」

She calculated the enemy number relying on the echoing sound of the bullet and the enemy presence that reacted to the bullet. The number of the ambush soldiers was confirmed by Olga's signature skill. The questioned Kuwaibel cried looking a bit stumped before his tail pointed at the front passage.

「Olga?」

Olga answered Roze's call along with a strong gaze.

「Roze-sama, there is no time. We are forcing our way through.」

「-」

Shaking off the gaze of Roze who was holding her breath, Olga ordered her important little brother as the captain of the imperial guard.

「Jean. Cut open the path.」

「Roger Nee-san, no, captain. Pike, Weber, suppress the enemy at the left and right. Raymond and Olson, you two charge forward with me. We are routing them!」

There was no hesitation. Jean and the imperial guards responded immediately. And then, when they were about to step forward,

「Fortunes of war with you-」

The corner of everyone's lips rose at that encouragement from the queen that they respected.

Jean and others rushed out all at once. Pike and Weber fired in full-auto into the left and right corridor without even fearing getting shot or running out of bullet. Although they were only raining bullets in order to hold back the enemy, but their skill was certainly in the level that was worthy to be called the most elite of Avenst.

They splendidly shut out the shooting from the left and right temporarily.

Not letting go of that moment, Raymond and Olson held their small shield to the front while sprinting. Behind him was Jean, and further behind him was Olga and Roze following.

Bullets were flying from the front like a rainy storm. The small shields that were clad in silver were already cracked and in the verge of getting pulverized.

「Guh」

Raymond raised a pained voice. A bullet grazed his leg. Although he had lowered his body as much as possible to enlarge the coverable range, it was impossible to defend everything using the small shield's range.

But, Raymond didn't stop. He put strength into the leg that although it wasn't hit directly yet it was still spurting out blood, and took a step forward.

Right after that, his small shield broke.

「Gah, guh, oaAAAAAAAH」

A shout surged. While his body was getting hit with bullets, Raymond—didn't stop even then. He covered his head with his arms while further stepping forward in the lead using his own body as shield replacement. It could be seen that for a moment, the enemies flinched at that intense drive and demonic visage.

The distance shrank even further.

The restarted shooting finally robbed the last strength from Raymond's body.

「Go-」

「Ou-」

Olson who replaced Raymond to stand in the lead exchanged gaze with his war buddy for an instant. And then, he took over the baton along with loud yell of fighting spirit and broke further through the bullets barrage!

At the front passage, the figure of the enemies peeking out their face from the turn midway could be seen. Astonished expression from seeing something that was hard to understand was pasted on their face.

「Don't look down-, on Avenst's-, imperial guard's-, on my resolve-」

Olson's shield broke. His body shook from impact, but the momentum of Olson that was advancing as though he was burning his life to ash wasn't stopping. While getting drilled by bullets, he threw away the remain of his small

shield and rapid fired his handgun. One shot splendidly bored into an enemy's forehead.

And then, he reached it.

「I'll-, leave the rest-. Vice captain!」

「Yeah. You did well-」

Rushing passed the falling Olson, the favorite pupil of the inhuman butler leaped out.

The bullets of the enemies lying in wait broke the lower half of Jean's small shield and pierced his stomach. But, as though such thing was just a fly's bite, Jean shot without even a moment of pause. His aim was terrifyingly accurate, the fired bullet destroyed the enemy's head and threw out his brain matter.

The other enemies were going to pull their trigger even now. Normally this would be the time to launch evade & counter attack. But, there was no way he could do that now. He couldn't let even a single bullet of the enemies lurking in this corner to pass behind him.

He bet his pride as the vice captain of the imperial guard. He bet the resolve of her majesty the queen. He bet the trust of his important sister-.

「OoOOOOOOOOH」

「Wha, what the hell, with these guys-」

He tackled toward the three enemies huddling together while his body was receiving bullets. It was a shield bash using the half-broken small shield that was carried on by betting the everything of the imperial guard's vice captain of dragon kingdom Avenst.

It possessed enough might to altogether cut a swath through the three enemies who turned timid from that bloody drive.

In the middle of collapsing on the floor as though tripping over, Jean yelled.

「Take care of Roze-sama! Nee-san-」

「Yes-. Leave it to me!」

Olga and Roze, and then Kuwaibel were rushing through from behind. For a

moment, Jean and Roze's gaze tangled.

The thing dwelling inside Roze's eyes. There wasn't any feeling of pity or apology for having others become sacrifice. What was there was merely the color of praise and gratitude.

Beyond doubt, that was a reward for those who accomplished the duty given to them by betting their life.

(That's truly what is worthy, for a warring queen.You have become strong.)

Jean's lips unconsciously loosened at that color of heart showed by the queen that he respected.

That was a sight that was like a nightmare for the enemy side that was rallying over their posture. After all there was a man there who kept smiling even while getting blood soaked from receiving many bullets. It was only natural for them to feel so.

Toward them who couldn't help but trickling cold sweats despite being the side in advantage, Jean stood up while saying.

「You guys, feel free to learn the dreadfulness of the person who you turned into enemy. ——Avenst's imperial guard, is a bit stubborn you know?」

A beat later, yells and gunshots echoed from the passage Roze and Olga left behind.

Roze and Olga listened to the gunshots behind them while rushing through the passage following Kuwaibel's guidance.

There wasn't any word, the two of them were merely staring straight ahead.

A few minutes later after rushing through several turns.

「Roze-sama.」

「Yes, it seems we arrived.」

There was a large hall ahead of their gaze. Deeper inside the room there was a large double-leaf door around three meter tall, splendid stone statues of

dragon were standing at the left and right. When they tried approaching the door, on the wall there was a largish depression modeled like a hand. Roze wondered if it was a kind of authentication device, but there wasn't anything like machine anywhere. It really looked like nothing more but a depression that was dug out on the wall.

「It cannot be passed by only a monarch dragon. It's meaningless with just a royalty. With a pair as partner together, for the first time the【Spring of True Dragon's Tear】will have meaning——I wonder, will the ancient selection recognize me as a king?」

She was a survivor of an usurped country. Sure enough, would she be recognized at a queen of the dragon kingdom.....this wasn't any machine, but a door and spring of unknown principle that was said to be created by a true dragon and dragon knight from far in the past.

While feeling a slight anxiety, Roze put her hand on the wall's depression.

Right after that, a silver light ran through the door. It was as though water was flowing into a ditch, silver light traced the door surface and made a large dragon kingdom's crest to surface.

And then, the door——didn't open.

No, more accurately there was a path opened. The double-leaf door didn't open, in exchange something like a shining mirror, or perhaps a membrane was created.

「This is, the door toward the spring?」

Roze muttered to herself. Kuwaibel too, this was his first time seeing it, but he nodded「Pii」as though he understood that inside there was the place that was their objective..

Olga tried to touch the shining membrane. Her finger sunk smoothly. There wasn't any particular sensation. As expected, it seemed they could go inside.

「Roze-sama, let's hurry. Quickly, to save everyo——」

tan-

A sound of light plosive sound rang.「Eh?」It was unclear whether that voice

leaked out from Olga, or perhaps Roze.

At the very least, the one who vomited out blood was Olga.

「Olga-」

Roze yelled at the same time with Olga jumping at Roze and carried her to retreat in the cover of a dragon statue. Instantly, bullet storm rained down on Roze and co. The dragon statue was solid so although its surface got shaved but it was satisfactorily accomplished a role as defensive wall.

「Olga-, please get a hold of yourself!」

「Gohoh, kafuh」

She must be trying to reply back, but perhaps her trachea was filled with blood, because she only coughed out blood without words. In exchange, she leaned on the dragon statue while pulling out her gun and returned fire toward the soldiers who were firing from the passage before the hall.

There were quite a lot of soldiers. A lot more than the number that Jean and the others were holding back. It was obvious that enemy reinforcement was following behind them using some kind of method.

Olga conveyed using her gaze to Roze so she would advance along with Kuwaibel. The shadow of death was looming on that face. Even from the bleeding amount it was undoubtedly a lethal wound. She must be planning to buy time in this nearly certain death.

Roze looked at that gaze, at the soldiers who looked like they would rush to here anytime now, and then at Kuwaibel who was crying out worriedly.

「Ku-chan-. No, Kuwaibel! Go ahead! I and Olga will hold them back here!」

「Pi!?!」

Taking a rifle in hand, Roze leaned out half her body from the dragon statue's cover and returned fire. The moment her face peeked out, in a stroke of bad luck a bullet grazed her cheek. Fresh blood dyed red that smooth face. However, Roze didn't showed any sign of faltering, she continued to pull the trigger in order to buy time for Olga to reload.

「Even if we aren't beside each other, but our hearts are connected. Just like

how human and dragon were once like that by the heaven and earth. Now, Kuwaibel. From here on, go by yourself!」

「.....Piuh」

Kuwaibel softly crawled his tail on Roze's cheek. And then, the moment Roze yelled「Now-」, he flew out from the dragon statue and flew into the light membrane by himself.

The light membrane didn't vanish. Roze whispered「As I thought」with a glance at that. Thinking of the possibility that the spring would stay opened until the monarch dragon was given power, there was no way they could enter together. The light membrane let Olga's finger passed when it was opened.

In other words, the enemy soldiers could also enter into the spring.

If the soldiers rushed into the hall, they would become target for Olga and Roze. This place was optimum for holding back the enemy.

That was why,

「Please show me your figure that become splendid okay, partner.」

Seeing Roze saying that while making a faint smile, Olga who was still continuing to fire with fortitude will even while leaking out wheezing breath also made a small smile.

Their ammo wasn't that many. Thinking of the amount of shooting necessary to maintain the equilibrium, perhaps they could only continue for five minutes. But even before that Olga wouldn't last. If Olga's precise shooting was gone, it would be even quicker for the equilibrium to crumble.

But, even so, Roze and Olga's smile didn't vanish.

「Uguh」

Roze's shoulder was drilled by a bullet. Blood spurted out, painting the girl even more ghastly.

However, her smile didn't vanish.

A lot of sacrifices were created, but they flawlessly let them reached this point.

The last monarch dragon magnificently laid hands on the trump card.

「This is, our victory!」

Roze's words assaulted the soldiers like a bullet.

During the time Roze and others were in a deathly battle deep under the palace, at the surface a similar, no, even fiercer battle was in progress.

『Sanchez squad was done in-. Somone-, can anyone reinforce!?!』

『This is Cranks 1(Bovid). Los squad-. We will manage somehow here! Head there for reinforcement!』

『This is Odet 2-. There is only me left! Sink or swim, I'll launch kamikaze attack at the bridge!』

『Cranks 1-, this is Shunt 1! Simon squad is annihilated-. We cannot protect Averia with just us!』

『Siegel 1 here! This is bad-. Rozeria is receiving concentrated fire-. Stan squad and Ester squad follow——』

『Shit-, Siegel 1 fell! Siegel 2 will take over the command! Protect Rozeria!』

Communications of mixed angry yell and scream flitted about in the airspace. The number of the dragon kingdom's sky battlecrafts had been reduced until two third since Roze and others infiltrated the place until now.

To be able to sink seven ships of the defense fleet right after the start of battle could be said as amazing military gains even though it came from an impossible surprise attack. Even after that, further four more ships were felled from the main cannon of airship Rozeria and Averia, the enemy's battle strength was cut in half.

Perhaps, they would be able to even annihilate the enemy at this rate.....

There were also people who were thinking such thing, but as expected from the last fortress of the divine country, they weren't that generous. When the defense fleet finally formed their barrier, the attack from Avenst side couldn't pass through to a despairing degree.

Even when airship Rozeria and Averia fired their main cannon from the maximum short distance, it only pierced the barrier slightly and damaged a part of the ship's frame, far from sinking the enemy. The story would be different if they could hit the bridge, but there was no way the defense fleet that was fully operating would give them such opening.

Even the sky battlecrafts that penetrated inside the barrier had their hands full against the enemy sky battlecrafts that could freely enter inside the barrier, they didn't have any leeway to attack the bridge at all, if they recklessly aimed there then that would be a good chance for the ship's weapon or the sky battlecrafts to shoot them down.

And then, the more time passed, the more the enemy put in order their counter attack readiness and they cornered the airship Rozeria and Averia instead.

Furthermore,

『This is, Cline! Damage at Avenst's power mechanism! We won't be able to endure more attack than this!』

Mother ship Avenst that was attacking with manual armaments operated by civilians of all age and gender from above had smokes erupting from its rear hull while starting to tilt in a big way.

The one who was calling for reinforcement with uneasy voice was the captain of mother ship Avenst, Cline Sanders. He who was also the supreme commander was already at the limit and gave an order.

『All sky battlecraft squads focus on protecting Avenst! Rozeria cover for the sky battlecraft squads! Averia, hold position at Avenst's left wing!』

In the first place their role was to buy time. If their attacks couldn't go through properly, then what was left was to focus on defense resolutely and bought time. Mother ship Avenst falling was something that had to be avoided no matter what.

Rozeria and Averia rushed through the airspace in reckless orbit with the resolve to get shot. Both airships were already damaged all over too, but it seemed they still barely possess fighting capability.

Bovid and others distanced themselves from the defense fleet. Barrages were sent like a tsunami from the defense fleet to not let them get away.

The veterans like Bovid and others evaded that with maneuver as though they were possessed while returning to the mother ship Avenst, but the pilots who still hadn't left the immature stage were shot down one after another.

『All squads, report! How many of you are left!?!』

The supreme commander of sky battlecraft squads Bovid was shooting down a pursuing enemy sky battlecraft with abnormal maneuver of midair spin while he raised his angry voice.

The returned report was a callous information that further three platoons were annihilated.

Bovid reflexively wanted to curse, but a death god approached from right beside him. A missile was fired from an enemy sky battlecraft that had circled around unnoticed.

The timing was impossible to evade, even so Bovid was going to make a vain struggle and he put strength into his hand that was holding the stick——

「GURYAAAA-」

Right after that, a black flash blew up the missile.

「Ha, hahah. That's a narrow escape from death. Thanks, black dragon-chan.」

「Guruu」

The black dragon that made a small purr as though to say「Don't mind it」 while flying in parallel then swiveled in order to support the other sky battlecrafts. Bovid cracked jokes「That frail kid has grown big huh」, but his expression was grim.

Several black dragons were playing very active roles in many fields. Avenst that was unable to maneuver satisfactorily was still not falling was solely because of their efforts.

But, even that was near the limit.

「Your majesty.....」

He unconsciously whispered the queen that he respected. 'How much time they have to buy? Is she safe? Will Kuwaibel-sama really able to awaken in the【Spring of True Dragon's Tear】? And will that be enough to overturn this war situation?'

He believed. He believed in it, but Bovid who was a veteran soldier couldn't avoid the black mist of unease to be created in his heart.

「You guys-, just a bit more! Go all out! If Avenst is gone when her majesty come back, then it will be our shame for eternity!」

Even so as a captain, he addressed all the squads that everything was absolutely fine. He maintained his subordinates' morale with jokes and encouragement.

But, reality was heartless, and on top of that it was always moving to unwanted direction every time.

『-. Impossible-. Those guys, they are planning to fire their main cannon!? Averia-, Rozeria! Stop them no matter how-』

Cline's scream surged. When Bovid who was taken aback looked below, there was the figure of a ship aiming its main cannon at Avenst above.

It was only natural that Cline was flustered. Right now if Avenst was shot down in this kind of place, it would fall around the palace. The people living around the palace were unmistakably those with considerable post or pedigree even in the divine country.

Therefore, they estimated that the enemy wouldn't use their main cannon in fear of sinking the ship with one shot but.....

『Damn it-. So those guys are also absolutely at their limit huh!』

It seemed, there was some fellow there who was unable to suppress their fear, or perhaps their rage from seeing a lot of the defense fleet ships getting shot down.

Airship Rozeria and Averia were charging their main cannon and they were going to fire, but they wouldn't make it in time at all. It went without saying that the sky battlecrafts wouldn't be able to do anything.

Bovid, and then everyone of Avenst imagined the scene of their other home town the nation on ship getting annihilated.

——Charging complete.

It vaguely looked like the other defense fleet ships were also panicking. In the middle of that, the main cannon was finally going to fire at the mother ship Avenst——right before that

——*GOU-*

A silver flash pierced the sky.

「Hah, you're late, your majesty, monarch dragon-sama.」

Saying that Bovid turned his gaze. Surely, it was undoubtedly a sight that was gazed in astonishment by everyone in this battlefield. In fact, even the defense fleet ship that was in the verge of firing also stopped moving.

What pierced the palace vertically, rising from far underground toward the sky was without mistake a pillar of light.

The pillar of light that was thinning down as though melting into air and then vanished stopped still the time of the battlefield.

Before long, a silver flew out into the sky of the world that was filled with silence.

It flew up to the sky like a cannonball, rolled midair and spread its wings wide. The sunlight caused the dragon scales to sparkle, just how beautiful that figure was.

Dragon scales shining silver. Majestic huge body. Dragon eyes that made anyone filled with awe. That figure with its back toward the sun even made anyone felt its divine majesty.

——GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!

That was unmistakably a dragon's howl. No, it was the howl of the dragon king filled with a dominating aura that was worthy for a king.

Silver aura spread out like a ripple. It remained in all the people of the dragon kingdom.

Right after that, the words of the person who everyone surely longed for reverberated.

『Everyone-. Well done in enduring this long! Your queen, your monarch dragon-, are right here!』

A silver monarch dragon. The one standing on that back was their queen whose beauty wasn't lost even soaked in blood——Roze.

This was the moment, the strongest of dragon kingdom Avenst was revived.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next chapter, perhaps.....I think I'll be able to submit it at 6 P.M Sunday.

Arifureta Chapter 243

Arifureta After II Hope And Despair And

AN: Merry~ Christmas~

I'll end Tio's arc next week. This is not a lie. It's true. It's true you know?

Surely the cause was the silver light that enveloped all the people of Avenst. The words of the queen that shouldn't reach resounded toward all the people in this airspace.

『-, Kuwaibel! That warship!』

「Gua!」

Seeing the smoking and tilting mother ship Avenst, and the warship that was in the verge of firing its main cannon toward that Avenst, Roze yelled while showing unease in her face.

The silver monarch dragon——Kuwaibel who was temporarily awakened as a grown up dragon replied shorty to that yell and he threw back his head.

And then,

——GAAAAAAH!!

He released a breath attack along with a howl. The terrific torrent of light shook the air. The silver breath should be called as a pillar of light already. Naturally, the heat amount it possessed was out of common sense.

The pillar of light cut through the sky in a straight line, and then it impacted the ship. The barrier that repulsed all the attacks of Avenst side was flickering fiercely while warping greatly. While the pillar of light was illuminating the world, the pivot of the divine country's protection——after a slight resistance, it vanished as though getting blown away.

The defense battleship that lost its shield was helplessly hit by the light pillar and a big tunnel was opened in its frame. And then the stocked energy of the main cannon exploded, illuminating the world with even more light of destruction.

The defense battleship that exploded everywhere along with explosive blast rained down to a part of the city. Naturally, there was no way the king of dragon would allow that, he raised a loud cry that was different from before. Thereupon, a membrane of extreme light that looked like an aura that covered a part of the city was manifested.

The light perfectly halted all the wreckages and explosion blast, it didn't stop there, it annihilated what it touched from the edge. It seemed it was an offensive barrier that possessed the power of the light pillar.

Silver aurora shined in the sky. Seeing the sight of the raining down presence of death getting stopped, just what did the people of the city who were moving about in confusion at the sudden war situation would feel?

The monarch dragon's howl resounded in the battlefield once more.

「.....They return back.」

One man whispered that. It was a man with shabby appearance wearing work clothes that looked like old rag. In the eyes of he who was the people of the former dragon kingdom who was working in a harsh place like a slave since before the dawn, tears were faintly surfacing.

「Okaa-san.....what's that?」

「.....Don't call them that. They are our king. Our, queen and monarch dragon-sama.....they came back for us.」

A skinny girl was looking up at the existence that she was told as a fairy-tale before she slept while pointing with her eyes opened wide. The mother who was embracing her daughter from the side was wiping the warm tears flowing down her dirty face many times while leaking out a sobbing voice.

The people of the former dragon kingdom were mostly lower class people whose human right wasn't guaranteed. They were kept alive only for supporting the extravagant livelihood of the divine country's high class people or the

privileged class people, they were that kind of existence.

Just how much they were dreaming for the day their king returned inside their long pained life?

The people who were hiding inside building so that they wouldn't get dragged into the war pushed out their face outside one after another as though led by the calling howl of the monarch dragon.

Like that they witnessed it.

The figure of the monarch dragon flying majestically in the sky. And then, the spectacle of countless light sphere floating brilliantly at the monarch dragon's surrounding. Those were stars of aurora.

The enemy was also similarly just staring at the fantastical sight. While the defense fleet and the sky battlecrafts stopped moving, the monarch dragon Kuwaibel's howl surged up. Falling stars phenomenon occurred.

Great number of extreme light bullets rained down toward the other side of the palace like a meteor shower——at the huge breeding farm located at the opposite side of the city. Yes, it was the breeding farm of the dragons that had supported the matchless sky fleet until now.

Countless explosive sounds resounded, the air was teemed with flash that made it as though the palace was tinged with a halo.

——GAAAAAAAAAAH

The howl of monarch dragon Kuwaibel. That was a call. It informed of the return of the king, it called to wake up, rouse up, it was such calling voice.

——Kuwaaaaaa-

——Kyuiiiiiiii-

——oooooOON——

Even feebly, the howls of dragons that responded was definitely emitting delight.

Countless shadow flew up to the sky from behind the palace. The figures of the dragons were small, and fleeting, yet their wings were flapped powerfully to

return to the sky. The people who knew of the former dragon kingdom, and even those who didn't, they tightly grasped at their chest similarly, because of the overflowing emotion that couldn't be described.

『.....-. Don't get absent-minded! Change target-, shot down that dragon-』

One ship of defense fleet returned to their senses. The ship began to charge its main cannon in hurry while its normal cannon and large caliber anti-air weapon spouted fire.

The warship weapons rapidly approached with a force that looked as though it could blow up the atmosphere to buy time, however, in front of Kuwaibel all those were stopped by barrier of light and they couldn't reach his main body. The barrier rippled, and a beat later the cannonballs and bullets were annihilated. The expression of the attacking battleship's captain paled seeing the figure of Kuwaibel that was staying unmoving calmly.

And then, following his self-defense instinct, he was about to give out instruction for further fuel supply to reinforce the barrier to maximum strength in the same time with the main cannon's charging.....

——KUWAAAAAAN-

『-, captain! Dragon core energy's output is declining-. The barrier's strength is lowering!』

『Main cannon's charging rate is reduced-. It will take two minutes until full charge-』

『This is fuel bunker! The dragons are enveloped with strange light! Blade or bullet doesn't work-. Just what in the world is happening!?!』

The loud howl of the monarch dragon and reports that made one wanted to run from reality struck the ears.

Monarch dragon Kuwaibel didn't have transforming power like Tio. Therefore, he couldn't make the feeble dragons to rebirth into gallant dragons.

But, he too was a king of dragon beyond doubt. That power similarly existed to protect. The silver light was the proof of divine protection bestowed by the monarch dragon. Under Kuwaibel's sky, laying hand toward the people he

decided to protect became a herculean task.

Also, a monarch dragon was able to grant power to other dragons was because they were able to interfere with dragon core. That was to say, a monarch dragon was also able to interfere to a certain degree at things that were using the energy of dragon core.

Because all the battleship of the divine country was using dragon core energy, they were unable to escape from the power of monarch dragon. Of course, a monarch dragon couldn't completely nullify processed energy, even so, it was possible to damp the output in considerable ratio. At the very least, now the conventional weapon of Avenst side could go through.

『Everyone of the dragon kingdom. My name is Roze Phiris Avenst. The queen of dragon kingdom Avenst. He is monarch dragon Kuwaibel.You have done well enduring the harsh time for long. Right now, we will take back everything!』

The proclamation resounded loudly in the battlefield.

The liberated dragons flew around in the sky, the light enveloping the defense fleet who boasted of being an impregnable fortress was obviously weakened in a glance.

And then, the howl of monarch dragon thundered.

A beat.

——WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA——

Tremendous joyful cheers rose from everywhere in the city.

Roze made a little smile hearing the great cheer enveloping the city. She patted Kuwaibel's back with a gentle hand, and then she changed completely. She made a war proclamation with expression that possessed both dignity and dominating aura. (TN: A bit of trivia, this dominating aura I sometimes used, in the raw it was written as 'haki', yeah like that one in One Piece)

『Informing the people of Qwailent. Your king's life already scattered in the sky. The fleets, including flagship Durgrant won't return back.』

Roze was convinced. That there was no way for the king of usurpation to survive that battlefield where their friend, a legendary existence was fighting.

Therefore, the words that were announced clearly without mumble possessed the weight of truth, giving a severe blow to the defense fleet and the divine people on the surface whether they wanted it or not. ‘What kind of joke is that, saying that their unrivaled king and his strongest battle strength fell in the sky?’ Everyone turned into denial for the moment in their mind.

But, if their king was safe.....then why, these Avenst’s pirate bunches were here? Why, even though they had slipped until this deep, there wasn’t even a single ship from the main fleets that returned.....

The reality before their eyes coldly struck their disbelieving heart.

『Surrender under the law of dragon kingdom Avenst. If you put down your weapon now then I’ll be merciful and spare your life. What we really ought to fight is in the future. The strength of even just one person more is needed for the greatest battle of fixing this broken world. If there is even just a little bit of heart that is thinking of the future inside your heart then surrender.』

Roze’s proclamation was surely something that would be called naïve from here on. But, if they stole back because they were stolen from, clashing against hatred with hatred, and they wouldn’t stop until the enemy was ruined, then it would be no different with the king of pillage.

She had decided to become the king of soldier. She was determined to build a future.

That was why.....

『.....Don’t believe her-. His majesty is dead is just nonsense! It’s impossible for the supreme ruler of the sky to fall! Activate Synthesizer maximum power! All ships, take the head of that pirate!』

A terrible sound wave assaulted Kuwaibel. The evil sound that disturbed dragon core energy and remarkably inhibited the strength of this world’s dragon species——that was the reply of the defense fleet toward Roze’s words.

「Kuwaaa-」

「-, Kuwaibel!」

For a moment, Kuwaibel looked like he lost his floating power and his altitude

jerked down. Although he was a monarch dragon, it didn't change that he was a dragon of this world, he was unable to avoid the fang of Synthesizer. This was the biggest reason why once the monarch dragons and dragons couldn't win against human fleet.

The faces of the dragon kingdom people turned pale seeing that. The captains of the defense fleet made a mocking smile.

「.....It's fine, it's fine Ku-chan. You are strong. More than anyone in this world. Far more than even the monarch dragons in the past. I, everyone, believe so. ——」

Roze who was riding on the back of Kuwaibel who was desperately creating floating power even while writhing in pain brought her body close as though to embrace him, she then took a deep breath.

And then, she played an old song that anyone of the dragon kingdom would know. It was the song of Kuwaibel's bond with his partner that had been sung at his all the time since he was born as a lullaby.

Kuwaibel's silver light that was weakening due to Synthesizer recovered its radiance a bit. Floating power was produced properly and he hovered without wavering.

『.....Thanks, partner.』

Kuwaibel's words. Normally it was a power of mutual understanding that he seldom used.

There wasn't any unique power in Roze's song. The song was a normal song. Surely even the girl herself had no such intention. She was only thinking if she could support her partner's heart even just for a little with the familiar song. But, something came into effect. That gentle song was certainly protecting Kuwaibel from the attack of atrocious sound wave.

Roze smiled. She couldn't return any words because she was singing, but words were already unnecessary between the two of them.

Kuwaibel's dragon eyes seized the defense battleship aiming its gun turrets at him and they glinted sharply.

『Everyone. Let's fight, together.』

Kuwaibel's words spread like a ripple once more. Those words were certainly conveyed to all the soldiers of Avenst.

Kuwaibel flew out. He evaded the coming missiles to left and right or intercepted using countless light bullets. As long as Synthesizer was in effect, he couldn't launch a breath that could sink down enemy ship in one shot. But, it was a different story if it was from point-blank range.

Other defense battleships circled to both sides and aimed at Kuwaibel.

『I won't let you-』

『This is the stage of Roze-sama and Kuwaibel-sama-. Begone nuisance!』

The captain of airship Rozeria, Cutter, and the captain of airship Averia, Oaks yelled altogether. They attached themselves at Kuwaibel's both flanks and exchanged shots in respond to the defense battleships.

The enemy's sky battlecraft squad attacked from above. Even if they couldn't shot down Kuwaibel himself, the queen riding on his back was another story. If she was killed then it could be imagined how Avenst side would crumble.

『I though you guys will do that yeah. From Cranks 1 to all squads. Cranks squad will provide backup for Kuwaibel-sama! Shunt, Los, the two squads protect Avenst-. All the others hold back the remaining defense fleet!』

Bovid shot down two planes when he passed through them from above with only a few seconds of machine gun strafing, and then he further somersaulted with a maneuver that could only be called as abnormal and pointed his plane's nose downward and really easily shot down two more planes.

As might be expected from the wingmen of the supreme commander, Cranks squad's skill was at inhuman level. Every single one of them was reliably bringing down enemy sky battlecraft with reckless maneuver that was nothing short but abnormal. In addition the black dragons were intercepting missiles and so on that were approaching Kuwaibel.

『Isn't the Synthesizer working!? Shit-, main cannon status!?』

『Charging rate 70%!』

『Chih, so it won't make it in time-. Then.....change target-. To mother ship Avenst above!』

The captain of a defense battleship shuddered at the approaching Kuwaibel even through all the barrages. And then, the moment he knew that the main cannon's charging wouldn't make it, he changed the target at Avenst and fired the main cannon.

「Kuwa-」

‘I won't let you-’, As though to say that, Kuwaibel leaped at the line of fire.

At the same time, he fired a breath of light pillar.

The breath and the main cannon struggled against each other equally. The shockwave of the impact stirred the atmosphere and radiated intense heat wave. In that timing the Synthesizer was cut off for a moment, and immediately after, it was fired in maximum strength. The sound wave attack with rapid change of tempo caused Kuwaibel's light pillar to spontaneously weaken.

「-!?」

The light pillar was overcame. The main cannon approached Kuwaibel. Normally he would doge, but behind him there was the mother ship Avenst. Therefore, Kuwaibel used his body as shield. Fierce impact caused Kuwaibel to rise a soundless anguished voice from his mouth.

But, enduring that, he fired a breath once more.

The light pillar that ran on the sky was like a counter, it pierced the foundation of the main cannon and caused a great explosion.

『-, retreat in full speed while launch concentrated fire with all weapon!』

The angry voice of the defense fleet ship captain resounded, but faster than the order could be executed,

『Dam———』

「GURYAAAAAAA-」

Kuwaibel's blaze pierced the barrier and blew away the whole bridge.

——Defense fleet seven ships remained

Broken dragon scales were falling off from Kuwaibel's chest. Blood was dripping down and while only slightly his flesh was carbonized.

But, without even paying attention to that, and also because time was too precious even for recovering, Kuwaibel decided his next target. He flapped his wings and accelerated drastically while confirming with a glance that the main cannon of airship Rozeria flying in parallel beside him was going to fire, he then fired a light bullet at Rozeria.

The light bullet accurately hit Rozeria, but different of what would happen to enemy, the bullet didn't inflict damage, rather the radiance of the main cannon was strengthened by a level.

『That's a present from Kuwaibel-sama-. If it miss then there will be no forgiveness-』

Rozeria's main cannon that was fired at the same time with Cutter's scolding splendidly hit one defense battleship. Naturally, the defense barrier rippled and blocked the attack, but in the first place the main cannon with amplified might directly hit the place with weakening output.

Without any way to completely defend, the barrier was smashed apart and a large hole was opened in its flank while the ship tilted. There, light bullets attacked like gatling gun strafing to bring about destruction for sure this time. There was no way the defense battleship that was losing control had any way to endure, its bridge was pierced plenty and the ship sank.

——Defense fleet six ships remained

The enemy was also desperate. Main cannon light from the defense fleet that turned into buckshot shape rushed Kuwaibel. The power dropped considerably, but it was suitable for wide range attack and holding back the target.

「KUWAaa-」

In order to protect the surrounding and the city behind, Kuwaibel created a huge barrier of aurora. It was in the middle of Synthesizer's effect activation, so deploying a barrier of super large scale mercilessly shaved off Kuwaibel's mental strength. Even the immense dragon core energy he stocked from the【Spring of True Dragon's Tear】was decreasing with phenomenal rate, like

water gushing out from a leaky bucket.

There, a defense battleship that circled to the flank ignored the bombardment from Azeria and directed its main cannon at Kuwaibel. It looked like it was planning to shoot him down even if it had to go down together with him.

A slight unease emerged in Kuwaibel's dragon eyes.

——♪

At that time, he heard a song.

It wasn't the voice of Roze who was continuously singing in order to reduce the power of Synthesizer. It was a voice of a child who he had never heard before.

——♪

——♪

——♪

Singing voices were overlapping. There was the voice of an old age man, and there was also the voice of a young woman. Through the silver light, the singing voice of one person, and then one more person was rising——

『.....Thank you.』

The words of thanks that Kuwaibel gave reached clearly. To the people of the dragon kingdom singing on the ground.

The song of the people that was dedicated to the king. Assemble, assemble, be added into the song of protection. Not only being protected. When it was necessary their will to fight could be offered up, that was the pride that the people of dragon kingdom Avenst held.

The main cannon of the defense battleship fired.

The light of death pushed on toward Kuwaibel who couldn't move from maintaining the barrier.

But, Kuwaibel's dragon eyes weren't colored by unease anymore.

『It's all right, partner.』

『I know, partner.』

Roze's words, and Kuwaibel's reply.

The flash of main cannon directly hit Kuwaibel——right before that happened, it was swallowed inside the breath Kuwaibel released. Like a river with the tide reversed, the light pillar swallowed the silver flash and went straight ahead, without stopping it pulverized the defense battleship.

——Defense fleet five ships remained

The buckshot main cannon ceased. When the barrier of light vanished as though melting into the air, there was the figure of Kuwaibel clad in meteor of extreme light.

『-, barrier full pow——』

The meteor drowned out the command of some captain. In the middle of the overflowing singing voice that resounded through the whole city, the extreme light of Kuwaibel who was displaying thorough strength smashed the barrier of defense fleet with just bullet strafing.

『We are joining! Averia, target at two o'clock! Rozeria, target at nine o'clock! All sky battlecrafts, ram all the missiles you have at five o'clock target!』

A directive came from Avenst's captain Cline.

At the same time when Kuwaibel's breath of pillar light shot at the defense battleship in front, airship Averia and Rozeria fired their main cannon at their respective target. In addition, the air battle squads of Bovid and co also fired all their last missiles from all planes.

『.....Impossible. We are, the chosen people——』

Some captain of the defense fleet whispered. That was his last whisper in this world.

The light of the sun displayed a complete dawn. In the world that was filled with light, a gigantic flower bloomed. Decorated by flame blasts and thunderous roars, the flower of the blue sky displayed the curtain closing of a history.

On the ground, the people of dragon kingdom were staring dumbfounded at

the flame blasts of five ships of defense fleet blossoming in full glory, a beat later a terrific cheer that sounded like it would shake the earth and split the sky was raised. And then, it was the people of the divine country who were watching dumbfounded at those people cheering and the defense fleet falling.

With one soldier dropping his weapon *clang* as the beginning, weapons were thrown down one after another. Even the people who weren't soldier realized the crumbling of their glory had strength leaving their waist and the flopped down on the ground.

That was what displayed it clearly.

Yes, the sky divine country Qwailent that was created by the king of usurpation, right now, in this time, its history was put to an end.

At the sky above the city that was erupting with cheers, the airships and sky battlecrafts with mother ship Avenst in the lead were approaching Kuwaibel who was hovering calmly with Roze riding on his back.

「Your majesty, Kuwaibel-sama. That was a splendid fight. I can say that it was truly a victory that will remain in history.」

Bovid in a tattered sky battlecraft was using the plane's vertical takeoff function to somehow hover beside the two was giving them his honest praise.

Kuwaibel and Roze instantly opened their eyes and they looked at each other's face.....

「Puh. Bovid using honorific language.....」

『It, it doesn't suit you.....』

「Youu braats」

The two burst into laughter at the speech and gesture that didn't suit the sky battlecraft squads supreme commander who was normally accustomed with pirate manner. Sharp words like『You reap what you sow』, or『Indeed that really doesn't suit you』, or『Was the battle too extreme it finally got into your head?』 came from the radio. Bovid had no ally.

Bovid's expression turned completely sulky, but there was a smile that

couldn't be hidden on his lips. It seemed that sentiment was also shared by other people who were talking to Roze and Kuwaibel through the radio, even while talking frivolously there was joy that was impossible to hide seeping into their voices.

「Everyone, really, you all really had fought well. Our dearest wish has come true. The path to the future is cut open. Thank you, really thank you. You all followed someone like me along until here. Really.....」

Roze who was sitting still in a girl posture on Kuwaibel's back with a distorted face looked like she was going to burst crying anytime. There were even people who were already crying in sympathy.

That was just how long they had continued to fight the long painful fight until now. Therefore, this moment today was more than enough to make an emotion that was beyond description to well up inside them.

Inside the world that shook from the joyful cheers, the people of Avenst closed their eyes as though to immerse in the overflowing emotion. That was to digest their happiness, and at the same time it was also to remember their war buddies who had gone ahead of them.

「.....Now, everyone. There is a mountain of things to do. You can slowly immerse in your sentiment later, let's do what we ought to do right now. Also someone, please take out Olga from the hold in the palace that Kuwaibel opened. There is no danger to her life with Kuwaibel's power, but she is wounded really seriously.」

「.....Roger. Your majesty, what about the others outside Olga?」

「..... Jean and others.....their life or death is unknown. Please make the squad send to suppress the palace to carry out search and rescue at the same time.」

「Acknowledged.」

Everyone in that place guessed it from Roze's instruction and expression. There weren't many words exchanged, with Cline's instruction the ground suppression squad headed toward the palace using small boat from mother ship Avenst.

After seeing that off, Roze and others looked down to the ground. There were the figure of the people waving their hand there while shedding tears.

「Your majesty. Your proclamation.」

Roze nodded strongly at Bovid's words.

She urged Kuwaibel, and they calmly exposed their appearance while flying above the city. It was for the purpose of notifying the return of the king and declared the revival of dragon kingdom Avenst above the palace.

Behind them, the mother ship Avenst, airship Rozeria, Averia, and then the sky battlecraft squads followed in a march.

The people's cheers were increasingly heightening at the miraculous sight and the liberated dragons danced above the sky as though in blessing.

People were gathering in front of the palace without end. It seemed that the soldiers also didn't have any will to fight already, so they were under the watch of the ground suppression squad with both their hands raised up.

Above there, Kuwaibel who was shining silver reflecting the light of the sun even with wounds all over his body was hovering still, on his back Roze was standing.

Even while soaked in blood and wound that displayed the fierce battle, her figure that held her head high was beautiful. For the people who knew about the old fairy-tale, her figure was truly that of the「legendary dragon knight」itself.

Comfortably, while pouring gaze of affection at the people who were directing bright eyes at her, Roze took a deep breath. So that her voice would reach clearly, the silver light from her partner the monarch dragon showered down.

『Everyone. The beloved people of dragon kingdom Avenst. Once more, I'll introdu——』

Roze was going to introduce her name once again to make clear who she was——

At that time,

『The bloodline of king.....so it still survive.....』

A voice encroached the world.

Right after that, the beautiful world that was illuminated brilliantly by the light of sun was being covered by muddy black cloud that was suddenly generated. Like a drop of ink splattered on a white paper, the dark clouds overwrote the world. Sandwiched between the sea of clouds that rained down black rain below and the dark clouds generated further above, Roze and others fell into a hallucination as though they were imprisoned at the interstice of world.

「Wha, what?」

『Just now.....』

Bovid and others yelled「Your majesty-」in vigilance while rushing toward her. During that time Roze looked up at the sky dumbfounded, and Kuwaibel looked at the surrounding with shaken eyes in disbelief.

Flash of lightning began to ran in the sky. The thundering sounds gave the people fright whether they wanted it or not. In the gloomy world, horrifying words that sounded like boiled down essence of negative emotion resounded.

『Suffer——』

『Gasp, writhe——』

『Scream』

『Lament——』

『Lose everything——』

『Run screaming——』

『Fear』

Those were words of curse. Those words cursed the world, human, the brethrens, all living things in this world. It echoed, overlapping in many layers, as though several hundred or thousand existences were reciting in resounding voice.

『Die』

It was black and encroached slimily. The people's hearts that were filled with hope were being dyed with terror and despair.

That fallen person only wished for one thing.

『——In the end of suffering』

The world shook.

『Be destroyed』

Squall mixed with thundering lightning and black mist blew violently. A huge tornado was generated from the dark clouds that locked the sky, from inside it, “that” showed its figure.

「.....Evil dragon.....Helmut」

『.....』

Roze murmured with a trembling voice.

While everyone was ruled by despair and terror, there was only one dragon who was staring straight at that person. (TN: While I use person here, but it still refer to Helmut)

Those eyes conceived inside them sadness, the happiness of finally being able to meet, and then an unshakeable resolve.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Today, or from a few days ago the published version of Arifureta volume 5 is in the middle of sale.

At the same time, the comic version volume 1 is also on sale.

I uploaded the detail in my activity report, so if it please you please try to take a look.

For everyone the villager of a certain loner village, and also for everyone of a certain Casanova village, it will make me happy if this can be a good thing for killing time for the end-of-year.

Today, if possible I'll upload the Christmas special after story at 6 P.M if possible.

Perhaps, surely.....

Also about the update next week.....

Please rest assured. I won't suffer the brats! I'll upload a hour before the starting time!

After all I need to prepare things like the meal or the drink or the snack, I got to prepare them all flawlessly.

Well then all of you Narou people, have a good year!

Arifureta Chapter 244

Christmas Special After Story The Small Santa-san of Nagumo Family

AN: This is not what you think.

I only planned for around 5000 characters.

But when I noticed it already passed 9 o'clock, when I noticed it already went 10000 characters.

This is holy night after all, it's not strange that a mysterious thing will happen.

.....

Also warning.

I updated Tio arc today before this chapter.

For those who haven't read it, please read it too without fail.

At the time of year that was already beyond the middle of December where snow was sparsely falling from the cloudy sky. In order to resist the severe cold, while the kotatsu and heater were raising humming sound, the people of Nagumo family were eating with relish a warm specially made stew (the ingredient was an UMA lurking at an unexplored region of earth).

「It will be Christmas soon huh..... Myuu, what kind of Christmas present you want this year?」

「Myu?」

The lovely beloved daughter asked Hajime with her cheeks stuffed with the meat that came from UMA but was terribly delicious, looking like a squirrel.

Myuu hurriedly swallowed the meat of something *mokyu mokyu* and then she

showed a thinking gesture for a bit before answering with a wide smile.

「Pile bunker!」

「.....」

Papa stiffened spontaneously still with a smiling face. Indeed, he gave her present of numerous artifact weapons at the amusement park last year, but as expected Hajime was troubled of how to answer when he was getting coaxed for a demolition weapon with this kind of pure smiling face without any cloudiness.

Myuu who seemed to treat Hajime's speechlessness as refusal got dejected. And then, with an upturned gaze and reserved tone, she coaxed for another thing as though to observe at Hajime's reaction.

「It's fine, even if it's just Hyperion.」

The destructive power was raised. Just what in the world was reserved from this kid.....

Sumire and Shuu were desperately enduring their laugh with trembling shoulders at the dialogue between Hajime and Myuu. Yue and Shia looked exasperated, and Tio looked admiring. Amidst that, Remia who was unable to just watch spoke justification in the place of her daughter.

「I'm sorry dear. Good grief this child, she is pleading for something outrageous again..... Regrettably, it looks like that she is influenced by the game she is recently playing.」

「Game? A game that make you want pile bunker or sunlight convergence laser, just what kind of game that is?」

「It looks like a war game with the stage at the near future.」

Hajime turned his gaze at Myuu with a question「Is that so?」in his eyes. Myuu made a gun shape with her fingers and then spoke words that seemed to be a signature phrase with a posed look.

「I'm gonna dye everything crimson yeah! Nano」

「I'm confiscating it right now. Tou-san, we are putting restricting in Myuu's PC! A strong one! Help me later!」

Surely the geography of somewhere would change the next day after a Hyperion was gifted. Hajime who was shuddering asked for cooperation in a hurry at Shuu.

But, Shuu in question was instigating「Hyyu-, Myuu-chan is so cool!」together with Sumire. And then, Myuu was also saying terrifying thing like「That's cruel papa! Myuu had finally obtained a nuclear nano! Even though I'm looking forward to use it in the next war!」.

Hajime in his own way was responding「It's no good picking up something like that! Toss it away, far away!」for some reason. Myuu puffed up her cheeks like balloon. It seemed she was dissatisfied.

Hajime felt that it appeared he was at disadvantage talking about Christmas present and for the time being he beat a tactical retreat.The demon king-sama who came to kill even a god right from the front was running away from an argument about present with his daughter.

‘Cough’ Hajime papa cleared his throat and diverted the topic.

「Aa~, come to think of it Myuu. What about the condition of Belfegoor and others? Are their transformation mechanism working normally?」

「Yep! It's amazing nano! They went gashon-gashon, it's totally cool nano! Also the other artifacts are just like Myuu want it nano! As expected from papa! Thank you nano!」

「I see. That's great. But.....there is nothing dangerous in there so I created them normally without particular care, in the end, what are you going to use them for?」

Hajime who breathed out in relieve at the successful topic change asked Myuu casually. It was about around a week ago, Myuu suddenly strongly begged him, she said she wanted the living golems to be installed with transformation mechanism and also several artifacts that felt like they could become necessary tool for a spy somewhere.

Recalling that, Hajime asked curiously after this late, but ahead of his gaze, his beloved daughter who he believed would surely answer him with a smile was.....

「.....My, Myuu will put them to use for a peaceful activity, nano.」

「.....」

For some reason her gaze was swimming around and she returned a vague answer. The mouth of the little girl who was saying the desire to dye the world crimson just now, was speaking peaceful activity suspiciously. Hajime papa's eyes naturally turned staring fixedly.

「.....」

「.....」

Hajime papa's fixed eyes were staring fixedly. The gaze of the suspicious Myuu was swimming around even more.

Stare~. Fidget fidget. Stare~~. Twitch-, fidget fidget.

「.....Well, I'm not going to forcefully ask though.」

「Nmyu」

After everything, Hajime had faith that Myuu wouldn't use it for something stupid and he made a small wry smile before removing his pressing gaze. Myuu let out a relieved sigh while her cheeks loosened up limply at Hajime papa who gave her his trust. Hajime also smiled gently.

「.....Really, what a similar parent and child.」

「Isn't that right. Like their way to dodge the topic or the way they escape. Every year they are turning more similar.」

「Rather, doesn't Goshujin-sama noticed? Before thinking about game, Myuu's dangerous speech and action art mostly coming second hand from Goshujin-sama.」

「Ufufu. For Myuu, Hajime-san is also her idol after all.」

「Even so an elementary school student asking for pile bunker or laser cannon is still not normal though. As expected from my granddaughter!」

「That! My granddaughter is in different level compared to those other elementary school students.」

The whispering conversation of the wives and Nagumo spouses caused

Hajime and Myuu to feel like running away and they concentrated at the stew pretending to not hear anything. That harmonious behavior of the parent and daughter made the dining table to be enveloped in laughter.

「.....Putting aside the present, where is Myuu want to go at the Christmas day?」

Myuu began to be troubled「Uu~n」at Yue's question. Was it fine if they went to the same amusement park like last year? Or else, should they called her friends and papa's underlings(classmates) to party?

Myuu hummed 'un un' while wracking her head about what kind of Christmas should they have. Seeing her like that, Hajime suggested with a smile.

「Then, how about staying over somewhere at the Christmas Eve day? Like overseas, or another world.」

If Myuu wished it, then he would take her anywhere for sure. Hajime papa declared that full of vigor, but it seemed that today was a day where he would eat the counter of his daughter to the utmost.

「Ah, that's impossible nano.」

「? Impossible? It's not that you don't want it?」

「Nano. Myuu have a plan for the whole day in Christmas Eve.」

「You are going to go play with your friends ?」

Hajime asked while putting UMA meat into his mouth,

「It's not playing nano.」

He stiffened. In the day of Christmas Eve, she wasn't going to play with her friends, or spent time with family. However, she had a plan that wasn't playing. What's more it would take the whole day. *drip* A cold sweat trickled from Hajime papa's forehead.

「Myuu. What's your plan?」

Without even any leeway to feel doubt at Yue who was holding her laughter beside him for some reason, papa asked with a feeling of「Don't tell me」, but

「.....It, it's a secret from papa nano.」

「What.....the.....」

clang Hajime dropped his spoon. His expression was in shock. Hajime papa couldn't hide his shaken feeling at "the secret of his beloved daughter" that he had never met even once until now.

「Spe, speak honestly, Myuu. Surely in that plan of yours you are going to meet someone, and that someone is a girl right?」

「.....Myuu will meet various people, so of course there is also man nano.」

It was a critical hit at Hajime's mind. His beloved daughter said that she would meet a man at the Christmas Eve! What's more, it wasn't "boy" but "man". Okay, finally it's your turn after so long pile bunker. For the pervert lolicon bastard who dare to aim at the family's daughter, a present of lovely scrap time!

Perhaps feeling the turbulent sign from Hajime who stood up wordlessly, Myuu gulped down her remaining stew and said「Thanks for the food!」before she left the living room with fast pace *sutetete*-. The overly fast movement caused Hajime papa who was in the middle of feeling shaken unable to even call out at her.

But, just when he thought so, Myuu's face popped out from the living room's entrance. And then, she stared fi~~xedly at Hajime and,

「Papa. If papa try to follow or investigate Myuu's matter at the Christmas Eve.....Myuu, won't speak to papa anymore nano.」

「Gofuh!?!」

Hajime's knees collapsed. Without being able to even stop Myuu who rushed *sutetete*- once more to her room, he was crawling on all fours without even the slightest twitch. The damage was grave!

「A godslayer crushed with a sentence.....fumu. Perhaps it's only Myuu who art able to do something like this whether before or after.」

「Ahaha~. Hajime-san is weak against Myuu-chan even more than against Yue-san in a sense after all.」

Tio and Shia were giggling leisurely. Yue and others also nodded at them in

agreement.

But, the next moment, Hajime stood up in a flash. And then, with an expression that gave uneasy and emaciated impression,

「Nagumo family meeting! The, the.....the whatever many times of Nagumo family emergency family meeting will be hold! The topic is about the trashy scum bastard following about our daughter!」

Naturally, everyone was continuing their meal normally.

The day of Christmas Eve.

In the palace of another world Tortus, work was being done routinely without anything particular happening. The busy officials were running about or else they were dealing with paperwork bit by bit on their desk.

In a room of such palace——in the office of Hairihi kingdom's king, a boyish king who still hadn't really fit the atmosphere or the desk size yet was moving his pen with a fed up expression.

「Your majesty, will you take a rest soon?」

「Mu. No, I'll do it a bit more. Elder sister is not here. If work is piling up during such time then it will be too shameful. Or rather, just how did elder sister finished this amount of work always in that kind of short time huh?」

「She was doing them normally you know? Only, it was done with astonishingly fast motion though.」

「.....Since I was enthroned and also did my duty, now that I've recently get used with the work, I often think this but.....elder sister is human right?」

「.....Your majesty. You will be scolded by Liliana-sama you know?」

The warning voice from the troubled private secretary made Liliana's little brother, his majesty the current generation king of Hairihi kingdom——Randell to sigh deeply「Haa」, while thinking「Elder sister, won't he come back quickly I wonder」.

「If I remember correctly, she was invited for earth event called

“Kurushimasu” right? She looked really merry when she was picked up directly by that guy.](TN: Christmas in Japan is read Kurisumasu. Kurushimasu meant suffering.)

「Your majesty, it’s “Christmas”. Your pronunciation makes the supposedly joyful event to sound like a hell torture.」

Recalling his sister who was in high spirits since the morning thinking of that hateful son of a bitch, Randell let out a deep sigh. His first love was taken away by that person, but he didn’t stop there, that man even bared his poisonous fang toward the sister that he respected. Randell swore「I’ll punch you flying someday」. Inside his heart. He wouldn’t say it out loud no matter what.

Randell’s feeling became as though he had bitten something bitter, but suddenly, he recalled a certain character and he muttered to himself.

「.....Is it no good, if I also go there?」

「It’s no good.」

He was cut down easily by the private secretary. Randell went「But you see」 「However, still」acting fidgety and restless for some reason with an indecisive attitude. The private secretary who knew what was inside the heart of such boyish king held back from sighing while opening his mouth to say something in persuasion——

At that time,

「MERRY-!! CHRISTMAA———SS!! NANO!!!」

「Hiih!? What’s going on!?!」

Suddenly the office’s window was threw open loudly, from there a red shadow flew in like a bullet. Randell hugged himself with both hands like a girl while jumping to his feet. The private secretary also twitched from the sudden happening, yet he rushed forward to protect his majesty from the intruder.

「Wait, Myuu-sama!?!」

「Whaaat!? Myuu you say!?!」

Shocked voices were raised when they saw the true identity of the intruder. Randell who was shaking in his boots behind the desk also threw his gaze at

Myuu who was quickly smoothing over her appearance.

「No, I'm not Myuu. I'm Santa Claus!」

Myuu who was wearing red and white clothes was indeed wearing the appearance of Santa. Her lower body was clad in mini skirt and short boots, it was a cute clothes that were arranged with frills and fluffy pompon all over. Her head was wearing a droopy Santa hat and she was carrying a large bag on her shoulder. All those factors certainly made her a Santa-san.

Myuu twirled with a beautiful rotation as though to show off her exclusive Santa cosplay created by her family for her. She stood sideways and winked with peace sign over her eye. It was the signature pose like a certain idol somewhere! *Sparkle-☆* Such sound effect could be hallucinated from that!

「Cu, cute.....」

The male Randell. It seemed he got one hit KO-ed from the *Sparkle-☆*. He was staring at Myuu in intoxication.

The private secretary who sensed somehow that the king seemed to be of no use was wondering 'Just what is the security of the palace doing..... No, this is the daughter of his majesty the demon king, anything is possible isn't it, haha.' He whispered so inside his heart while asking with a voice that was oozing out tiredness.

「Myuu-sama, just what are you doing? What about the plan of enjoying "Christmas" with Liliana-sama?」

「I'm not Myuu nano. I'm santa nano. Santa will distribute present in Christmas nano.」

「Present, is it?」

The secretary tilted his head. With a glance at Randell who was still in a daze, Myuu fished around inside her white bag. Like that what she took out was two beautifully wrapped bundles.

「Merry~ Christmas! These are presents from Santa to the two good children nano!」

「My, Myuu is giving me present? Uu, Myuu, someone like you is really.....」

「Oh, for me too? Fufu, this is truly a happy surprise.」

The eyes of the secretary who received the present turned round while also accepting it happily. He guessed that it seemed Myuu was going around distributing present in accordance with this event called Christmas. It felt like his everyday tiredness was blown away, and he was making a really warm expression.

On the other hand, Randell was whispering things like「Myuu is giving me present. To purposefully go as far as crossing world for my sake..... Hah, don't tell me, Myuu is actually having feeling for me!?!」.

「Well then you two, work hard nano! Santa will give present to other people too nano!」

「Yes, Myuu-sama. Thank you very much for the present.」

While the private secretary and Myuu were exchanging harmonious words of parting, Randell whose expression was feverishly delirious returned to his senses suddenly.

「Wa, wait a second, Myuu!」

「?」

「Tha, that's. It's.If you like, won't you spend today with me? I'll personally prepare a return gift for you!」

The secretary gave a straight-man retort through his gaze「You, read the atmosphere. Rather, she just said that she is giving present to other people too」. The young king didn't even pay attention to his private secretary's expression and was desperate to stop Myuu from leaving.

Randell kept prattling on and on while glancing repeatedly at Santa Myuu with blushing cheeks.

Just from this, it could be guessed that Randell whose first love was scattered that much was now falling into a difficult love once more. During the few times of his contact with Myuu when she came to play in the palace when brought along by that guy, Myuu who interacted with him friendlily different from other people of the same age around him, and also seeing how their age was

relatively close caused him to fall for her so easily.

Myuu who was tilting her head at such Randell didn't know about what was inside his heart, but she could guess that Randell was trying to make her stay and with a cheerful smile she——

She declared to Randell whose expression turned bright seeing her smile.

「Randell's eyes are always indecent so no way.」

「!？」

Randell turned into stone. Myuu dealt additional blow at him still with a smile!

「Papa told me nano. Myuu must not get near that kind of man. That's why Randell, don't get too close to me nano!」

「Kahah」

The male Randell. Even after becoming a king he fell on his knees. Seeing his majesty who was on all fours while holding his chest, the private secretary sent him a look of sympathy. Myuu said「Bye bye nano~」while jumping out from the window.

Later on at the palace, the voices of the servants and soldiers who were happy with the surprise present from the cute Santa could be heard mixed with the crying voice of the young king who screamed「That bastard(demon king), I'll murder him somedayyyyyy-」in an outburst of anger.

whoosh- The sound of a sharp slash resounded, and a fiendish monster was crumbling in two.

「Fuu. Is this the last of them?」

The one who whispered was a young man wiping the sweat on his forehead with his hand——Amanogawa Kouki. After many twists and turns, he who had saved several other worlds was even now working hard like this to remove the threat to people as an adventurer.

「Kouki-san, great work.」

「We are finished too over here, Kouki.」

From inside the deep forest, the two who appeared pushing through the grasses were Kouki's party members, the former goddess-sama and former queen-sama of another world. These two were also female hunter who were currently competing for Kouki also after many twists and turns.

「Aa, thanks for your hard work you two. You two aren't injured right?」

「Everything's fine. The strength of a goddess is not so small that monsters of this level can possibly do anything.」

「Former goddess you mean? Also, certainly what is small isn't your strength but your breast there.」

「Aa? I'll turn you into cinders you know? Queen (lol).」

「Oh? Just try it if you actually can, no good goddess.」

Just like usual, Kouki was starting to take distance bit by bit while staring with eyes that looked like dead fish toward the former goddess and former queen at both his sides who were glaring from really close as though seeing each other's parent's killer.

But, at that time Kouki's presence detection detected an unknown existence approaching them with terrific speed.

(-, fast!?)

Kouki opened his mouth to warn the two at the same time when that fell from the sky.

What landed with an impact that shook the ground was,

「Re, reindeer?」

Kouki was spontaneously dumbfounded.

Yes, it was a reindeer. With bright red nose. However, it was super big with length that was almost three meter long.

The red nosed reindeer-san stared slightly at the dumbfounded three people, and then its mouth suddenly fell open. Inside it there was a fiendish object that looked really familiar for Kouki.....

「Why is it hereee!?!」

Kouki yelled such thing while he wasted no time to hold the other two and evaded from the line of fire. It was at that moment, *dopan*- a bursting sound and flash that were also familiar surged out, blasting away an enemy approaching from behind Kouki and others that Kouki had also detected.

Kouki put down beside him the former queen-sama and former goddess-sama who were still dumbfounded and he stared at the mechanical death god reindeer-san while his cheeks were twitching. Thereupon,

「MERRY~~, CHRISTMASSS!」

「Myuu-chan..... So it's you.」

Kouki hung his head down crestfallenly. Santa Myuu's face peeked out all of sudden from the reindeer's back, and with a hop she flew and twisted midair with a triple turn before landing beautifully.

「Why are you in this kind of place? That outfit.....aah, today is Christmas huh.」

「Correct nano. For hero-san who has been a good child through this one year, there is a present from Santa nano!」

「Hahah, I see.A Santa who make an entrance by riding a grim reaper.....as expected from Nagumo's daughter.」

Toward Kouki who was muttering with a subdued air, Myuu returned a package while saying「Yes! Merry Christmas!」. Myuu also handed over present to the former goddess and former queen-sama who were still dumbfounded.

「Thank you Myuu-chan. Can I look inside?」

「It's fine, but Myuu is really busy getting around the world nano. That's why, I'm leaving already nano.」

Myuu jumped on the slaughter reindeer-san——actually the inside was Belfegoor——and then she said「Bye hero-san! I wish you a good another world summoning next year too!」while flying away.

「Don't give me that kind of ominous prayer!」

Kouki's shout ended in vain, the figure of the demonic reindeer-san that reached the speed of sound instantly was already gone.

Kouki let out a long sigh while he tried opening the wrapping of the small present carefully. Even after everything he said, he opened the wrapping while his cheeks were loosening that he was also given a Christmas present.

「Hm? This is.....ring?」

What came out from the box were pair rings. On the small paper that was included inside,「They are engagement rings! Please give it to someone that you love!」was written with round characters.

Kouki got drenched with sweats from a bad feeling.

「Kouki-san, thank you very much. For you to prepare this ring of eternal oath, I'm really happy.」

「Kouki? Naturally, you will give it to me right? Right?」

Over both his shoulders, the former queen-sama and former goddess-sama were peering in smilingly wrapped in muddy black aura. Kouki was about to activate Ground Shrinker reflexively to take distance, but the two tightly grasped his shoulders simultaneously.

「Kouki-san-」

「Kouki!」

creak Unpleasant sound rang from Kouki's both shoulders.

Kouki's eyes turned into dead fish eyes once more while at the bottom of his heart he yelled at the small Santa who presented him with pair rings despite preparing presents for three people.

「YOU-, DEMON KING'S DAUGHTERRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRR-」

After that, it went without saying that the thunderous sounds of the struggle for the pair rings resounded deep inside the forest. And then, it also went without saying how later Kouki went around bowing his head at every related place for the reckless destruction of nature.

At Britain in the bureau chief office of the national security bureau,

「Haa~~~」

Such dee~~p sigh was let out. The one whose eyebrows twitched in reaction to that was the person who was wholly famed as a walking and clothed cool-headedness, Chief Sharon Magdanese.

「Haa~~~~~」

「.....」

A sigh even deeper than before caused an irritating air inside the chief office. Vein was starting to emerge on Chief Magdanese's forehead. There, even more sigh assaulted.

「Depressing.」

「Hih!？」

Chief Magdanese who snapped threw a paper knife. The owner of sigh who immediately shook his head while raising a pathetic scream unconsciously——Allen saw the paper knife passed through right beside his forehead, without stopping the knife stabbed *pasun* on the wall behind him.

「Wai-, what are you doing, chief!」

「I said it already, it's depressing. Just what's with you since some time ago?」

Chief Magdanese sent a gaze that was even colder than the open air of winter at Allen who was the cause of the irritating atmosphere in the chief office with his deep sigh.

Allen twitched from such gaze, even so he spoke his reason.

「No, because, this situation makes me want to sigh. Chief, today is Christmas you know! Through the world now lovers are having a date, they are preparing and flirting in preparation for tomorrow, they are having their fill for that kind of embarrassingly happy event, yet when it come to me, I'm doing work work work in this kind of place from morning until night. Tomorrow will be work too! Just what is the meaning of this!」

「Even if you say that, there are a lot of other staffs other than you who are

also doing work.」

「That's true! But, Paradis-san, she is normally having holiday giggling and making merry! Aby-san and others too, they are having embarrassingly happy event! You know, yesterday she already wore Santa hat while working! Just seeing that atmosphere of her that said『I'm really looking forward for tomorrow!』, my heart is already at the limit.....」

「Be relieved. I put Paradis's Santa hat into cutting machine right in front of her eyes yesterday.」

「Cruel-. No, not that, even if there is something like that but the emptiness inside me isn't mitigated at all.」

「You don't have a lover anyway so it's pointless whatever you say. Just keep with your wild dream.」

「Cruel-. Uu, isn't there a woman somewhere who will be kind to me.....」

Allen grieved. There a voice resounded.

「Thinking that is the case, I came! Merry Christmas!」

「OoOOU!?!」

「-」

Allen reflexively pulled out a gun and rushed toward Magdanese, and Magdanese who held her breath. When both of them turned toward the ceiling from where the voice came——

「Merry Christmas! Granny Sharon! Also Allen!」

「Myuu.....」

「Myuu-chan!?!」

The pane of the ceiling was taken off and there was the upside-down face of Myuu suddenly peeking out from there. Let's say this in advance, the ceiling of the chief office wasn't constructed with detachable pane. It was protected with steel plate twenty millimeter thick.

Actually, Magdanese and others accomplished having a meeting with demon king family with Lord Abyssgate's introduction. Naturally, they also became

acquaintance with Myuu. However, for some reason Myuu seemed to be pleased with Magdanese and since then she called her “Granny Sharon” intimately.

Although it was a wide world, the one who called the national security bureau chief who even terrorist would beg at for their life while crying as “granny” was surely only Myuu. It went without saying that not just Allen, all the bureau staffs accompanying them including Vanessa opened their eyes wide hearing that. The shock was so great that Myuu was talked as a legendary super little girl within the bureau even now.

thud Myuu landed after somersaulting midair like a cat which caused Magdanese and Allen to make a really speechless expression.

After【Berserk Case】which was the first case they solved with Lord Abyssgate, they went through many more cases where there was quite a lot of chance for them to meet Myuu. Therefore, they only knew too well that Myuu wasn’t just a mere little girl.

But, for the specially strictly guarded chief office of the security bureau that should be impossible to even be infiltrated by the average agent to be so easily penetrated.....

「Granny Sharon! Merry Christmas! For granny who is working really hard this year too, there is a present from Santa nano!」

「This naughty angel.」

「Chief!?!」

Magdanese turned into a mere Granny Sharon. Chief office’s security? Security bureau’s honor? In front of the angel’s smile those were trivial matters.

Allen’s eyes opened wide seeing the warmly smiling Magdanese. Even now he felt like fainting.

When Magdanese tried opening the present, there was a simple necklace inside.

「See, about that, just by wearing it will make blood circulation better, and it will take off fatigue. It’s so Granny Sharon can be healthy all the time!」

「The words just now already make me able to fight for a hundred years more. Thank you, Myuu.」

「No, chief. That's already just a monster——」

sukon- A fountain pen stabbed Allen's forehead. Allen screamed「Noo-OOOOH」while flopping around with his hands pressing on his bleeding forehead. The pen was pretty much stopped by Allen between his bare hands before it could go through, so only the tip pierced in, but something painful was painful.

Myuu approached such teary eyed Allen with trotting steps and her small hand caressed Allen's head.

「Are you an angel?」

「I'm Santa.」

Toward Allen who became even more teary eyed from being treated kindly, Myuu offered a present「Here, Allen. Merry Chris!」.

By the point of time he was called without any honorific by an elementary school student, it could be seen just in what level Allen's position inside Myuu, but the Christmas present from a girl although a young one caused Allen's tear duct to finally burst.

「Uu, even though I'll absolutely make you happy if only you were born ten years faster」

「Sleep-talking when you are asleep, nano.」

The ears of Allen who was in the middle of feeling moved beautifully ignored the stinging words.

Floods of tears were flowing from Allen while he opened the thin sealed envelope. It felt complicated to call the item a present when it was something that only looked like a letter, but for the current Allen it was something irrelevant.

And then, while he was reading the letter inside the envelope, tears were starting to flow out even more like a waterfall from Allen.

「Thi, this is, real? It's not a prank, or a fake for surprise?」

「Yep. Myuu was only entrusted with the letter. What's left depend on Allen nano.」

「Hi, hi, hi——」

「Hi?」

Magdanese directed a disgusted gaze at Allen who was suddenly starting to repeat「hi」as though he was convulsing, but the moment she quietly evacuated Myuu away, Allen yelled「Hyaho—————ii!!」while jumping up.

Without pausing he then got so high spirited it made anyone wonder if he was going to ascend to heaven soon while hopping around inside the office.

「Myuu. What is that letter?」

「It's from an oneechan that is papa's former classmate. Before when they were together just for a bit at the case before this, she felt interested at Allen she said.」

「.....That's, really.....what an owner of rare taste that girl must be.」

A present for Allen. That was a letter that had the writing of a contact number of a girl of a certain group that was summoned to another world. The girl who previously got a bit involved with a case that dragged in Lord Abyssgate had the opportunity to act together with Allen for a short while.

The middle aged agent who lamented his inability to get a lover despite actually being a brilliant agent was greatly joyful that the spring finally came for him too.

「Ah, right. There is one more present for Granny Sharon nano.」

「My, what is it I wonder?」

Magdanese tilted her head. Myuu smiled cheerfully at her and handed over a piece of memo paper. Magdanese accepted it and saw that there was only an address written there and his head tilted further.

「Myuu, this is?」

「You see, that's the address of the building where a group of half dead terrorist-san is locked in nano!」

「Eh?」

「Yes?」

Magdanese's eyes spontaneously turned into dot. And then, Allen also stopped his joyful dance.

Myuu shouldered his white bag and crossed over the room until right below the opened hole.

「See, these terrorists-san, looks like they planned to make a concert venue where famous people gathered for Christmas go boom nano. That's why, Myuu destroyed them a bit nano. It will be terrible if granny cannot return home in Christmas day nano!」

「Ah, yes. Right, thank you?」

「.....Myuu, chan」

Myuu said「Then, have a nice Christmas!」at Magdanese and Allen whose face was greatly convulsing, and then she leaped up to the ceiling. And then, at the next moment the opened hole in the ceiling became like before as though nothing had happened.

Inside the chief office where death silent had returned, Allen spoke something that was too late already.

「.....Chief. I more or less read the mood and pretended to not notice but.....」

「What?」

「Myuu-chan's Santa clothes. Weren't there strange spots on them? As though, there was red liquid that got splattered on them.」

「.....Send personnel to this address. Quickly. Send ambulance too.」

「Yes ma'am.Since when the red of Santa became the color of blood spurt I wonder.」

「.....Surely since the daughter of the demon king was born.」

There was slight smell of blood remaining. The Santa of Christmas was hungering for blood.....perhaps.

「Fuu. Somehow I delivered all the presents nano. Santa-san has it hard nano.」

Myuu who returned home using gate whispered so while stretching her body. The sun was already sinking, delicious smell was drifting from Nagumo house.

She had literally went around the world to deliver present for the people related to Nagumo family. Although it was possible to teleport using gate, it was a really hard work for Myuu who was still little.

But, this too was something necessary for her to do to not let the connection that her beloved papa and his underlings(friends) had formed to be severed. Because she didn't have great power like her family, because she was powerless that she had to be helped by someone else, what she could do was only to convey that she treasured, loved everyone.

And then, for the last, Myuu would do the greatest that she could do for her most important people.

Wanting to make it a surprise, she deceived her papa in various things but..... Yue-oneechan and others who knew about the circumstance surely had explained it to papa skillfully. Myuu believed in that and pulled herself together.

She opened the entrance's door. Right away, the sound of a demon king somewhere rushing near with loud footsteps as though in a rush entered her ear. 'Nyufu' A strange laugh leaked out. Myuu sucked in a deep breath following her overflowing emotion,

「I'm home & Merry Christmas! I'm bringing a lovely present yeah! Nano!」

It went without saying, a lovely present for Nagumo family was the large love of the small Santa.

AN: Wait a second, that person now is!? It turn into a feeling like that isn't it.

I'm thinking that before long, I want to give more spotlight at that person.

Anyway, Merry~ Christmas.

It already passed nine o'clock, but I will be happy if I can make you readers enjoy it.

Also, thank you very much for those who reported 'I bought the novel and comic you know'.

I'm really happy.

It became a good present for Christmas.

But, my drying machine was making a strange sound.....

patapatapatapatapata, chuin- It sounded like that.

Super scary.....

The next update will be in New Year's Eve!

I'll rest at 30th so surely it will be fine!

Arifureta Chapter 245

Arifureta After II Oh No, I Made a Child.....

AN: I have no excuse.

You see, Shirakome prioritized Ame Talk. (TN: A variety show in Japan)

And then see, today I prioritized babying the brats.

Conclusion->I couldn't write.

And so, it will continue for just one more chapter.

Evil dragon Helmut showed his appearance from the cloudy sky.

The length of his body easily surpassed a hundred meter, he had black scales that looked as though they absorbed the light and crimson vertical slit pupils with black corneas that looked like ink drop. He was surrounded by several tornados and despite the violently raging wind, black mist was welling up and coiling around him, making his silhouette unclear.

Just from him being there, anyone hallucinated as though the air had died. It was suffocating, the limbs were trembling and wouldn't listen to what their owner was telling them, and the consciousness was painted over as though a black ink was flowing onto the canvas that was themselves.

(Aa, this is, hopeless.....)

The clacking sound was ringing from her own teeth. Roze muttered inside her heart while being conscious of that in the corner of her mind.

Fallen——now she understood the meaning of that word.

That was certainly a “fallen existence”. Just from being there he harmed the living people, a person that chased away everything into destruction. This was

an existence that had no other options except “annihilation”, beyond the concept of persuasion or fighting. It didn’t matter what kind of circumstance there was in the past.

That was truly “a foe that one couldn’t accept to live under the same sky”.

It wouldn’t be a battle where both sides put their own belief on the line. This foe merely had to be taken down no matter the cost, if one wished to stay alive in the future ahead of here.

But even with that understanding.....

(There is no way.....to win. Human’s karma.....it created such thing.....an existence.....this huge.....aa)

——They had no future

Roze’s heart was breaking. Even when she understood that this enemy had to be defeated, she couldn’t see the future. The existence before her eyes, the endlessly deep hatred, despair, and then the powerful might she felt swallowed her.....

「GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!!!!!」

「-」

A howl thundered. A gallant war cry overflowing with dominating aura, as though to blow away the dark clouds. It was enough to blow away the terror eroding the people. At the same time, silver light was covering the city like an aurora.

There was hope right here. Nobody would forsake it.

The world that was almost dyed black recovered its light as though there was a torch illuminating it. People were liberated from the wedge of terror and they looked up to the sky. Even without words, the king’s roar conveyed that will.

「Kuwai, bel.....」

『Partner, stand tall. We are, a king.』

The【Spring of True Dragon’s Tear】had no power to quicken mental growth. Even with his body grown up, his heart was still immature. But, Kuwaibel was a

king. Even though he was young, but he was indeed a king that protected and guided the people.

Surely he was feeling the immense power of the enemy. Roze could feel his faint trembling. But, his gaze wasn't averted even for an instant from the enemy that threatened the people.

Her partner's words and that gallant figure made Roze recovered her senses in surprise.

「Kuwaibel. Can you defeat him?」

『I will. Without fail. Roze, you gather everyone. I cannot protect them in wide range.』

「.....Got it. I'll evacuate even just one person more to the palace. If it's the palace then it will be able to form a powerful barrier too. You don't need to hold back.」

『I got it.』

With a gentle flap, the wind that was caused from the dragon wings caressed Roze's cheek. Roze too also gently caressed Kuwaibel's back. They had no need of more words than that.

Without hesitation Roze jumped down from Kuwaibel's back. Without delay a silver light wrapped Roze and lowered her down in front of the palace's front gate.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned their back at each other on the ground and in the sky. They quietly turned their gaze, the queen toward the people, and the monarch dragon toward the enemy.

「I will protect them-, partner!」

『I'll protect them-, partner!』

A beat of wings. A single roar. Monarch dragon Kuwaibel——moved out!

With his whole body clad in extreme light, he soared in a straight line into the black storm, toward the world's despair!

『Listen, the people of the kingdom! The people of Qwailent! Gather in the

palace without any distinction of enemy or ally! Take each other's hand of the people beside you, gather under our protection!』

The people's consciousness was aroused by Roze's words. The aurora of extreme light covering the whole city was shaving much of Kuwaibel's strength. Roze could only protect the people while narrowing the range of the protection as much as possible so Kuwaibel could pour even just a bit more of his strength into fighting.

In the palace, naturally there was a barrier device that was installed. Even without Kuwaibel's power, it could protect the people from the black rain.

The people of the former dragon kingdom scolded their heart that flinched from terror and obeyed their queen's words. But, midway, they unintentionally stopped moving that there were words telling them to save their enemy the people of Qwailent inside Roze's words.

The apprehended people of Qwailent were also the same. They were looking at Roze with expression of disbelief.

Roze raised her voice once more to them who were like that.

『You understand right? For that existence, it doesn't care whether you are Avenst or Qwailent. Just by us being human, no, just by us being alive is enough to make that person bring destruction to us. This isn't the time for us fellow human to fight each other! We have to survive even by a single person more!』

A howl roared. Aurora flashed inside the world that was rampant with dark clouds. Striking light that painted out the sky like lightning.

Amidst the sound of fierce fighting resounding in the world, in the plaza in front of the place that felt like death silence had returned despite the sound, the words of Roze's, dragon kingdom Avenst's queen reverberated resolutely.

『For the future!』

zaa- Black rain poured on the aurora of extreme light. Under the light of protection protecting them.....

「Your Majesty. The people working in the breeding farm——the people of Avenst, I don't catch sight of them in the plaza. There is a large trailer in the

eastern barrack. I'll go pick them up if you permit me!」

The one who raised his voice saying that was a soldier of Qwailent. Because the dragons of the breeding farm received Kuwaibel's protection, they could endure even being under the black rain. The weak and small people had also finished evacuating inside the aurora of extreme light.

Therefore, there was only a minimum barrier laid out at the breeding farm. The path toward the breeding farm was exposed to rain. Although the trailer was solidly made and could endure for a while even inside the black rain, naturally the mortal danger wasn't small.

The expression of the Qwailent soldier was exactly the face of someone who was resolved for death. Agreeing with his words, one after another a part of Qwailent's soldiers and people advised of the danger zone that was allocated to Avenst people and they asked for permission to rescue them.

Roze stared back at them and a beat later she strongly nodded.

「I'll leave the detail to you. Take all life to here!」

「-, Yes-」

Receiving Roze's gaze, the soldiers of Avenst released the binding of Qwailent soldiers even while making a slightly troubled smile. The soldiers who were staring dumbfounded at their hands that were released from binding gritted their teeth at the next moment and rushed away.

『Cline, you are listening right? Please send out all the small ships you can possibly field and evacuate the people at the outer part vicinity without distinction of enemy or ally!』

『Understood. I have already throwing in the confiscated vehicles too for the rescue activity. What's left is if we can activate the palace's barrier.....we can only wait for the report of the ground force we sent there.....』

『.....If only gramps is here』

If Sabas was here, then surely he would be able to activate the palace's barrier. The force entering inside the palace too might be seeking Qwailent soldiers' cooperation right now. But.....

People were gathering continuously toward the palace. People with weak limbs, injured and sick people too, they were supported by other people and desperately escaped here. But, as for the people who were in distanced place from the palace, in the end could they reached the place before the barrier Kuwaibel made vanished?

But, at that time, the aurora fiercely shook.

『Kuwaibel-』

There wasn't any reply from Kuwaibel. Surely he didn't even have the leeway for that anymore. The aurora was trembling further and flickered.

Roze was feeling uneasy. And then, as though detecting that,

「-, the barrier is!?!」

It wasn't a yell because the barrier crumbled. It was the opposite. A silver barrier was deployed with the palace as the center as though to overlap the aurora. A report from Cline『This isn't the suppression squad's doing!』came to Roze. There was definitely someone in the palace who activated it, but it seemed it wasn't the suppression squad.

Furthermore, several sky battlecrafts were flying up from the fleet's mooring dock. Those planes were lining up from the outer part and they hovered in place. And then they circulated all their energy into barrier and formed an improvised rooftop. As expected they couldn't cover the whole area, but they succeeded in creating a path until the palace.

That controlled action was obviously something that came from someone in Qwailent's side giving out instruction.

「Just who in the world.....」

『Fumu, it looks like the evacuation route at least made it in time.』

A voice reached the muttering Roze through the radio. It was a calm voice that possessed depth. The voice of an important person she was thoroughly familiar with. It was,

『Gramps!?!』

『Yes, Roze-sama. This is gramps here.』

Yes, the one at the other side of the radio was Sabastian who should be left behind in a scene of nearly certain death!

『You are safe!?!』

『Yes, somehow. The imperial guards who remained with me are also safe.』

The unbelievable story caused Roze to think ‘As expected, Gramps might be something other than human.....’ and felt shudder more than happiness. As though guessing the emotional state of such Roze, Sabas replied back with voice that had wry smile mixed in.

『I’ll speak the detail later on slowly. Rather than that we have to hurry the evacuation now.』

『Tha, that’s right. Is the palace barrier and sky battlecrafts barrier gramps doing?』

『Yes. More accurately I captured a close aide of Qwailent’s king, so after talking a bit with him, he become a pawn——cough-, a cooperater that help us.』

『Lies-. This old man is a demon-. Doing such thing at me——za-~~~』

Right now, it felt like there was some kind of screaming voice from the other side..... Before Roze could ask back, the words of Sabas『Silas-kun, don’t make me do something that pained me so much』came and at the same time a short scream could be heard.....

『Roze-sama. It was a splendid speech just now. It seems that Silas-kun is also inspired by your majesty’s words that he give us his full cooperation happily. Other than the barrier control, I also obtained the weapon control just now. I’ll support Kuwaibel-sama right after this.』

『Ah, yes.』

Sabastian——he was just too excellent. Roze’s talk unconsciously became halting language.

But, at that time,

「GAAH!!!」

Terrible impact sound surged at the same time with a cry that was oozing with pain. Looking there, a tower that was a slight distance away from the palace was tilting greatly and cloud of dust was rising up from its foundation. The tilting of that tower became even more drastic and then it collapsed right away.

『Kuwaibel-』

Roze understood even without looking directly. That scream came from Kuwaibel. And then, it was also Kuwaibel who was blown away by an impact so great it could destroy a tower. There was also no voice that responded to Roze's call.

『Something like hope, doesn't exist.』

The answer that came instead was a voice that had no intonation as usual, yet it was boiling with negative emotion to the limit. When she turned her gaze there, behind the palace——right above the breeding farm was the figure of Helmut clad in black miasma.

Black miasma was spreading each time he beat his wings, coiling around like a vortex. The black dragon scales that looked viscous didn't reflect the slightest bit of light and swallowed all light without leaving any behind.

Helmut's jaw was opened largely. The abnormal energy that was instantly focused in that mouth made Roze and others felt goosebumps on their back.

『There is no way I'll let you!』

Cutting through the rising cloud of dust, a streak of extreme light stretched to the sky and pierced Helmut's flank. The impact tilted Helmut's body, and the next moment the fired Helmut's breath attack grazed above the city's upper part and passed through.

Right after that, it pierced the land at the city's outer part that severely quaked along with a thunderous sound that sounded like scream. The vibration that rivaled a great earthquake caused the people who couldn't keep standing to scream and tumbled down one after another. During that time Helmut's breath wholly collapsed a part of the outer part that was directly hit.

Without even any time to shudder at that, Helmut turned his cloudy dragon

eyes to below. Just with that, the miasma he was clad with crystallized as though it had substance—no, he was taking in the surrounding rain and crystallized it. It turned into twisted and warped spears and they became an excessively vicious squall that showered the ground.

In respond, Kuwaibel climbed to the sky and created a meteor shower. The swarm of light bullets met the spear of black rain that could be mistaken as black crystal and they neutralized each other, but the shooting that could even be thought as infinite was gradually making the interception not making it in time.

『Anti-air firearms control all free! Intercept them!』

Sabas's command caused the pillars and outer walls everywhere in the palace, and the garden and rooftop to let out anti-air weapons and they fired. The flare bombs that were included with the ration of one every dozens of shots colored the stormy sky. Those high caliber weapons splendidly destroyed the black rain spear that Kuwaibel didn't manage to deal with.

『All retainers-. Save our friends!』

Kuwaibel called out using the slight leeway that was created. The dragons who received the king's divine protection simultaneously scattered to the city. They were going to save their friends—the people who were late in evacuating.

『The resupply is finally finished. Sky battlecraft force, we are returning to the front line now!』

『Averia also can move!』

『Rozeria is all ok too-. We're reinforcing Kuwaibel-sama!』

Avenst's main force that had used up most of their ammo in the battle against the defense fleet now returned to the battlefield. The most elites among elites that Bovid personally picked up danced to the sky, Averia and Rozeria also had finished the minimum resupply and headed toward Helmut.

『This is Higgs squad. We are composed of planes loaded with Sythesizer. We are joining under the command of Avenst sky battlecraft force. Cooperation will be difficult, but give us instruction as you please!』

『This is battlecraft launching control room. The firearm control of the harbor is under control. Now reinforcing!』

The sky battlecraft force of Qwailent was flying toward the direction of Bovid and others. With the exception of the sky battlecraft squad that was deploying barrier, planes that could attack using sound wave were gathered up to form this improvised force. The person who seemed to be the leader was like a completely different person than a certain someone just a bit of time ago.

At the same time, the anti-air weapons that were installed at the military port area aimed their turret toward Helmut all at once.

—Without any distinction of enemy or ally, all people took each other's hand in order to live for tomorrow.

『.....Insects.』

Helmut's voice rang for the first time. It was faint, but the voice was definitely filled with something like "displeasure".

『Perish.』

Helmut's breath was fired once more.

Kuwaibel flew up and cut in on the line of fire. He similarly fired his breath. Jet black and extreme light clashed above the palace, the barrier of the palace was fiercely rippling just from the after shock.

『Guh, uguh』

Kuwaibel leaked out a pained voice. The extreme light was gradually getting pushed back. His strength was genuinely that of a grown up dragon, but he wasn't a match against Helmut.

『Synthesizer, activate!!』

『Averia, Rozeria, fire the main cannon at the same time!』

Qwailent's sky battlecraft force evaded the black rain spear while emitting weakening sound wave at Helmut. At the same time, Averia and Rozeria fired their main cannon. Two streak of flashes joined Kuwaibel's breath and assaulted Helmut like a trident.

But,

GOU-

Black miasma exploded. The whirling miasma bloated up so much it caused such vision, the sound wave and also the airship's main cannon were blown away altogether. In addition, Helmut's breath that drastically swelled up swallowed the extreme light.

『No way-, he is still holding back!?!』

What Kuwaibel could do was immediately forming barrier with maximum power. The barrier of light formed in front of his body blocked the breath's direct hit and it raised a scream. Kuwaibel couldn't even hover and he was getting pushed toward the ground.

『Your back is wide open yeah-』

『Concentrated fire!』

Bovid and Sabas carried out attack like surging waves. Numerous missiles rushed Helmut.

But,

『Wha-. Goddamn it!』

『Controlling weather.....it's just like the legend.』

Countless tornados fell down from the sky. They spiraled and rolled up the flying missiles which were pulverized inside. Before the missiles could reach their target, all of them exploded inside the tornado and bloomed flowers of flame blast.

『Kuh. Ro, Roze-. Everyone-, get them away.....from the palace-』

『Kuwaibel!?!』

『The spring's power-, is already-』

The monarch dragon power that he stocked up from the【Spring of True Dragon's Tear】ran out. The halting words of Kuwaibel conveyed his strength's limit. The power he poured into the barrier surpassed the limit to defend Helmut's breath. Kuwaibel's strength was decreasing just like water flowing into

a bucket that had a hole opened.

The aurora covering the city was already gone. He was genuinely just barely on his limit.....

『Kuwaibel-sama! Please take this!』

The barrier would be smashed. Just when everyone thought that, the next moment a missile ran toward Kuwaibel. It was an unexpected attack from ally, however, Kuwaibel didn't move. Rather, his eyes shined in happiness.

Roze was also feeling the same.

The reason was, because that voice,

『Jean-. You are safe!?!』

『Yes, your majesty. The others are also safe. As expected, I thought I was dead but, that crimson light——no, let's put that aside for now. Rather than that, it's improvised, but we prepared missile warhead filled with the spring water. I estimated that the water will have effect just by splashing it on Kuwaibel-sama's body, am I mistaken!?!』

Just what in the world happened.....the wounds of Jean and others were obviously in the level that was beyond help, but they seemed to be alive. And not just that, they seemed to reach the spring that was still opened and created improvised missiles to transport the spring water.

It seemed the explosive of the missiles that were impacting one after another had been reduced, they broke before Kuwaibel's dragon scales and splashed him with the water inside. Kuwaibel gave his thanks『I'm fine, thank you!』.

As though to show that the water was definitely the real thing, the strength of the weakening Kuwaibel was restored. The barrier recovered its radiance and his body that was pushed back returned to a hovering state. And then, he fired a breath of extreme light with his restored strength. The breath blasted away several tornados and without stopping it hit Helmut.

Furthermore, Cranks squad led by Bovid slipped through the route where the tornados vanished using miraculous maneuver and they fired their missiles. All those hit the area around Helmut's face and scattered grand flame blast and

shockwave.

『I don't know anything about your despair. For me who was born after everything was over, I cannot even imagine it sufficiently. But, however-, because you are my sibling-. I only understand that I have to end you no matter what!』

Kuwaibel charged with his body clad in light.

The only monarch dragon in the world. He had a lot of people who were like family to him, but a sibling who was related to him by blood was only this fallen existence before his eyes. A howl that was like a scream surged that he was going to kill with his hand the older brother who he met for the first time since he was born.

Helmut's muddy dragon eyes that looked like it wasn't seeing anywhere caught Kuwaibel. There was no reply. Was his intelligence already unable to do that much? Or else had he abandoned it already as unnecessary?

Without caring of those questions, Kuwaibel performed a tackle of all his might toward his elder brother's body using his body that was clad in extreme light.

The sound of impact between fellow dragons was played, the friction was fierce and sparks scattered.

Helmut's body was distanced away from the palace. Without pause Kuwaibel tried to bite at Helmut's neck.

——GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

A violent shockwave attacked Kuwaibel. It was just a howl. Yet despite so, the extreme light covering Kuwaibel's body was blown away, Kuwaibel himself was also tasting an impact that paralyzed his whole body and he was blown away.

Kuwaibel formed countless light bullets and fired them while this time his claws lunged the moment their body passed each other.

『Gua!?!』

The dragon claws didn't even graze. The moment Kuwaibel swam in the air, Helmut's tail scythed down on his face like a counter.

Even while rotating once midair, Kuwaibel fired light bullets randomly, but they were erased by black rain spears that Helmut fired in twice the number, several spears smashed up Kuwaibel's dragon scales. The piercing black rain spears inflicted simple wound, and more than that they began to display the effect of causing necrosis to flesh.

Kuwaibel almost screamed spontaneously feeling the excessive pain, but he swallowed it and fired his breath. The radiance of extreme light was erased just with a shockwave from Helmut's howl.

『Kuwaibel-sama-』

『Fire the main——』

The sky battlecraft force, airship Rozeria and Averia, the people handling the anti-air weapon on the ground, everyone of them tried to help Kuwaibel somehow but,

——GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!

The evil dragon howl surged once more. But, this time it had slightly different disposition. At the same time with the howl, the miasma Helmut was clad in became ripple that spread through the battlefield. The effect was dramatic.

『aa.....』

『-』

What could be heard was such soundless screams. The sky battlecrafts were falling as though they were losing control. The movement of the airships was also turning simple and they showed no sign of firing their main cannon. The anti-air weapons on the ground also felt silent.

『Kuwa, ibel. The miasma is.....enveloping, everyone-.....』

Words from Roze barely reached Kuwaibel to inform him of what was happening.

Monarch dragon was an existence that bestowed divine protection to the people. Then, what would a fallen monarch dragon bestowed?

Despair. Terror. Nihilism that robbed the will.

Silver light vanished, in exchange black miasma coiled around the people. Everyone fell on their knees powerlessly. As though they were begging forgiveness at evil dragon Helmut.

『Everyone-』

『Everything perish.』

Kuwaibel tried to grant them divine protection in hurry, but Helmut didn't allow that. Countless black rain spears showered Kuwaibel's body, his dragon scales were smashed and his flesh gouged.

What he could do was only somehow making the falling sky battlecraft force to have emergency landing. Naturally, his divided concentration thinned down the defense of his own body and several spears jut out from his body.

Kuwaibel endured the scream that almost leaked out and he emitted extreme light from his whole body, erasing the spears.

Kuwaibel roared while charging forward. He swung his claws, but they were instantly dodged and he was struck down from overhead.

In that case, he pretended to tackle and just before they clashed he rolled, he then similarly unleashed a tail attack, but as expected it was easily dodged and his chest was tore apart with a diagonal claw slash.

He fired light bullets. The black rain spears doubled in number and attacked him.

He fired breath attack. It was returned back with double the might.

The attack from his claws and fangs, and also his tail, everything was overturned with counterattack.

His tackle with his body that was clad in extreme light wasn't even dodged anymore as though to show the difference of their level.

『-.....a.....guru-.....i』

His body was truly wounded all over.

Even though he had obtained the strength of grown up dragon, even if Helmut had lost his sanity, the full-fledged difference in experience was

cornering Kuwaibel. There was no way a young dragon who was born a few years ago could possibly match a veteran monarch dragon that had lived for a few hundred years.

It looked as though an adult was handling a child who was stubbornly charging ahead.

Helmut's gaze was averted from Kuwaibel as though he lost interest. Ahead of his gaze was the palace. The people who were gathered there.

『Don't-』

『Despair for the world. Serenity for the world without light.』

Helmut fired his breath.

Kuwaibel cut in on the line of fire with his torn up body.

『GAH, aAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!』

A shriek that couldn't be heard as scream or howl surged. The barrier was scattered away. Kuwaibel became the people's shield using his body. He desperately resisted and somehow damped down the attack's power, although he was unable to defend to the end and got blown away.

His back struck a corner of the palace and a part of the building collapsed. Buried under rubbles, the figure of Kuwaibel who was letting out repeated small breaths was atrocious even only seen from outside. There wasn't anywhere unharmed on his chest, the spot was hideously burned so much that anyone would spontaneously want to avert their eyes. It was hard to search for a spot on his body that still had unharmed dragon scales.

「Kuwaibel-. Ku-chan!!」

Roze who rushed toward him even while enveloped in black miasma leaped toward Kuwaibel who was half-buried under the debris. She was desperately pulling down the debris.

Presence of death descended from the sky.

「Evil dragon, Helmut-」

Helmut opened his jaw as though something like Roze's yell wasn't even

registered in his eyes. Light that would destroy everything was converging in the blink of eye.

gara- The sound of debris collapsing rang. At the same time extreme light surged out and formed many layers of barrier.

「Ku-chan!」

『I'm, fine, here. I'll, absolutely.....protect』

The horrifying black that looked like compressed from miasma became a streak of light and surged. The barriers of extreme light that Kuwaibel deployed splendidly blocked that personification of death.

Blood spray burst so grandly it felt like *pshew* sound could be heard. Kuwaibel firmly stepped on the ground on all four and he desperately maintained his barrier. But the more he held on, the more the wounds all over his body were spurting out blood.

Roze was at a loss for words. She felt frustrated, she hated herself who was unable to do anything, she merely stayed close beside her partner.

『Pointless.』

Helmut's cold voice could be heard.

『I, don't think so-』

Several layers of barrier were blown away. Kuwaibel emitted extreme light from his whole body while roaring as though he was burning his soul.

『Despair.』

『A king, absolutely won't despair-』

One more layer of barrier was smashed.

『Give up.』

『I won't, break my promise-. I won't, discard my mission-』

He had made a promise with his partner. He swore that he would become a king.

『Perish.』

『I'll live. With my life on the line. We will——』

Finally the last barrier creaked. Cracks entered it with ominous sounds.

But, there was no color of resignation in Kuwaibel's dragon eyes. He understood that at this rate he would die. There was also no other way left. However, his soul that he had already proclaimed out, that was the only thing that he couldn't betray!

That was why, at the very least he would roar. Toward the world, toward the evil dragon that was created by human's karma.

『I'll surpass you, and advance to the future ahead of this-!!!!』

The barrier bro——

『That's a wonderful howl. Blessing for that noble soul.』

He could hear a voice. A gentle voice that was warmth, that gave the impression of motherhood.

『Boy. Thou couldst not oppose an enemy of higher rank using strength. Look, avert it like this.』

『Eh? Aa.....』

Kuwaibel was enveloped by jet black light. It wasn't the black like Helmut's muddiness. If it had to be said, it was a magnificent black that reminded one of the night sky. It didn't hinder or paint over Kuwaibel's silver light. In harmony it displayed a blessing with radiance of black silver.

Perhaps what happened next was its effect. Inside Kuwaibel's brain, "the way to use strength" flowed in as image. Kuwaibel controlled his last barrier following the image, as though he was being guided.

Immediately, the barrier of light whirled fiercely, at the same time the barrier was angled. The whirling light scattered Helmut's breath from the tip of the direct hit, and then it was further vigorously averted toward empty sky.

The breath paused. Helmut's gaze ran toward unrelated direction as though he sensed the existence of an intruder.

『Come on, don't be in a daze boy. This place art a battlefield. Breath attack!』

『Fua!? Yes-』

The figure couldn't be seen, however that person's words floated inside his brain. Kuwaibel who didn't understand what was going on immediately obeyed. He released a breath of extreme light toward Helmut who was looking another way.

『Now, fly up. Higher and higher, take Helmut's above! Know that in an air battle, the one below art the one in disadvantage.』

Kuwaibel flew up, ignoring the pain all over his body. He only maintained his breath attack while flying up to far above.

Helmut dispelled the attack with a howl as though it was only an annoyance. And then, he fired a breath at Kuwaibel.

『Be conscious of gravity. Grasp the wind caressing thy wings. If thou art a race that rule the sky, don't fly with only thy power. The nature there art exactly our greatest ally.』

『Be conscious of gravity. Grasp the wind. The nature is exactly our ally.』

Images were flowing in. He descended in a straight line toward the approaching breath while his wings moved slightly to grasp the wind and changed the flow. Just with that Kuwaibel's body spiraled unbelievably and he dodged the breath as though it was skimming his back.

Kuwaibel descended beside the breath with fierce momentum as though his own body became a counter.

『Read the future. How wouldst he react against thy speed, physique, and eye motion? Go toward that future.』

『Read the future. My attack, where will it head to?』

What emerged on his brain was the replay of the happening from just now. An imagination of smooth evading motion overlapped with Helmut in the real world like an illusion. Kuwaibel matched his movement with the illusion Helmut that was starting to move, and he swung his claws ahead of that.

『-.....』

The claws of Kuwaibel that passed through Helmut without decelerating were

smearred with Helmut's broken scale and blood. When he changed his wings' angle just like his imagination, his direction changed drastically at the same time with an intense centrifugal force.

There, Helmut launched countless spears of black rain.

『Read the line of fire. It's also important to conduct oneself so there wouldst be no one to cover behind thy back. Accurately move with necessary amount, to the necessary place, at the necessary time. Charging forward, or taking role as shield in self-sacrifice, they art not something to be used recklessly.』

Kuwaibel took a sharp turn because he understood that Helmut would attack when he exposed an opening after dealing an attack. There was nothing behind Kuwaibel's back after he turned. If there wasn't any need to protect anything, he could easily endure things like the black rain spears with just several shots of light bullet.

The "way of fighting" was conveyed to him one after another. Completely different from his shoddy fighting before this when he would defend right from the front when he was attacked, or how he would go in a straight line when attacking, his maneuver right now that was accompanied with "tactic" was increasing Helmut's wound by one, and then one more.

In proportion with the number of wound, glimpses of irritation were starting to be faintly visible from Helmut.

Tornados were falling down as though to block Kuwaibel's route, but he used even those whirling winds and nimbly danced in the sky. His flying skill that was gradually getting polished was finally turning into something that could even evade the black rain spears without him needing to use light bullet.

Helmut's gaze went away from Kuwaibel and turned into the palace once more. That was because he knew that if he attacked there, then Kuwaibel would be forced to defend them.

『Boy, thou understand correct? Teach him what art the cost of taking off his eyes from the enemy in the battlefield.』

『Yes, yes-, Haha-ue!』

『o, Ou.....oh no, this art the first time I'm called as mother.....』

It seemed the voice was agitated, but Kuwaibel who reflexively called like that from his subconscious was already in concentrating state. He was focusing his light in his mouth, however, it was slightly different from before.

The breath of extreme light was fired *DOU-*. It shook the air. Helmut ignored the attack as though to say that it had been demonstrated that he wouldn't be seriously damaged from that, he was about to release his breath toward the palace——

『——, ii!? Gaa!?』

The extreme light pierced Helmut's chest. The breath was thin, it was compressed until the extreme limit, furthermore the breath was added with spiraling motion in order to increase its penetrating power. Without pause Kuwaibel moved his breath in a mowing motion.

Helmut avoided getting his body bisected because he immediately twisted his body, but the spot from his chest until his shoulder blade was wholly cut apart. One of his arms was dangling down limply, it was in a state where it was connected only by a bit of flesh and skin.

Helmut turned his gaze toward Kuwaibel with naked hatred,

『GUR YAH!!』

『-』

He opened his eyes wide toward the jaw of Kuwaibel who had already approached until before his eyes. Kuwaibel was firing his piercing breath while approaching. Helmut whose stance was broken didn't have the leisure to evade that, Kuwaibel's jaw snapped at one of his wings.

Without pause Kuwaibel rolled midair and bit off the wing with a twist.

A shriek rang out from Helmut for sure this time. Kuwaibel used his rotating motion and launched a tail attack that was fully filled with centrifugal force. He struck down the shrieking Helmut to the ground.

『That attack art not bad. Now, boy. Hone thy mind keenly. The might of thy breath doesn't rely only on energy. Possess a strong heart. Unshakeable will, resolve, they art what make a dragon's howl(breath) powerful!』

『Yes, Haha-ue.I'm finishing this, brother.』

Extreme light illuminated the world. He could imagine the way to knead power. Because he received the guidance from the warm existence.

The chest of Kuwaibel who was bending his body greatly backward was getting bigger, Helmut looked up to the sky from the ground. The dragon eyes that contained iron will crossed the dragon eyes of despair and hatred.

Right after that, a streak of extreme light pierced toward the ground, like the judgment of heaven. It fiercely shook the floating island and enveloped Helmut.

The world was illuminated by light of aurora.

The extreme light that pierced the floating island also opened a big hole in the sea of clouds and pierced toward the lower world.

And then.....

The extreme light vanished into empty air. After that there was nothing remaining.

The body of Kuwaibel who was unsteadily flying powerlessly was gradually getting smaller while he returned toward Roze's position.

「Ku-chan!」

『Rozeeee』

By the time he returned at Roze's position, Kuwaibel had completely returned to his former size. Roze hugged such Kuwaibel to her chest.

「You are amazing-. You are cool-. You are without a doubt, the greatest king! You are the pride of dragon kingdom.」

Roze rubbed her cheek on Kuwaibel while trickling tears. Kuwaibel also pressed his cheek fawningly. And then, they stared at each other while listening to the people who were rushing toward them while noisily raising joyful cheers. They grinned widely at each other.

「You did it, partner-」

『I did it, partner!』

Both of them were so wounded to the degree it was unthinkable that they

were royalty. But, for the people who were rushing toward them, they were unmistakably king. The people of the dragon kingdom couldn't help but shedding tears toward the one human and one dragon cuddling close at each other.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned toward the people together.

And then,

Flash surged.

It rushed toward the two, like the judgment from heaven.

「aa」

『Roze-』

Roze was dumbfounded. Kuwaibel could do nothing but calling her name. Death illuminated the two, the scythe of the death god was swung down.

「To lose focus even though the dark cloud art not even clearing up.....that's a great reduction on thy point, boy.」

With extremely thick black flash overhead, when anyone realized, a beautiful woman wearing an outfit that was a blending of eastern and western——Tio Claus was there with one hand raised up.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

When I gave up making scene of quick peerlessness, for some reason Ku-chan came out to the front.

Shirakome's plot generally isn't breathing.....

Now then, it has become the last day of this year.

Various thing happened through this year, but I think that it was mainly a fun year.

I believe that uploading in Narou, and then getting healed by the harmony

that everyone of Narou people showed me are surely a big reason of that.

Really, thank you very much for this year.

Regarding the extra compilation of Arifureta, there are still characters that I want to write.

And so I'm thinking that next year too I want to continue and post Arifureta.

I'm thinking that next year too I'll be able to have fun again with everyone of Narou people, so please take care of me.

My objective for next year is decidedly "to keep my words".

Also, I'm thinking if only I can write some kind of new story...

I still don't have any plot, but what I can say with certainty is, it will be a full throttle of Shirakome's hobby similar like Arifureta, and above all it will surely be an opportunism story that Shirakome can enjoy.

If it please you, I'll be happy if we can enjoy ourselves together again.

Well then all of you Narou people, have a good year.

I look forward to working with you again next year!

Tomorrow I will upload the last chapter of Tio arc. The subtitle will be "To the Morning of Falling Star". I'm thinking that perhaps subtitle "The Day the Demon God was Born" will be fine too, but it felt like it will overlap with a certain Geass person so I altered it.

I won't specify the time. Because I get the feeling it will be overlap of objective with early New Year.

But, even saying that, I'll give advance notice of just this.

I'll also upload the special New Year chapter. I haven't think of anything yet though!

Arifureta Chapter 246

Arifureta After II In the Morning of Falling Star

AN: Happy new year.

There was a beautiful barrier of whirling jet black color on the hand that Tio lifted up. That barrier blocked the extremely thick flash falling from the sky.

Although the flash's power was scattered, but the attack that possessed the power that rivaled even Kuwaibel's breath just now was making cracks on the barrier right away, but the barrier shined instantly and it was restored as though nothing had happened to it. The barrier recovered using regeneration magic. In front of the foul play that was an age of god magic, the divine punishment attack couldn't pass.

「Tio-sama!」

『Haha-ue!』

「U, uumu. Boy, thou art calling me Haha-ue extremely naturally like that. A~u~, somehow it's really embarrassing~」

Tio-san fidgeted. For Kuwaibel who didn't know his mother, Tio's great existence and her gentle guidance was truly like the mother inside his imagination. Therefore, he called her that from subconscious level, but Tio's attitude caused him to realize how he was calling her after this late and he also began to fidget around similarly.

So far as it went, the flash of death that could easily scatter away the average existence was still pouring down even now but.....it seemed that Serious-san was currently resting.

‘Oh Serious, come back!’ Even if such thing was said surely nothing would happen, but a change appeared at the same time when the flash vanished.

Miasma was gathering in the air where there was nothing.

The miasma that was gathering from every direction was gradually increasing in thickness and forming shape. Yes, it was forming dragon shape. The shape of Helmut!

『No way.....』

「Does this mean.....that Helmut is immortal?」

Roze and Kuwaibel were staring dumbfounded at Helmut who finished his revival inside the miasma.

「Uumu, as expected I don't think that he is immortal. Most likely, that too art one of his technique created from his power's true nature.」

Hearing Tio who was calmly analyzing the situation despite the despairing content of her talk caused the two to somehow recovered from their stupor.

And then, Kuwaibel tried to fly toward the【Spring of True Dragon's Tear】 impatiently. But, the cost of him forcing himself caused intense pain that attacked his whole body and he almost fell from Roze's arms. His wings convulsed and they were unable to move properly.

Tio smiled slightly seeing such Kuwaibel. Her hand reached out gently and she softly caressed Kuwaibel's head.

「Thou hath do thy best with that young body. Just as Roze-done said, thou were indisputably cool. That's why, rest already.」

『But.....』

Kuwaibel's gaze caught Helmut who was further taking in miasma from the surrounding. As a king, it was his duty to eradicate that, his gaze was appealing so.

「It's not that I don't understand thy feeling. But, at the very least this art too heavy of a burden for the current thou. Didst thou forget? In the first place it's my wish to get rid of that.」

Indeed, there was such talk. To say the truth, after annihilating the main fleets, Tio and Hajime were watching the fight against Helmut. From really far away with their figure and presence hidden.

As fellow dragon, as someone who was placed in the same circumstances, Tio wished to perform the last rites for him who had fallen and was now called an evil dragon. But, that wasn't something that Tio had to do by herself no matter what.

Just like how defeating the fleet was something that the black dragons ought to do, defeating Helmut as a king, or perhaps as a brother was originally something that Kuwaibel ought to do.

That was why, even after Hajime and Tio confirmed Helmut's existence, the two of them only watched Kuwaibel who began to fight without interfering. The two of them didn't even have grudge or hard feelings toward Helmut, they didn't even feel hostile toward him. Originally they had no reason to fight.

But, that Kuwaibel had already passed his limit. It was too impossible for him to face Helmut who was already stepping one foot into the domain of concept. Because it was like challenging a natural disaster.

「We will, be given salvation?」

Roze asked.

「No. It's not salvation. It's just, that this world art make to go along with Goshujin-sama's convenience.」

Tio answered like that.

Roze and Kuwaibel tilted their head. Behind the two of them, there were the figures of the people who although before this they were rushing while cheering, yet they witnessed the evil dragon's revival and stiffened in fear.

The words of curses were resounding once more into their ears.

——Perish.

——Suffer, gasp, despair

——There is no worth in living

——To be born is evil

——Everything be destroyed

——Nothingness is the very best choice

——Renew the world

——Die for the sake of creation

『Die』The curse echoed directly inside the brain. It was repeated over and over, reverberating inside as though to imprint into the mind. People who fell on their knees while holding their head appeared one after another. The miasma that was spreading around Helmut who had completely recovered his form was enveloping the people.

Perhaps——could it be that Helmut was the incarnation of the judgment that this world itself handed down? The will of the world responded to the hatred and despair of Helmut to bring punishment to the humans who broke the harmony of the world.

「A lot of your species were killed.」

Roze and others were gasping in agony in front of Helmut that was like the very will of the world itself, amidst such situation, such words suddenly could be heard.

「Even though you believed that the past should be able to be regained, yet your species was reduced into livestock instead.」

It wasn't Helmut's voice. It was a human, a man's voice. Even though the voice's volume was like a whisper, somehow it entered into the ears smoothly without getting drowned out by other sounds.

「Your important siblings were murdered, your trust was trampled underfoot.」

The curse of death was resounding even now inside the head. The people's agony didn't lessen. But, the people's gaze wandered around restlessly searching for that man's voice. Even though those were only words, for some reason they had a sense of presence that couldn't be ignored.

「Leave behind everything and depart to the end of the world. Even though you decided that, what you witnessed was the sight of your violated species and family.....」

‘Ah’, someone whispered. When they looked to the sky, there was a man

standing in the air while spreading crimson ripples.

That figure clad in crimson aura, standing with composure while his hands were staying still inside his pockets, the people's gaze was peeled off from Helmut and focused there. Helmut also turned his blank and muddy dragon eyes toward him——Hajime.

「There ain't any salvation huh. It was just too much huh. If you saw that kind of sight, of course you won't be able to stay sane. If it was me, I'm gonna curse the world for sure then.」

Hajime talked toward Helmut with a voice that conveyed emotion like sympathy and compassion, even gentleness could vaguely be felt from him.

Kuwaibel's gaze was directed toward his fallen brother. Roze directed a pained and guilty expression toward Helmut. The people too, their expression distorted at the karma of mankind that was thrust before them.

The meaning of the words that Roze said, that they would fight the world for the sake of future, there was no doubt that in this time they strongly felt its meaning for real.

Even now Helmut was continuously taking in miasma, it was unclear whether he was listening or not at Hajime's words. It was like a wordless accusation toward the whole world, that he absolutely wouldn't forgive them.

Toward such Helmut, Hajime showed a gentle smile that even gave impression of kindness——

「Anyway, die.」

And fired the shell of Schlagen AA that he had secretly charged up!

The crimson flash blown up Helmut-san's head with one shot!

Helmut-san, he worked hard regenerating his head!

There Agni Orkan dealt additional blow!

Total number of 1200 shots, heat of 3000 degree Celsius, pencil missiles where every single one possessed destructive power that equaled with anti-warship missile were rushing!

Helmut-san was in fully beaten up state with his regeneration only starting!

Flowers of crimson shockwaves and flame blasts were blooming profusely in the sky. All the people including Roze who were staring dumbfounded at that with their eyes half opened wide yelled with splendid synchronization.

「「「「「Anyway, how did that turn into this-!?」」」」」

The context of the beginning and end was fatally not meshing up. Or rather, what's with the gentle expression? What did 'anyway, die' mean!?

All people acted the straight-man without distinction of ally or enemy.

Hajime beautifully ignored the retort of those people in the ground as though nothing happened, with narrowed eyes he thoroughly observed Helmut who was repeatedly regenerating and destroyed. He operated Agni Orkan with one hand, and while showering the will of the world with blows, his other hand was supporting his chin while whispering things like「Hmm hmm, I see. As I thought the energy's circulation is like that.....」and so on.

——GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

A fierce roar was released from Helmut. The roar became shockwave that blew away the missiles and attacked toward Hajime and others like a tsunami. The shockwave was far more powerful than what he showed when fighting Kuwaibel before this.

Anyway, Hajime defended using space isolation barrier of Cross Velts.

Helmut further attacked with his breath. The scale was truly immense. The power surpassed the attack that Kuwaibel did with all his might.

Anyway, it was defended by multiple layer of Cross Velts' space isolation barrier.

『.....I, defended against that with my life on the line though』

「Ku, Ku-chan.....」

Even though he was a dragon, but Ku-chan's eyes turned into dead fish eyes. Even though he was a dragon.....

While everyone was leaking out strange voice「UBOoa」from their mouth

seeing the barrier that easily blocked the attack that could easily destroy a country, the mouth of Hajime who was focused in observing Helmut was gradually distorting into a widee~~ grin.

It was as though a fun fun time would start soon. Like a kid that was given a toy right before his eyes.

「I can see it, the mechanism of this world's cycle. I grasp it already now, the true nature of dragon core energy. Now, I'll clear one of mankind's grand problem.」

The interest of Hajime who was whispering with small voice was already veered away from Helmut and moved toward another different something. Although, the one who sensed that was only Tio, so the other people who saw Hajime smiling like a demon in front of Helmut's breath were drawing back from him.

「Tio. Is it really okay that it's not you who do it?」

「Yes. I only wish that this pitiful existence art ended already. It's a bit hard for me because of the transformation into dragon god mode. I wouldst leave it to Goshujin-sama.」

Hajime who confirmed for the last time took out his gatling pile bunker. The electromagnetically accelerated super heavy giant stake couldn't hope to have its trajectory averted with just the like of a mere roar's shockwave.

Furthermore, the amount of stakes was like a barrage. Sure enough, just how much Helmut could dodge.....

「As I thought, it's that kind of method huh. Evil dragon Helmut, I got it already you know? You aren't here right?」

In opposite with Hajime's calm whisper, a commotion occurred on the ground. That was something that couldn't be helped. After all, Helmut dispersed before he got hit by the attack.

That was exactly the true nature of Helmut's power. It wasn't a power to manipulate weather or to make black rain rained down.

It was the power to manipulate the negative energy itself with dragon core as

the basis. That was exactly the true nature of power Helmut was awakened at the end of his despair and hatred. The negative energy running rampant in the broken world granted Helmut power that was almost nearly infinite. He could even condense negative energy and formed shape with it remotely from distant position.

「Just how that kind of existence can be defeated.....」

Roze whispered in despair.

It was truly immortality. No matter what kind of attack it faced, it could easily recover by disintegrating the negative energy. No matter how much damage it received, the body here was just a temporary flesh.

It felt like Helmut was laughing.

Hajime-san laughed mo~~re.

「Yoo, do you have any time for smirking like that huh?」

Hajime raised one of his hands casually. He held out one finger and pointed to the sky.

Lured by that gesture, the people, and also Helmut looked up to the sky. What was there was naturally only the black clouds created from condensed negative energy——

『.....』

「Tha, that's?」

Helmut stared intently at the dark clouds. Roze whispered in astonishment. The people were speechless with their eyes turned into dot.

A spot in the sky looked burning red. At first it was only faintly. But it was gradually getting bigger, dazzling.....

GOU-

The dark cloud was blown away. The reason was one.

「You better remember this. If you are going to put on air giving a divine punishment, then do it like this.」

From the sky behind Hajime, that was falling diagonally with brilliant radiance.

The thing that was freefalling from outside the stratosphere had only its trajectory corrected using gravity control.....

——Meteor Impact

The evil dragon had the same definition like a natural disaster? Very well. Then, this side too would oppose using cataclysm.

The gigantic stone with a diameter that could reach fifty meter was blazing bright red and descended from the sky. It caused Helmut to stiffen for a moment.

Naturally, that moment was fatal. The meteor blasted away the whole energy body of Helmut and descended to the ground. It was fortunate that its flying trajectory that was pulled by gravity was diagonal. It was totally unthinkable that the floating island would be safe if it got hit by that.

Without pause the meteorite's shockwave blew away the sea of clouds in radial shape, and it dropped on the land at faraway.

The world quaked severely. Although the falling speed was adjusted to a certain degree which damped its strength, this was a fifty meter giant stone that fell from outside the stratosphere. That impact was impossible to measure, a giant cloud mushroom materialized. Because of that, the sea of clouds was getting further blown away in circle shape.

If there was anyone observing, surely they would witness the land turned inside up and undulated with many protrusions.

Helmut gathered miasma and revived.

No matter how out of mind the destructive power the attack possessed, as long as this world was filled with negative energy, he would be able to create energy body as many as he wanted. Yes, Helmut glared fiercely at Hajime as though declaring that but,

「I didn't say that's the end of it you know?」

The cloudy sky was lighting up with lights one after another. The brightly burning red specks were appearing everywhere in the cloudy sky!

Roze and others went pale. They were in a stupor at the phenomenon that

was out of common sense, but in front of the calamity that would happen after this, blood left their face right away and they drew back.

——Demon King-style Harassment 108 “Wish Upon a Star”

Now everyone, let’s make a wish! Wish so that you can survive!

What was being done was simple. A random pounding of meteor impact. Meteors of various sizes at outside the stratosphere were thrown out, their trajectory and speed were adjusted using gravity control and they were turned into a suitable meteor shower. If a mistake was made then the planet would be totally broken with this lovely harassment!

The meteor shower that broke through the dark clouds blew away the dark clouds in the sky one after another with the shockwave they scattered in their wake.

The land below was plowed by incessant earthquakes and impacts, gigantic tsunamis were generated on the seas.

Surely if this planet was seen from the space, sea of clouds that became riddled with holes and mushroom clouds rising up in succession could be seen at half the surface of the planet.

Helmut’s energy body was blown away and resurrected, then it was blown away again and resurrected again. There was no way it had any time to attack back or anything, even when it tried to call tornado from the dark clouds, those dark clouds were blown away and dispersed.

The negative energy was also blown away by the heat wave and shockwave, the miasma’s convergence was gradually turning unsteady.

「Is it soon?」

As though in respond to Hajime’s whisper, a faint howl was thundering. From very far distance, something that was emitting a presence that would overshadow even Helmut’s energy body before this was approaching with absurd speed.

It was the appearance of the main body. The energy body couldn’t be formed, the sea of clouds and the dark clouds too were also blown away, and currently

the planet itself was in the progress of being destroyed. Those facts caused the main body to finally come out. The pressure that could be felt even with the distance was so much it felt like it could possibly rival Tio's black god dragon mode.

And so, Hajime responded with concentrated fire of meteor impact.

A part of the meteor shower that was diversely scattering toward all over the world tilted their route and flew toward the same direction.

——GURYAAAAAAAAA-!!

A roar thundered

——GAAAAAAAAA-!!

A howl resounded once more.

——GU, GURYAAAA-!!

A howl was radiating.....

——aAAAAAAAAA-!!

Was that, a howl?

Just how much distance he had advanced through with how much speed? Helmut's real body that finally showed up clad in miasma——somehow it was really beaten up.

『Kill-, Kill-, Kill-』

「Ooh, aren't you really emotional there」

Killing intent and hatred surged accompanied with physical pressure. A breath was fired from Helmut.

It was returned back by the variable chakram's gate. A roar (?) 'GYAAAAAAAAAAH' reverberated.

Perhaps the real body's gathering rate was different with the energy body, because Helmut gathered negative energy directly from super wide range and healed his wounds. And then, attempting close range if his long range attack got returned, he tried to bite at Hajime with super acceleration from his hovering state.

And so, Hajime was,

「Oi oi, you sure? Isn't there something important over there?」

After saying such thing, a part of the meteor shower changed direction again. Helmut didn't care and approached to kill Hajime, but he instantly noticed that the flying giant rocks passed through overhead and they were flying toward the direction faraway behind him. He got taken aback suddenly and he changed his route rapidly.

Like that, when he fired his breath toward the giant rock, that giant rock was splendidly blasted into pieces midair. A killing intent incomparable with before was released.

Helmut who turned around focused on Hajime once more——and his eyes opened wide at the meteor shower that was changing route one after another.

『GAAAAAAAAAAAAAH』

An extra loud howl surged, Helmut concentrated on shooting down the meteor shower using his breath. Even so there was times when he didn't make it in time. At that time he would perform tackle with his body to divert the meteor's trajectory at any rate.

Seeing Helmut who seemed somewhat desperate,

「What's the matter? Why aren't you dodging? It's like you are protecting something there. Right, for example, the place where your sibling's dragon core is enshrined perhaps?」

Those words resounded extremely clearly. They smoothly entered into the people's ears through the scream of the severely quaking world.

Like that, the people guessed. Why didn't Helmut dodge the meteor shower? In the first place, even though the meteor shower was flying from far beyond, why did he get hit during the way until here until he got that beaten up?

There was one reason for that. Because behind Helmut——in the place where he was hiding, the dragon core of his sibling who was sacrificed to become the energy source of the mother ship Avenst before was enshrined there. Helmut wouldn't allow the memento of his sibling to be lost because of the meteor

impact.

In other words,

「.....He is taking hostage, no, memento hostage?」

Yes, exactly. Hajime-san took hostage the important treasure of Helmut. 'It's fine even if you dodge the meteor impact you know? But, the important thing behind you will return back into dust though?' Like that.

Hearing Roze's words, the people slowly returned their gaze at Hajime.

Over there, fighting against the evil dragon who wished for mankind's destruction, was a devil who was making a truly wicked smile while firing meteor shower one after another.

Evil dragon? No no, compared to him who was shooting down meteor shower while desperately trying to protect his important thing, that guy who was carrying out world scale destruction while viciously beating his opponent in a situation that couldn't be escaped from was far more evil.

For this world, Helmut was an existence that should even be called as the representative of this world's will. That was to say he was an existence that was equal with god. Then, that person who was trampling underfoot that god was.....

Devil? Noo, he wasn't in a level that still had lovable nature like that.

Demon king? He was similarly a king like the queen-sama and monarch dragon-sama who was risking their life to protect the people? Seriously stop that comparison.

The heart of the people was magnificently synchronized at that time.

That thing, clad in crimson, destroying the world, that thing which was trampling down evil with even more evil and irrationality was.....

「「「「「.....A demon god.」」」」」

That day, the legend of demon god was born in the world of sky.

『UNFORGIVABLE-. UNFORGIVABLE-!!』

Evil dragon Helmut-san who was already wounded all over struck at Hajime

with intense killing intent and hatred but,

「I don't need any forgiveness. Die.」

Something cast a shadow. What appeared from the sky was a super giant rock with diameter around 500 meters.

Helmut immediately became hidden in the shadow of the giant meteor and disappeared from view. What's left then was only a scream of death agony, and a severe earthquake that reverberated through the world, and then.....

『Something like this, is just too muchhh』

Only such words filled with grief from Ku~chan.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The first day of the year. Shirakome who is immediately guilty.

Sorry.

Just a bit more, I'm reflecting back on the pace.

Arifureta Chapter 247

New Year Special After Story The Scene of a Mundane New Year (Limited to Nagumo Family)

AN: I barely made it, to post the New Year chapter.

It's short, but please enjoy it if you will.

「Flatten! Flatten! Become tas~ty! Flat! Desuu!」

「Flatten! Flatten! Become tas~ty! Flat! Nano!」

It was the early afternoon of the New Year's Day where there was clear air and transparent sunlight showering down the world.

Such enthusiastic shouts were resounding in a corner of Nagumo family's garden. The voices' owners were Shia who was sporting a wide smile with her rabbit ears hopping up and down, and Myuu who was sporting the same wide smile while wearing rabbit ear hair band that was made to hop up and down.

Both of them were currently in the middle of pounding mochi.

By the way, Myuu's rabbit ear hair band was a high level item that wasn't inferior in texture or appearance compared to the real thing.

The raw materials were supplied by Yue. It was an item where Yue's skill shined from her putting all her heart into producing animal ear hair band because once Shia's rabbit ears stolen Hajime's attention. Myuu was looking enviously at Shia's rabbit ears, so Yue created it once more and gave it to Myuu.

That rabbit ears that was endlessly close to the real thing, just from where in the world Yue procured it from.....

Yue who borrowed the compass and crystal key from Hajime and then returned after thirty minutes later were holding rabbit ears that weren't even

bundled in her hand. Surely she had just gone to a place like a specialist shop for animal ear.

Even if for example right after the gate was opened and the scenery that could be seen at the other side resembled the abyss of【Orcus Great Labyrinth】, even if the grasped rabbit ears were sometimes twitching, even if there was a drop of red of something on Yue's cheek, there was no doubt that the item was purchased from a specialist shop.

Even if for example-, for a while Shia folded her rabbit ears flat on her head as though protecting it while she was directing a terrified gaze at Yue, or even if Inaba who they finally met after a long time was shocked when he saw the rabbit ear hair band equipped on Myuu's head, but if it was said that it was a purchased item then that was a purchased item, the end!

「He, hey, both of thee. It's fine that thou art singing rhythmically, but couldst not thou relax the pace and strength? From a while ago, mine hands art sometimes flattened here.」

Tio were giving a warning toward Shia and Myuu who were pounding mochi harmoniously like a real sisters, while her voice sounded pained, but strangely excitement could also be felt from it.

Tio received the role to turn over the mochi inside the millstone, but it was just as she said, since before this her hands were flattened several times. Even now Shia and Myuu weren't holding back in their mochi pounding. They were swinging down the weight of war hammer as it was.

「What are you doing, Tio-san. Please turn over the mochi quickly!」

「Nano! Mochi pounding is a fight against time nano! Tio-oneechan, do it properly!」

「E, a, yes.」

Tio put in her hands in hurry to turn over the mochi.

「Flatten-desuu!」

「Ah!? Shia! Thou, just now, thou purposefully——」

「Flatten-nano!」

「Higii!? Myuu!? Why didst thou swing down just now!?!」

Flatten-flatten! *Ah!*? Flatten-flatten-! Ahiih!?

The mochi and hands were changing shape properly along with the rhythmically cute words. Tio's interlude that sometimes got in between produced a nice flavor.

「Oh man~, pounding mochi suited Shia-chan really well. As expected from a rabbit. Myuu-chan's appearance of mochi pounding rabbit-chan is also really cute.」

「Totally. If only there isn't a pervert who is putting both hands on ground while making expression of ecstasy between them, I'll want to preserve this scene in recording.」

In respond to the words of Shuu who was sipping tea on veranda, Hajime was also sipping tea while agreeing (?). Both of them couldn't put in boorish retort, whether toward the pervert who finally entered and took out both her hands, or about how what was used to pound mochi was a war hammer that had soaked in the blood of innumerable enemies, all those points were ignored in this New Year mood.

The two who averted their gaze from the rabbit ear duo and the pervert turned their eyes toward another corner of the spacious garden.

Over there was also a scenery that was really like New Year event.

「Aa!? Yue! Just now, you absolutely used gravity magic there! That's foul!」

「.....A cruel false accusation. If you are talking about foul play, then it's Kaori's foul play by the time you use two racket style in this battledore.」(TN: Battledore=early form of badminton racket)

The two who faced each other with moderate distance in between were Kaori and Yue. The hand of the two was holding battledore racket. What they were doing since just now while noisily quarreling with each other was Japanese badminton.

「This isn't foul play! There is no rule forbidding using two rackets. But, using magic is obviously a foul play right?」

「.....What is called a rule, is something decided by one's own strength!」

「It's useless even if you said it with that posed look!」

Kaori-san serve! *whoosh*- The shuttlecock that made an uncommon sound cut through the sky. An average human would be unable to react against that speed without doubt! Its angle was also the same!

But, the shuttlecock was rapidly decelerating in front of Yue, it was slowly advancing as though in slow motion.

「.....This is my zone. Eat this, Heavy Shottt!」

「That's why, that's just gravity magic! Uu, in that case I too.....here I go, try stopping this! God Speed Shottt!」

When Yue fired a heavy smash using gravity magic, Kaori hit back while at the same time firing a smash of god speed that shortened the arrival time.

Kaori-san grinned complacently seeing the shuttlecock passing through beside Yue. However, Yue-sama wasn't that naïve.

「.....There is no such thing as blind spot for me!」

「Ah, using Divine Existence is seriously unfair!」

Using instantaneous space teleportation, Yue appeared in front of the shuttlecock that had passed through. She ignored Kaori's protest forthrightly and hit back the shuttlecock. The shuttlecock ascended high to the sky. Yue lifted the corner of her lips. It was obvious what she was thinking.

(You are planning to drop it from above with super gravity aren't you!? I won't let that!)

Kaori leaped up. Like a wild eagle! A down smash attacked Yue from above!

Yue's racket sparked.

「.....Lightning Dragon Shottt!」

The shuttlecock howled! The shuttlecock was clad in lightning at the same time with the impact, it then flew while simultaneously turning into lightning dragon with the jaws opened wide!

「Naïve, how naïve, Yue!」

Kaori's racket was tinged with silver light. With superb moderation of power, disintegration ability erased only the lightning dragon just before it could hit Kaori and hit back the shuttlecock!

Magic(shuttlecock) was flying wildly about, the players were moving around with god speed, or instant teleportation, secretly magic was simply fired! Between times, disparagement like「.....Idiot Kaoriii」or「Bird-brain Yueee」also gushed out.

「The two of them are really getting along huh.」

「Well, I won't deny that. Perhaps because of the automatic regeneration or miraculous recovery magic, year by year their quarrel is turning more extreme, but the two of them also go shopping together normally though.」

Chudon-! Dokan-! While listening to the harmonious Japanese badminton game that gave out such impact sounds, the father and son sipped their tea. Hajime nonchalantly released artifact for countermeasure against the neighborhood.

When Shuu and Hajime closed their eyes partly at the air of New Year and the comfortable shockwave, joyful voices 'kyaa kyaa' resounded from inside the room behind them.

「Ahahah, look look! My mercenary group succeeded in their surprise attack again! My funds get tripled as the success reward!」

「Wh, why is it only Sumire-okaasama who get into good square.....as for me, I lost even my home already. Even though I'm a princess, even though, I'm a princess.....」

「Li, Lily.....how pitiful. To receive this treatment even in the world of board game. Compared to that, Remia-san who is steadily succeeding in starting business is terrifying. My position got overtaken before I realized it.」

「My my, what to do. I get a child again. This time it's a twin. Everyone, please give me two million each for the celebratory gift. Ufufu」

Sumire, Liliana, Shizuku, and then Remia were amusing themselves with Game of Life Tortus version. It was a revised edition where Japanese language was used in every aspect of it, starting from the money's denomination.

The manufactured was a mysterious character called South Cloud. It was a moderate sized board, but it was an artifact class game that made use of status plate function, so the squares' content would be changed along with the players matching with the established vocation. Just like status plate, above the white board there were the squares and pawns floating up. (TN: Nagumo was formed from the kanji of 'south' and 'cloud')

Due to the fact that people could have simulated experience of a life possessing a vocation they dreamed of, this was an extremely popular game that was selling like crazy in Tortus through Yunker Company. (TN: Yunker is the name of an energy product in Japan. Also I tried looking back at the early chapters and found out about Motto Yunker, I totally forget about this character until now. I wonder if any of you still remember him? He is a leader of a merchant group Hajime met in Tortus. Aside from his name Yunker that is like energy drink, the name Motto also meant 'more' in Japanese. So this guy's name means 'more Yunker'. Remember this kids, this will come out in test)

An artifact class game was selling in great amount.....

That fact caused the top brasses of every country and every organization to hold their head altogether in great perplexity.

Back to the topic.

Currently, Sumire became a leader of a mercenary group and devoted herself to the extreme of wickedness.....she was managing her work favorably. Liliana became the princess of a ruined country and she wandered aimlessly to every place, Shizuku was achieving success as an adventurer within limitation, while Remia became a wealthy merchant that contended for the top spot even in Fuhren.

By the way, Remia already had eight children. And then, right now it seemed she made her ninth and tenth children. She was demanding celebratory gift with bright smiling face.

Sumire was saying「Congratulations! I'll wish you well for in reality too okay!」 while handing over the celebratory money, Shizuku was handing over her due while smiling wryly from looking beside her, and Liliana was whispering「.....I cannot pay, the celebratory money. Large money like two million, how would

I..... Ahaha, getting loan isn't it. Even though I'm a princess, even though, I'm a princess.....」.

It seemed Liliana finally became a princess in debt.

「How peaceful.」

「Really.」

When Shuu whispered in earnestness, Hajime then agreed in earnestness. They sipped their tea.

But, at that time, Sumire while being a leader of a mercenary group happily yelled「Oh my, dear me, I finally get married!」. Shuu's ears twitched in reaction.

It seemed that spring also came even for the strongest mercenary group leader.

Suddenly, or possibly with the feeling of escapism, the princess in debt asked Sumire.

「Come to think of it, how did Sumire-okaasama met with Shuu-otousama? As expected, was it developed through hobby?」

「My, how sudden. What's the matter Lily-chan?」

「Err, just a curiosity. Because of my status, I never have a common meeting, my meeting with Hajime-san was also unique, so I'm wondering what kind of meeting Okaasama and Otousama had.」

「I see. Indeed, the way of meeting of everyone other than Kaori-chan and Shizuku-chan wasn't normal isn't it.」

Sumire opened her mouth with the BGM of shockwaves and explosions, and then the shout of「Flatten!」and the coquettish voice「Ahh!?」. She squinted her eyes in nostalgia and talked while looking at faraway.

「Yes, it was at an intensely cold shrine in New Year. I and Shuu who at that time didn't know each other——infiltrated the shrine while cosplaying as priest and shrine maiden.」

「A not normal meeting suddenly appeared!?」

Liliana's first retort of the year exploded. Even the smiling goddess Remia, or

Shizuku whose selling point was her cool and collected attitude were similarly making twitching face.

「That was really a surprise. I who was a high schooler at that time wanted to work as a shrine maiden even for just once at the shrine that was an anime's holy ground. While the shrine was bustling with the New Year event, I nonchalantly cosplayed as a shrine maiden and worked diligently as a guide for the visitor. And then you see, I discovered a priest-san who was obviously a student leaning on a pillar with a posed look. He was then immediately got found out by the real priest-san where next he desperately made excuse.」

「I already don't understand from where I should retort here.」

Lily-chan's polite language was crumbling. She looked at Shizuku and Remia looking for help, but the two of them averted their gaze quickly.

Shuu's ears were twitching.

「The shrine's authorized people who noticed the uproar gathered, and then I who nonchalantly pretended to be shrine maiden also got exposed. Both of us prostrated ourselves right away. We thought of getting through this by making a prostration that would make the other side creeped out.」

「Trying to getting through uproar by prostrating.....that's a story that I had heard somewhere. Is that Nagumo family's traditional skill I wonder?」

Hajime's ears were twitching. Was it Hajime's misunderstanding that he was feeling Shizuku's gaze on the back of his head?

「However, there was one problem. It's fine already so just go home——our cosplay's level was too high to draw out those words!」

「What did you say~」

「Remia-chan! Nice interjection there!」

Remia-san had perfectly grasped how the mother-in-law's rhythm was working.

From the story of the chipper Sumire, it seemed their costume was extremely close to the real thing and the people in authority mistaken them as the real thing. They were interrogating the two just from where they obtained the

costume.

Like that, Shuu who at that time was gradually getting irritated finally said something like this.

——It ain't priest clothing! It's my plain clothes! It only looks similar accidentally, I'm wearing it as everyday clothes! You got a problem with my fashion sense!?

It seemed he forgot the fact that he was prostrating and he even tried to make the fact that he was infiltrating into nothing.

「The moment I heard that, I was laughing and rolling around with my hands holding my stomach while thinking this. Yosh-, I'll marry this person! Like that!」

「「「Why did it become like that!?!」」」

While the straight-man act of Liliana and others was exploding, at the veranda Shuu was covering his face with both hands and rolling around on the floor. It seemed he was overheating with shame that his black history was exposed to his daughters-in-law.

「Like that, we dated with my confession and then we married after that. How is it? Compared to Liliana-chan and others, it was a meeting without anything particular about it right?」

「「「「「「「There is no such thing.」」」」」」」」

Including Yue and others too who seemed to listen to the story from some point unnoticed, the wife~s of Nagumo family and Myuu acted the straight man.

Hajime was clapping the shoulder of Shuu who was still writhing「Nuoooh, that's embarrassinggg」to console him.

「Now then, Shia-chan and Myuu-chan has also returned, should we eat the freshly made mochi with the ozouni soup?」(TN: Ozouni is a New Year's dish that is a soup containing mochi and vegetables)

Sumire clapped her hand *pan-* and ended the story. The wife~s replied「Ye~s」 and Myuu brought the mochi happily.

After that, they ate Sumire's specially made ozouni soup with relish and the

New Year of Nagumo family passed on peacefully.

The craters created at the garden, also the destroyed millstone, also the awkward Shuu who was receiving lukewarm gaze from his daughters and granddaughter in law, also Kaori's papa who was storming in with a yell「So my angel is hereeee」, also Shizuku's papa and grandpa who appeared in a flash in the living room while greeting「Thank you for always taking care of our Shizuku」, those scenes were a really mundane (limited to Nagumo family) New Year scene.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I wish that this year of everyone in Narou will also be a fun and peaceful year like Nagumo family!

Arifureta Chapter 248

Arifureta After II See Ya, Pops!

(TN: It's the line Lupin said when he escaped from Zenigata)

AN: Tio arc last chapter.

The sea of clouds and dark clouds scattered away. The light of sun was shining in everywhere, creating many sun rays.

Although, even those lights would surely vanish soon. That was just how deep the ravages of calamity that was caused by the random pounding of meteor impact. No need to mention the turned up land, the rolled up dusts would cover the whole sky soon.

The people looked up to that man, no, the demon god who accomplished that with feeling of awe. That figure surrounded by spreading crimson spark and standing calmly while releasing sparks was indeed emitting a dignity that was worthy to be titled as “demon god” from the unconscious whisper of the people.

「Whoops, I forget this.」

The people jumped at the first voice of the demon god-sama. They were unusually trembling with fears in comparison with the words that was said really lightly.

But, what happened right after that was an extraordinary strangeness that didn't match such light words.

「Crimson light is.....」

Roze opened her eyes wide toward the sky above. Crimson light was showering down far above the sky like how sunlight was interweaving sun rays. It showered down everywhere on the capital of the dragon kingdom.

‘Is this the whim of the demon god!? What he said just now, does it mean he was forgetting to destroy the city!?’ Shudders were rushing through the people. 「Hiih」Screams were raised, and people who held their head and squatted down appeared continuously.

「There art no need to worry. Goshujin-sama in his good mood decide to perform a bit of service.」

「Eh? Tio-sama. Just what does that mean.....」

Roze tilted her head and spoke her question at Tio who was smiling wryly. However, a report arrived faster than Tio was able to reply at that question.

『Roze-sama, this is Cline. This crimson light, it doesn’t seem to be a threat.The wounds of the injured people who received the exposure of the light is healing in the blink of eye.』

『This is Bovid. Reports from the crashing down guys about their survival are coming one after another. Even the guys who fell to the land below are reporting back. Geez, anything is really possible for that person.』

『Roze-sama. This is gramps. We were also saved by this crimson light. Although, in my case, I received the exposure from a metallic spider that clung on me unnoticed.』

『From Jean, to Roze-sama. We too went through the same like Sabas-sama. A small spider had its back opened up, and then the ring that came out from there shot out this light. The moment we got hit, our wounds were gone. It seemed that we were receiving that person’s protection.』

It appeared the reason Sabas and Jean, and then the imperial guards were surviving was because of this.

——Regeneration magic exposure satellite Bel Agharta

Using the satellite type artifact that was deployed outside the atmosphere,

the range where the crimson light could reach became place that would promise abnormal recovery using regeneration magic. Even in the case where the target was underground or indoor, by using spider type golem—Arachne's in-built gate to send in the light through it, the regeneration light could still reach with pinpoint accuracy.

Hajime secretly scattered Arachne swarm inside mother ship Avenst. At present, it's unknown where they are lurking, from transmutation, suicide bombing, disabling drug injection, until sending light of regeneration, all the little spider-san can do anything. Ia! Ia! Masteeer! (TN: The 'ia ia' part seem to be a reference to Cthulhu, not really clear about what though)

「Demon god-sa.....cough-. Hajime-sama.....so in the end, he was watching over us.」

「.....Pe, perhaps that art so.」

Roze's eyes turned moist from feeling greatly moved. Kuwaibel also raised a small cry「Pii」from deep emotion. The people who could hear the conversation of Tio and Roze relayed it to the people behind them, spreading the circle of the emotionally moved.

For some reason, it was only Tio who was making a strangely twitching expression.

In order to speak the words of thanks as the representation of the people, Roze was about to open her mouth toward Hajime who was continuously emitting crimson spark while hovering still in midair. She wished that he would turn toward them, got down, and then received their words of gratitude.

But, right before Roze spoke the words to call out at him,

「True core activation.....complete. Outer wall endurance level.....clear. Crystal agglutination rate.....stable. Yosh-, come here-!! What's left is only the absorption and circulation! Let's goo!! Connect to Ornis! Gate Open-!!」

She was interrupted by words that were filled with tension that was rising high for some unknown reason. Even though until now he was only showing a relatively cool and wicked side, but the current Hajime was really like a child who was given a new toy. His eyes were sparkling bright, and his mouth was

loosened up slovenly.

The sudden high tension caused Roze and others turned speechless with their mouth gaping open, while Hajime's hand was lifting to the sky a crystal about the size of a palm with a color that was a mix of dark blue and faint bluish white.

At the same time, countless black birds——crows were flying out from his Treasure Warehouse II, there were also some that had already been released unnoticed beforehand, flying from below the floating island and they all began to fly around as though forming spiral.

Looking closer, inside the world that was approached by dusts, black dots in a number that wouldn't be an exaggeration to be said as many as the stars in the sky could be seen. The true identity of those black dots were all similarly the same jet black bird type artifact——Ornis.

Originally, Ornis was modeled after crow to be used for reconnaissance, but now they were flying around in the amount that should be expressed using the word innumerable.

「Wha, wha, wha, what is thissss!? Tio-sama!？」

「Aa~, well, that's. Anyway, this wouldst not be something bad for Roze-dono and others, so calm down. Rather, I believe that nothing wouldst make thou happier than this.」

「E, eee? No matter how I look, this scene looks like the demise of the world part II though.....」

Swarms of crows were flying around as though giving notification of ominous news while dust was covering the world densely. Indeed, it was a sight that was fitting for the demise of the world. Furthermore, the eyes of those crows emitted sharp crimson light as though in respond with Hajime's call, in addition their whole body was starting to be enveloped with crimson spark and aura. No matter from where one looked, the crows only looked like the subordinates of an evil existence.

There was no factor anywhere that could make them calm down.

「Linkage – converge-, transmute!!」

Something like the commotion of the lower world didn't worth any concern. The demon god-sama who was in his perfect form invoked the ultimate skill of a transmutation master with his tension still rising high.

Instantly, Hajime's surrounding whirled and sparkling particles were getting absorbed into the jewel in his hand.

It wasn't just that.

「Ah, the sea of clouds is.....-, even the dust!？」

Someone yelled. Just as the voice said, even though the sea of clouds and dark clouds that were a gathering of negative energy were scattering away, but that didn't mean that they were vanishing, and then even the dusts that were rolled up due to the meteor impact were also converging into Hajime's hand like a joke.

Hajime's converging transmutation was certainly a power of transmutation that gathered the mineral at the surrounding without directly touching them. His original range for the convergence was around a few hundred meter, but it was another story if there were age of god magic, artifact, and Hajime's Limit Break here.

Ornis that was affixed with absorbing effect using gravity magic so to speak was a relay point for the convergence. Meteor impact was fired to scatter the prepared metal particles that had the function for conglomerating negative energy all over the world. At the same time, the polluted land was smashed so that they would be rolled up as much as possible as dust to be collected.

「What a beautiful.....」

「Pii.....」

The world was filled with jet black rivers of heaven.

The negative energy all over the world was flowing in toward Hajime accompanied by faint glimmers. There was no need to mention the sea of clouds and dark clouds. The dust of the land that was polluted by negative energy that was rolled up to the sky also became rivers that were flowing in the sky and gathered toward Hajime's position.

What was flowing there was negative energy that was fatal for living thing. But, even so the people thought. That this sight was beautiful. Surely if there was an astronaut in this world looking down to the planet, there was no doubt that he would similarly get deeply moved at the sight of the sea of clouds and dust covering the world flowing into a point.

At the same time it was noticed.

The meaning of the jewel that was emitting crimson spark while swallowing the black sea of clouds and dusts without leaving any behind. The intention of Hajime that was lifting it up.

Yes, he was trying to purify the world!

Great number of people went down on their knees. They put their hands together in front of their chest while tears were flowing on their face.

It was as though they were worshipping a god!

One person, then one more person. The people who were dedicating prayer and gratitude toward the demon god who was purifying the world were increasing!

The pain in Tio-san's chest was increasing in proportion of the number of the people! Somehow, she looked like she was really unable to endure being there even for a second longer!

「Tsk, the limit value huh. Well, I guess this is the initial value of the dragon core and sky core that can be picked up. What's left will need time.」

The radiance of the jewel that was swallowing the negative energy along with the sea of clouds and dusts was settling down. The sky of the world was cleared up, everywhere the sea of clouds and dusts were dissipating.

Hajime who was taking a breather finally turned his gaze at the people below at that time. And then, 「oOO!？」he raised a shocked voice. After all, while he was getting a bit absorbed at another matter, for some reason the number of people staring at him with tears on their face while offering prayer was rapidly increasing. It made demon god-sama to be a bit shocked.

Hajime somehow guessed the circumstance and for a moment he showed a

gesture as though he was thinking of something. The next moment shock and perplexity vanished from his face and a smile settled on his expression. His face changed into an expression that was already vibrantly smooth.

While crimson ripples were spreading in the air, like a god that was descending to the lower world, Hajime came down by calmly stepping step by step on the air. In order to return into Treasure Warehouse II, all Ornis gathered toward Hajime with a spiral trajectory which further gave him positive correction with his sublimity.

Beside Tio who for some reason was showing an exasperated face, the queen-sama was giving her welcome with moist eyes.

「.....Hajime-sama. I, don't know, just what I should say..... I don't have any word to express this feeling of gratitude welling up inside me.」

Hajime shrugged toward Roze who was talking with a bit of feeling vexed.

「I don't need any thanks. I'm only doing what I want to do by my own convenience.」

「You are really.....」

Roze smiled looking troubled at those extremely light words regarding the salvation of the world. Behind her, Sabas and Crow siblings, Bovid and Cline and the other top brasses, and so many other people were gathering.

Words of gratitude were expressed from them one by one. Their voices were gradually turning into a chorus that began to shake the cleared up sky.

While the number of people in surrounding was increasing moment by moment, Roze said that she wished for the two of them to rest inside the palace by any means. The post war processing after this would be really difficult, but it seemed that she wanted to thank them no matter what as much as she could.

Hajime slowly shook his head toward such Roze.

「From here on it will be difficult for you all. If you have time to look after someone like me, you should prepare instead for the next battle to rebuild the world.」

「However, our feeling won't be eased like that. Please——」

「Well, put aside that talk for now. Queen-san, can you come with me for a bit?」

「He?」

For a moment Roze's cheeks reddened thinking if「Is it for that kind of meaning!?」. Within an instant inside her brain the image of the approaching Hajime and herself saying denial.....such wild delusion was rushing around. As expected from the hidden pervert queen.

However, the aforementioned Hajime turned away his gaze from her toward the mother ship Avenst that was landed behind the palace. Seeing that, her cheeks reddened because it was her misunderstanding this time. Beside her Sabas's forehead was forming a Mariana trench.

「I have something important to talk. It's fine for the top brasses to come along, so clear away all passenger from Avenst.」

「U, understood.」

Roze-chan's cheeks reddened once more at the part of something important to talk, but she tilted her head by the time Sabas and others also okayed the request.

Sabas and others were also tilting their head in wonder what this was about, even so this was a request from the hero that saved their country. They didn't even have the intention to refuse, and so the made people exited the mother ship Avenst and invited Hajime in.

kon kon Hajime and others were walking through a passage of mother ship Avenst that was silent from using up almost all the power of sky core it had. Hajime had finished grasping the ship's internal construction after staying there for two days, so Hajime was walking forward rapidly in the lead.

「Err, Hajime-sama? Where are you going toward?」

The capital was in excitement from the victory, but the people should immediately feel insecure with the absence of the leading actors. Just in case

the people who remained should be giving some kind of explanation to the people, but from the standpoint of Roze and others they wanted to quickly talk to the people.

Roze was nervous with Kuwaibel held on her chest. Accompanying them were Sabas, Crow siblings, and Bovid. And then the ship captains starting from Cline were also somewhat restless.

Hajime quietly opened his mouth toward them.

「I removed a considerable amount of the negative energy running rampant in this world. But, as expected it doesn't mean that the balance of the world is completely restored. The balance of this world is still collapsed.」

「.....That's」

Indeed, the jewel in Hajime's hand absorbed negative energy. The sea of clouds became scattered all over and the rolled up dust also thinned so it didn't cut off the sunlight completely.

However, the amount of the positive energy was still few, the balance of the world couldn't be recovered right away with just the sky core of the natural world and the declined dragon species.

「Even so, now we are able to see the path to the future far clearer than before. Something like rebuilding the world from the start is something that cannot be done without being resolved for a long time of piling up effort for who know how many generations. Hajime-sama, you don't know how much help it is already just from us being able to step on the land with our own feet.」

It seemed the destination ahead of the passage they were going through steadily was the power room. Hajime nodded「I see」at Roze's words and he continued his speech.

「But, the prospect for the future become better and having leeway.....those facts are also enough for anyone to think about needless things. Even in a circumstance where there is no leeway and people has to be desperate to stay alive, people still cannot band together and they fought each other like that. The appearance of Helmut as a common enemy could be said as fortunate in a sense.」

「.....」

「Surely the people living in this world aren't just queen-san and others and the Qwailent bunches. There must be other people surviving, holding their breath in the scattered floating islands, Perhaps there are even people who discovered a way to survive somewhere in the surface. Like deep underground for example.」

「.....What is it, that you wish to say Hajime-sama?」

Roze looked dubious. No, she actually understood. There was no more enemy of the world that could become the cause for banding together. Sure enough, in the situation where resource was limited, how would people who now had leeway in their survival would move.....

Hajime opened the door to the power room. In the center of the large room, an out of norm power reactor was sitting there. There was a spot in the center of the reactor where a fuel tank could be inserted.

The jewel that Hajime took out once more was settled silently in his hand. It looked like a yin yang sphere with its color mix of deep blue and faint bluish white. Hajime fiddled it around as though it was a marble ball while his gaze turned toward Roze.

「Do you want power? An even greater power that can overwhelm the world?」

「-」

It was a surprisingly deep and silent gaze. It was as though she was looking at a whirlpool that was created inside an ocean. She felt like if she lost focus, then her consciousness would be swallowed.

With a glance at Roze who unconsciously held her breath, Hajime carelessly threw the jewel into the reactor. The spot for inserting the fuel tank didn't have a shape for precise insertion, there was a small box to put in the thing that would become the fuel, and after inserting the item into there the box only needed to be fixed in place using the fixing clasps.

Because of that, even without processing the jewel into the shape of a fuel tank, there was no problem if the jewel was inserted as it was. Yes, that was if

that jewel had a function as fuel.

kiiiiiiiiiiiiiii-

A sound like vapor whistle resounded, and then *goon goon* a sound that felt like it resounded until the bottom of stomach hit the earlobe. It gave an impression as though a heart to pour vitality into blood vessel and internal organ was now resuming to beat.

「Lies.....Avenst is, completely.....starting up?」

「-,Roze-sama. The energy replenishment rate, is 60 percent. It's in the middle of rising even now. The weapon control system, is in the state of possible activation.」

The mother ship Avenst that should be unable to be activated completely except by the energy output of monarch dragon core was resuming breathing. When Sabas who ran to the console in respond to Roze's whisper informed her about the ship's state, the top brasses unanimously turned speechless.

Just floating was the best it could do with the power of sky core. Even if it used dragon core, using only average number of average dragon core would only make this ship able to use combat maneuver but using weapon would still be out of reach.

But now, this ship was activating.

「You see, this jewel, well, if I have to say it's a pseudo monarch dragon core. The raw materials are sky cores, stockpiled dragon cores processed by the Qwailent bunches that I withdrawn from the fuel tank, and a bit of rare crystal from another world. It's an imitation, but its output cannot be matched even by a monarch dragon core. After all, right now it had just absorbed energy that can purify the world to a certain degree.」

「Su, such thing is.....」

It was possible. After all, this person here was a matchless transmutation master. Furthermore, although it was necessary for him to use artifact as intermediary, he was an existence who had even taken possession of technique that interfered with the truth of the world.

「If you have this, the strongest battleship that once shook the world will be revived. Perhaps you will be able to stave off the chaos that might happen from here on using this one ship.」

「Ha, Hajime-sama」

Roze was bewildered and took a step back, perhaps from feeling confusion at the unforeseen situation.

Toward such girl, Hajime mercilessly asked one more time as though thrusting the reality before her.

「Do you want power? If it's you.....If it's the “rebirth” dragon kingdom Avenst's queen Roze Phiris Avenst who rise to shoulder this world, then I will also be fine with lending this jewel.」

——What to do?

The question was calmly asked once more. If they had a deterrence ability this great, then indeed perhaps they would be able to prevent a needless spilling of blood from repressing the disturbance that would happen in the future.

It might possibly become the symbol of the queen of the rebirth dragon kingdom Avenst who decided to fight.

Roze was unable to sort out her confused mind, however, the moment her eyes met the eyes of Hajime who was staring straight at her, the conclusion came out with an easiness that surprised even herself. She found the conclusion the moment she saw that gaze that was vaguely holding expectation, as though testing her.

「No, I don't need it.」

She was able to answer that clearly and strongly.

「.....Hee. There really is no hesitation in that answer. Without this jewel, Avenst is a ship that is only big. Now that you have taken back your country's territory, this kind of stupidly big ship will be reduced into a mere baggage you know?」

「Yes, perhaps that is so. But, didn't Hajime-sama say it yourself? What is starting from here on is the “rebirth” dragon kingdom Avenst. Even if that isn't

a monarch dragon core, even if it's a dragon core energy that is already processed, we will never make use of dragon core as weapon until the end of the world.」

Roze calmly replied to Hajime with a strong piercing glare. Looking carefully, the top brasses standing behind Roze were all staring with wordless declaration「Don't make light of us!」inside their eyes.

「.....You really, won't use it until the end the world?」

「Yes. We won't.」

「.....This is a power that can rule the world. The strongest battleship. You really don't need it?」

「Yes, we don't need it.」

Seeing Hajime's insistent questioning, Roze felt strangely mystified「Is he worried about us that much?」and a chuckle leaked out from her mouth. Her heart was tickled from the gap of this Hajime with the demon god's mercilessness of before.

Roze spoke of her determination once more toward Hajime who was silently gazing at her searching her true feeling.

「Rebuilding the world is a battle against people's heart. A weapon is just boorish for something like that. We have friends. We can walk toward the future just from the fact that we have taken back our friends. We have to walk forward. That's why.....」

「That's why, you don't need this thing anymore, is it?」

Hajime turned his gaze behind him with a wry smile. Ahead of his gaze there was the sparkling jewel and the heart of Avenst that was fully activated from receiving its power.

Hajime who returned his gaze at Roze was scratching his cheek looking a bit troubled.

「Aa~. Looks like, I'm only creating the spark of war for all of you.」

「I won't speak that far.....」

「But, just with this thing remaining here, it will only wither queen-san's determination and also your persuasiveness to the external side.Can't be helped. I'll take responsibility as the creator and take this thing away to deal with it.」

「Fufu, thank you very much. At the very end.....Hajime-sama is a really kind demon god-sama.」

「.....Demon god? Since when I ranked up like that huh?」

Seeing Hajime who was scratching his cheek looking even more troubled, this time for sure Roze couldn't hold it anymore and she let out a laugh. It was a lively smiling face that was full with the liberation from the heavy pressure of many years and charm that looked radiant with the hope and determination for the future.

Enticed by that laugh, the top brasses starting from Crow siblings also started to laugh.

For some reason, it was only Tio and Sabas whose expression looked horribly complicated though.....

Hajime who faced away with an expression that really looked like「It's really embarrassing to get laughed at」then said「Aaah, how long you guys are going to laugh!」while he made the "Treasure Warehouse II" in his hand to shine.

Right away, the whole Avenst was enveloped in crimson radiance, and the next moment it vanished completely. Although the reactor was located near the bottom of the ship, there was quiet some distance until the ground, so Roze and others who were suddenly thrown on the air reflexively screamed「Hyaaah!?!」in that situation.

Although, they were wrapped in weightless feeling and the next moment Tio's wind gently enveloped Roze and others and they were lowered slowly to the ground.

Roze looked around while feeling a bit of indignation of what suddenly happened, however, she noticed that the figure of Hajime and Tio was already gone and she felt slightly flustered.

「Now then, we are going now. This short time was really fun.」

『Ri, right. Well then Roze-dono. Kuwaibel. And then everyone of the kingdom. Stay in good health all of thee.』

When they looked up to the sky from where the words came, there was the figure of Tio who had transformed to dragon before anyone knew it and Hajime riding on her back.

The figure of the gallant and magnificent black dragon that could be seen to be different from Helmut in a glance caused the people to make commotion and raised joyful cheer of astonishment. In the middle of that uproar, Roze who guessed what was happening raised her voice in panic.

「Do, don't tell me, you two are planning to leave right now!? We still haven't expressed our thanks at all! Please, stay for a bit more here!」

「If it's thanks we have received enough. Your words queen-san are the greatest gift more than anything.」

「Ha, Hajime-sama. Such thing-, that isn't a token of appreciation at all-」

『That's right, both of you! Besides, I want to be together with Haha-ue more!』

Roze who desperately tried to make the two stay with moist eyes, and Kuwaibel who pleaded at Tio like a spoilt child. The people who noticed from that appearance that their heroes would leave also yelled words asking the two to stay one after another.

「It's the same like a weapon. It's not fitting for an existence like me to stay beside the people who will work hard walking forward with their own legs from here on. Later!」

『.....Boy. A king who guide the world wouldst not cry seeking his mother. Always gallantly let out the dragon's roar. Remember that okay?』

Saying that, the two turned around. They didn't even look back at the words asking them to stay and their figure turned small faraway just like fickle wind that drifted away.

「Geez.....to not even let us express our thanks sufficiently.....they are really selfish, whimsy, hics-.....and kind demon god-sama and true dragon-sama.」

『Haha-ue.....I will, do my best. I'll become a true dragon Haha-ue can be proud of.』

Inside the world where the cheers of gratitude of the people were echoing, the whispers of the queen and monarch dragon resounded solemnly, yet by no means they carried any unpleasant emotion inside.

The strongest butler who had been at her side since her childhood offered a handkerchief silently. And then, he asked with reservation as though giving consideration.

「.....Roze-sama. Is this okay?」

‘Is it fine to not stop them from leaving?’ Roze who *thought* that she was asked that wiped her eyes that turned red from tears while she nodded with a bright smile even then.

「No matter what reason we have, surely no one will be able to stop those people to stay here. Then, let us wait instead. We will do what we ought to do, make this world even more beautiful, so that when they come here once again riding on the wind we will be able to give them satisfaction.」

‘A splendid determination. You have grown,’ Sabas wanted to say that.

However, he couldn't say it. Because the meaning of his question was different.

「That, err, it's not that.....they are, taking away Avenst, is that okay?」

「Eh?」

Roze-chan stiffened with a snap, a smile still on her face. After her, Kuwaibel who was in her embrace and Bovid and others who were cheering behind them also stiffened in a snap.

Roze averted her gaze still with a smiling face thinking ‘Just what is gramps talking about I wonder?’. Her gaze moved toward the place where Avenst was parked.

Not there.

No matter how many times she looked, the nation on ship that had been together with them in joys and sorrows until now wasn't there. Or rather, the

goods and tools for living, the personal effects that should be placed in the resident district and production district, all of them were left into a huge mound at slight distance away before anyone noticed.

A wind blew pass the empty space. Ah, the adult underwear of a lady that was previously hanged on the tip of the main cannon to dry it was blown by the wind! It was lightly dancing in the sky!

Roze blinked.

As she thought, the figure of mother ship Avenst wasn't there. If this was in anime, then surely there would be the ship's silhouette blinking in the empty spot with sound effect *pikon pikon-*.

Sabas spoke with a really complicated expression toward Roze who was in the state of petrification still with a smiling face.

「If I may be so presumptuous to speak.....」

「Wha, what is it, gramps?」

「.....Perhaps, that person had taken our commitment?」

「Commitment?」

The conversation that showed Roze's determination and resolve to Hajime was flowing inside Roze's brain. The memory was filtered by the truth that was Sabas's words.

Now, let's try remembering it clearly!

『Yes, perhaps that is so. But, didn't Hajime-sama say it yourself? What is starting from here on is the “rebirth” dragon kingdom Avenst. Even if that isn't a monarch dragon core, even if it's a dragon core energy that is already processed, we will never make use of dragon core as weapon until the end of the world.』

- Roze-chan's true feeling

——We won't use Avenst as weapon, so we don't need the jewel for activating it.

- Hajime-san's liberal translation

——We don't need this kind of *battleship* anymore okay!

『.....You really, won't use it until the end the world?』

▪ Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Eh, seriously? Seriously, not just the jewel, but you also don't need Avenst?

『Yes. We won't.』

▪ Roze-chan's true feeling

——Yes, we don't need the *jewel*

▪ Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Totally seriously. I say that we seriously don't need something like Avenst. Rather it's just a baggage.

『.....This is a power that can rule the world. The strongest battleship. You really don't need it?』

▪ Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Really? Even if later you say 'as I thought we need it' that won't be my problem y'know? You rea~lly don't need it then?

『Yes, we don't need it.』

▪ Roze-chan's true feeling

——For you to be that worried for us..... But, we really don't need that jewel.

▪ Hajime-san's liberal translation

——How persistent. We really don't need this kind of battleship I told you. Rather, we are troubled of how to deal with it!

『But, just with this thing remaining here, it will only wither queen-san's determination and also your persuasiveness to the external side.Can't be helped. I'll take responsibility as the creator and deal with this thing.』

▪ Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Got it then, if it's that much a bother for you, I'll take responsibility and accept Avenst.

『Fufu, thank you very much. At the very end.....Hajime-sama is a really kind demon god-sama.』

- Roze-chan's true feeling

——Defeating Helmut, purifying the world, and on top of that you even worry about our war strength in the future, really how kind. But, even if for example it has no meaning as a battleship, it's fine for Avenst to be like that. Whether for the sake of the world, and also for our sake.

- Hajime-san's liberal translation

——Myy! Even though this is something troubling that ought to be recycled or collected as an oversized garbage, but you actually take it away for us! What kindness!

The above was the content of the chain of conversation.

What Hajime said in the end, 「Your words queen-san are the greatest gift more than anything」it also wasn't a lie. It was a gratitude that came from heart, something like thank you for letting me take your commitment.

Roze who carefully recalled her conversation's content with Hajime and guessed Hajime's true intention then began to tremble all over still with smiling face.

She certainly said that they didn't need the jewel that could return the nation on ship Avenst back into a battleship.

However, she didn't say a single word that they also didn't need Avenst with it. No, it looked like she said it, but it should be understood right!? Like from the flow of conversation, or from the particulars until now!

「Thi, thi, thi.....」

「「「「「Thi?」」」」」

While Bovid and others who seemed to similarly guess the situation were making twitching expression, Roze was shaking all over while muttering.....

「Thi, THIE————————F!!!」

Queen-sama, that guy had stolen something enormous.

Yes, it's your nation on ship!

Roze's scream that felt like it could reach until the end of the world reverberated.

『Nou, Goshujin-sama. Art this really fine?』

「It's fine, after all the queen herself said it's fine.」

That absolutely wasn't her true intention. Or rather, it was this person who was leading on so it turned like that. Tio-san who saw the expression of Hajime who looked in terribly good mood couldn't say that. She was flying in the sky casually while her neck twisted to send her gaze at Hajime on her back.

「Even though I said that I'm taking it, but actually it's only borrowing for a bit long. I won't break it so it will be fine.」

Tio's completely wordless gaze as expected caused Hajime to be unable to endure and he spoke his rationalization. Tio shook her head as though to say 'can't be helped'.

『Nevertheless, thou looked really pleased Goshujin-sama. Was it that great to hath that jewel created? In mine opinion, I couldst not think that this artifact is that amazing for Goshujin-sama who art able to create god crystal.』

For now, let's put aside the matter about taking—borrowing a battleship from the pure queen-sama, Tio threw a question at Hajime who since some time ago was toying around with the jewel in his hand while grinning widely.

Indeed, if it was Hajime who could create god crystal, something like a crystal that was filled with immense energy wasn't something that rare. The point where it could stimulate the surrounding energy to supply heat made it seemed like it was more all-purpose than the god water that was created from god crystal, but Tio tilted her head feeling puzzled if it was something to feel that happy about.

Hajime's eyes gazed in amazement at such Tio.

「Eh? Huh? I more or less explained it right, about the thing I was trying to create?」

『Hmm? Certainly that art so, but in the middle it was mostly Goshujin-sama talking to thyself and thou immediately started to be immersed in thy own thought, honestly speaking, I didst not really understand but I thought it was something like Goshujin-sama art wishing to make something similar with god crystal.』

Hajime comprehended about Tio's thin reaction at the thing he created after hearing what she said. And then Hajime showed an self-triumphant look that he rarely showed as though saying 'then I'll let you hear it'.

「Tio, the energy that is unique to this world, the sky core energy and dragon core energy——it's troublesome so I'll call it sky dragon energy, I talked a bit about its property to you right?」

『Right, the positive energy give invigoration, and the negative energy possess the nature of pacification to obstruction. All those circulate with the core as the center which maintain the world's balance.』

「That's right. But see, that's not the essence of sky dragon core. No, if you say that's its essence then it's true that's the essence, but what ought to be really paid attention to, the property that is worthy to feel astonishment toward is not that.」

『Hou? And that is?』

Hajime who was unusually putting on airs spoke about the core's property that he became convinced about from his two days interaction with the craftsmen of Avensts and from his analysis toward the flow of dragon core energy of Helmut and Kuwaibel.

「The terrific property of sky dragon core——is in the aspect of its circulation efficiency that is a hundred percent.」

『Hmm.....hmm?』

Seeing Tio who didn't really get it, Hajime began to talk gleefully.

「Tio, this is something amazing. Even in earth or Tortus, you can find any amount of circulation system, whether nature or artificial. However, you can say that a system with one hundred percent circulation rate doesn't exist. Fundamentally there must be loss that occurred without exception.」

『Hm~m, I vaguely hath heard about that. Art this a talk about thermodynamics?』

「Yeah, that's right. It's a talk about a law of thermodynamics.Don't you get it Tio? One of mankind's grand problems that defied thermodynamics and is said to be impossible to be realized.」

『I'm not that detailed about it though.....nn? Wait a second, Goshujin-sama. Loss wouldst occur without exception, because of that it's impossible to realize? By any chance that is.....』

Hajime smiled complacently at Tio who was amazingly good in making conjecture. Seeing his expression, Tio opened her eyes in shock for sure this time.

「That's right. This is still a prototype, and it can only deal with sky dragon power but.....I finally laid my hands on it. One of mankind's grand problem——」

——The creation of perpetual motion.

The sky dragon power of this world, although the circulation rate was different based from the time difference and core's amount, but the energy itself would be converted from negative to positive with a hundred percent circulation rate once it got taken in into the core.

In other words, if this energy was made to circulate within a certain range, it would continue to circulate perpetually. Yes, just like how the sky dragon power was continuing to circulate within this planet.

The jewel Hajime created had sky core and processed dragon core stored inside Qwailent fleet's fuel bunker compressed until the very limit using transmutation, and the result was inserted at the center of the jewel. God crystal was then fused with it so that the problem of the small energy retention amount of the sky dragon core was cleared. And then the circulation performance was explosively increased by using sublimation magic and creation magic.

That center core——the true core had gravitational field generated by gravity magic so that the energy wouldn't escape to outside, furthermore the outer

shell that was using god crystal used space magic to permit only the property of invigoration effect from the positive energy to exert influence to outside.

The positive energy that lost the invigoration power would be altered into negative energy, the true core would absorb it and converted it back into positive energy once more. The loss was zero percent so it would circulate for perpetuity.

「Currently it can only be operated with sky dragon power that can be used only by this world's machine. But, I discovered the method to convert magic power into electricity, and electricity into magic power. If I can similarly find the method to convert sky dragon power into magic power or something else.....」

『Wa, wait a second Goshujin-sama.』

‘I’ll be able to freely control infinite magic power, or perhaps infinite heat——the dream is spreading wide yeah’, Tio put a stop at Hajime who was talking passionately. As expected even Tio couldn’t suppress her shudder seeing her master who was smoothly talking about something really terrifying with an expression that looked like a boy.

To speak further, that jewel that possessed a core at the center and continuously circulate for perpetuity inside the sphere could be said to be something that imitate this very planet itself. That was to say.....

『Goshujin-sama, thou spoke it so easily but.....art not that thing, couldst be called as a planet already?』

「Hm?Well, this is a really simplified one so it’s doubtful whether this can be called that unconditionally. But calling it that is also not mistaken. Hm~m, come to think of it this thing is also still not named.....yosh-, let’s name this thing like this.」

——Perpetual motion machine Grasp Gloria(Planet in hand that is rotating for perpetuity)

It seemed that demon god-sama finally created a planet that he took possession above his hand.

「Tio. I’m going to show Avenst at Yue and others when we go home. It feels like it can even go to space if it’s modified. There is also no worry about the fuel

if there is Grasp Gloria. Let's even try a space travel of year 20XX!」

Tio was in a state of being filled with astonishment until she was almost bursting, but when she was Hajime's good mood it seemed that her heart was also gradually calming down.

Even if she lived for more than five hundred years, but as long as she was beside Hajime then she might not get tired of living. While vaguely thinking of such thing, she energetically replied『Right!』.

But, at that timing a voice resounded from a bit far away.「Oh?」The two of them tilted their head at each other, and then when Hajime and Tio looked behind, there they saw the figure of Roze riding on the back of Kuwaibel who was flying even though a bit unsteadily in his grown-up form.

In addition there were even Bovid, Crow siblings, and Sabas riding sky battlecraft. Even behind them there were a lot of people riding sky battlecrafts and small airships with every single one filled in over capacity. The dragons were flying in parallel of all those while they were watching over the humans worriedly.

「The thief over thereee~~. Return Avenst backkk~~!」

「From the legendary dragon knight to demon king, and then ranked up to demon god, and yet at the end you call me a thief. Don't you think that's a cruel false accusation?」

『I toast to Goshujin-sama's thick nerve that couldst declare what she said as a false accusation.』

Hajime and Tio cracked jokes at each other. Tio smiled wryly and she suggested at Hajime while directing a slightly gentle eyes at him.

『Now then, getting caught here wouldst be too uncool for the end of the adventure. Goshujin-sama, let's return home to earth soon.』

「Hm~?I guess. Yue and others will soon pick——」

『No, it's fine already. Thou bring it correct, the compass?』

Hajime smiled wryly「As I thought, it got found out huh」at Tio's statement and he took out the compass from “Treasure Warehouse II”.

「When did you notice? As I thought was it that time, when I sent Avenst to Qwailent?」

『No, I felt suspicious at that time we were chasing after the sky battlecraft that got away at first. I was convinced when we boarded the mother ship. At either time, Goshujin-sama didst not show any sign of getting lost. Thou held confidence of the location of the opponent we chased in this vast world where there is only sky.』

「So, so since that time.....as expected from Tio. You are sharp despite being a pervert.」

『Nn-, stop it with the surprise reward. I'm going to fall. Cough-, in all possibility, that was a consideration so I couldst enjoy my time together with just Goshujin-sama without reservation correct?』

「It's meaningless if it was exposed so quickly though.」

Hajime scratched his cheek「I'm too high spirited huh」looking awkward. With a flash Tio released her dragon transformation, and then she gave a kiss on Hajime's cheek really nonchalantly.

「I hath enjoyed to mine heart content of Goshujin-sama who art full of consideration, and also Goshujin-sama who make merry like a child. Thank you. Now, let's go home to where everyone art.」

「.....Good grief. Sometimes when I'm with you it feels like I'm really childish.」

Hajime smiled wryly while he thrust forward the crystal key using the image of his homeland that he searched using the compass. The space undulated and a solemn door around two meter high appeared.

「Aa~~~, wait! Please waii~~~t!」

『Piuh! Piuh!』

With Roze in the lead, the people of Avenst also yelled loudly.

Hajime turned around toward them while he also raised his voice.

「I'm borrowing Avenst a bit! I'm going to play again here eventually! At that time, I'll show off the Avenst that became something like a luxurious ship from my demonic remodeling okay!」

Not as a battleship, but as a extravagance ship that invited people's dream and romance.

Those words caused the chests of Roze and the people of Avenst to feel tight. In the first place they didn't come here with serious intention of taking back the ship. They wished to say this without any strange misunderstanding.

「Aah, geez-! Please take a good care of it okay! Because that's our second homeland! Please make it into an extraordinarily lovely ship! Because I'll entrust it to you forever and eveerr~~! Plee~~~aase, absolutely come here again to meet us! Riding that ship at that time!」

「Hahah. Fine! Flying in the sky of this world is the best. We are going to come again for an adventure! Later, for real this time!」

Hajime and Tio smiled while waving their hand and they threw their body as though falling into the gate behind them. They could see the figure of Avenst's people waving their hands from the gap. Along with a very loud words of「Thank you!」.

hyuuoooooooo- Such sound of wind pierced the ears.

「Goshujin-sama, couldst I ask why we art like this?」

「Sorry, I made a little miss.」

Hajime and Tio safely accomplished returning home. The place was at altitude eight thousand meter. They were in the middle of a grand free fall. It seemed that they were more or less right above the home of Nagumo grandparents. Because they were always above the sky at the other world, Hajime's sense was amiss and they came out in the sky despite trying to teleport in the garden.

Hajime averted his gaze looking a bit embarrassed at the really sloppy return.

While they were talking the ground was approaching, by the time the two thought about taking landing stance soon, soft golden light enveloped them. The two were immediately released from the wedge of gravity and their altitude slowly descended.

When they looked at the ground, there were the figures of the grandpa who

was unable to stand up from shock, and the grandma who was looking up open mouthed at the sky with one hand holding laundry, and then, the figure of Yue smiling gently.

It was about three days since they departed. But, there was no sign of worry that could be seen in Yue's expression. Myuu and Shia who came out to the garden with light footsteps and Remia also didn't look worried at all. Rather the color of exasperation「Finally coming home huh~」could be seen strongly in their face.

While looking at Yue who quickly used soul magic to return to the present world the souls of Jii-chan and Baa-chan that slipped out because they were knocked out of their wits from seeing Hajime and Tio who landed on the garden,

「I'm home.」

「We hath returned.」

The two said their coming home words.

「Geez-. Hajime-san and Tio-san, where were you two loitering around with just the two of you desu!? We saw the letter that said you two are going adventuring, but I never heard about doing it for three days!」

Shia went angry with a huff. Her rabbit ears were pointed straight up as though to say「Hey hey, what's the meaning of this?」.

「Muu. Papa and also Tio-oneechan are unfair nano! Even though Myuu also want to go in a trip」

「Putting us aside, Ojii-sama and Obaa-sama were really worried you know?」

Myuu ran with a fast pace *sutetetete*- still wearing a sullenly bloated cheeks and she clung tightly on Hajime's leg. When the two turned their gaze from Remia's words, there they saw the Jii-chan and Baa-chan who fainted even though their soul had returned back. Sumire and Shii were looking after the two. Both of them said「Welcome home~」with really light feeling.

「.....And? Where were you two going until now?」

Yue tilted her head while asking. She understood that the two went out

spontaneously from the letter left behind, but as expected it seemed she guessed that the two encountered some kind of unavoidable circumstance with how they were spending three nights away without notice.

Hajime looked at Tio. Tio also looked at Hajime. After looking at each other for some reason, Hajime made a small smile

「Secret」

And said such thing.

He decided that he would save his adventure that he started with just Tio inside his chest until the time came it was necessary. Tio's gaze was wandering around with an expression as though she had stuffed her mouth with sweet candies.

Seeing such two, Yue tilted her head a bit before she smiled gently.

「.....I see. Tio, did you have fun?」

「Yes. Very.」

Enticed by Yue's gentle smile, Tio also made a smile that looked like a girl.

「.....It's afternoon only just now but, want to eat?」

「Ou. My stomach is really empty here.」

「I guess. We hath just gone through various things.」

The moment Yue suggested that, Hajime and Tio's stomach growled harmoniously, Yue chuckled seeing that while she returned inside the house.

Hajime and Tio followed behind her while for some reason they looked up to the sky, and then they chuckled at each other for some reason seeing each other doing similar thing.

「Wai, what's with that atmosphere of mutual understanding! Even if Yue-san ignored it, I won't be like that! Hey hey, what happened desu? Please teach meee. This is the two of you, so something must be blown away, someone raised a scream, and it absolutely became a festival of pandemonium right? I'm really curiousss」

「Myuu too! Myuu is also curious nano!」

Getting coaxed by the rabbit ears and little girl, the two of them were increasingly smiling more in humor.

Like that Hajime and Tio secretly talked at each other while soothing down Shia and Myuu.

——Someday, let's unveil the huge battleship and perpetual motion machine.

They said at each other.

While looking really amused.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Tio arc is finally over. It was long.....

The passage of perpetual motion machine was done vaguely, so please spare me from any retort (sweat)

By the way, not using monarch dragon core was Hajime's consideration after a fashion.

About what will the people of that world do with the monarch dragon cores of Helmut and his sibling, it will depend on that world's people.

Well, surely Kuwaibel won't let them do as they pleased.

.....I'll also say that it was simply because it was too much to write.

Now then, who should I write next I wonder

Arifureta Chapter 249

Arifureta After II Dream and Love and Hope'sss— —

AN: It will be idle stories until the next long arc after story.

I will put in unserious story one, or two more times.

By the way, this chapter's chronological order is around one month after the return.

The occupation of a reportage writer is a work of finding an interesting topic, collected data on it, and then reported it as news.

I, Hamada Shouta (28 years old), am such a reportage writer. I mainly introduced hidden well-known store and specialty of a town.I have never missed a meal doing this job, but there were times when there was no story to sell, so I have also done running gossip occasionally.

What someone like me is observing lately is a western restaurant『Wisteria』. It's a hidden well-know store in the city, a restaurant where you can enjoy food and coffee together without doubt.

Originally this will be where I get requested for formal news coverage and I will interview the owner for several of their prided menu, but currently I,

「Welcome. Have you decide what you will order?」

「Ah, yeah. This omelet rice, and jasmine tea. Also a blend coffee after the meal please.」

「Omelet rice and jasmine tea. And then a blend coffee after meal is it? Thank you for the order. Please wait for a bit.」

Like this, I'm coming as a normal guest. Of course, I don't tell the restaurant side that I'm a reporter or that I'm wishing for an interview.

I am staring at the back figure of the girl that is one of the reasons of that——the girl that just now was politely taking my order, the daughter of this restaurant's owner Sonobe Yuuka-chan.

Her style, I guess is fairly nice. Her chestnut hair that seems to be dyed is tied into one and her nice walking posture give a diligent impression that run counter with her appearance that is like a juvenile delinquent. How she is helping in the restaurant in holiday like this is also showing that. She is a high school student but she has a really calm atmosphere. That make her look adult.

Her long slits eyes and sharp gaze that even look glaring at other people also softened gently when she is talking with customer, that become a gap that deepen the favorable impression to her.....

Hah!? The auntie at the opposite seating is glaring at me with a terrible look!? Tha, that's not it! By no means I'm staring with a feeling I need to feel guilty about! It's true I tell you! That's why, please don't look at me with those eyes as though I'm a pervert aiming at a high school girl!

The auntie averted her gaze with suspicion still remaining. From how she is calling at the girl using Yuuka-chan, most likely she is a regular customer. It seems there are a lot of elderly people in this restaurant who are thinking of Yuuka-chan like their real daughter or granddaughter.

It's not just the auntie at the opposite seat, there are even an uncle who is sitting unnoticed at the neighboring seat sending a gaze toward here like a hard-boiled detective investigating a criminal, and an old man who is reading a newspaper at the inner seating of the restaurant, but actually there is an opened hole on that newspaper from where the old man is observing me like an investigator.

.....Surely everyone is worried about the girl, thanks to the incident that happened to the girl some time ago and the commotion of this and that currently happening around the girl.

Of course, it's not just because they are worried, it's also because she is really that charming of a girl——

「Thank you for waiting. Here is your jasmine tea.」

「Ah, tha, thanks.」

Damn it. I completely stuttered. Yuuka-chan is tilting her head at my suspicious behavior. Her expression is also puzzled.....

「Is something the matter?」

「N, no, there is nothing.」

This is really a disgraceful behavior for a pro reporter. What are you doing getting shaken against a girl more than a decade younger huh. I cleared my throat once. I change my mindset to work mode. What is necessary is an observation ability that won't overlook even anything trivial. And then, the concentration needed for that.

「By the way——」

I open my mouth to casually probe whether I can pull out some information even just for a bit, but before I can do that, the restaurant bell is ringing *cling cling* to notify of a customer's arrival.

Naturally, Yuuka-chan's gaze speedily moves away from me. The girl's eyes narrowed just for a moment at the entering person before she turned at me once more, bow and left.

For some reason I become curious about Yuuka-chan's gaze that turned sharp and so I turn my eyes toward the man who just entered the shop even while feeling the gaze of the auntie on me. The man is wearing a shabby jacket, carrying a large bag hanging on his shoulder, and a lot of stubble on his chin. My sense of smell as a pro smell that man's true identity. In that case, as expected his objective is.....

「——I told you many times already, I won't accept that kind of interview. Please don't come intruding until the restaurant.」

「Just calm down, please don't be that cruel here. If you are that obstinate, then I too cannot help but think that there is really something suspicious. It's fine even if it's just five minutes. Of course I'll wait until after the restaurant's closing. Please let me ask just for a bit——regarding all of you the “returnees”.」

Bingo. As I thought he is a person of the same business with that reason.

——Returnees

That is the cause that makes the situation that dragged in the girl to be complicated.

The whereabouts of Yuuka-chan along with her classmates became unknown more than a year ago. At the time it was a really big uproar about a case of spirited away that happened at a school in daytime. Similarly my interest was also pickled and I investigated various things about it.

But, regardless of the many specialists who investigated the case, in the end the cause of their disappearance and their whereabouts stayed unclear.

It was thought that perhaps this case will vanish from the people's memory at this rate, but just a little bit of time ago, Yuuka-chan and others suddenly returned back. Along with most of the students.

Where did they go? Naturally, not just the police, every public institution and information media pressed for an answer, but the answer the returnees gave to all of them was——fighting an army led by an evil god in another world, they said.

Naturally they were suspected to have abnormality in their mind or perhaps they were brainwashed using drugs. It seemed that they had been examined many times, but in the end there are no abnormality discovered from them and many institutions concluded like this.

——These people who were spirited away are trying to hide the blank one year when they vanished.

Like that. The press got superheated, and it seemed the questioning from the government also became more forceful. There were also students who don't come back until now, so it can be said to be only natural.

However, a strange situation is occurring here. With one day as the turning point, the questioning toward them is settling down like a tide pulling back.

Even a free reporter like me got warned by my comrades and seniors in the industry, and by the publishers I'm close with, they said「It's better to not get involved with this case」. Surely something, a great power that an individual like me cannot measure is in the work.

Even so, there are a lot of people who cannot stop because of their curiosity and ambition that is even bigger than that, and I'm one of such hopeless people, this man is also the same.

「Please quit it already. More than this is an obstruction of business already.」

「.....Haa. I get it. Then I'll ask again another day. It will be great if at that time you will talk about what's inside your chest. Surely it's also hard for you to keep close to the chest about the matter of your friends who won't be able to come back forever right?」

「.....」

Inside the restaurant become enveloped by an uneasy air. An aura that absolutely isn't respectable is emitted from the gaze of an elderly! That man, is he looking for death here!?

As expected, the man who noticed the strange air inside the restaurant is starting to rapidly retreat with twitching expression. He take out a business card from his pocket and forcefully make Yuuka-chan to hold it.

「I hope you won't misunderstand, I actually want to become your strength. Surely it's tiresome for you who is still a student to carry this large burden right? If you are fine with me, I'll listen to your story anytime.」

The man said such thing while showing a smile that is obviously fishy for anyone with working eyes before he turned around, and then perhaps to look at how Yuuka-chan is taking the situation, the man turn around while his hand is reaching toward the entrance door.

Instantly.

「Aa~, right right. Your——」

——*supan-*

The man's speech stopped. No, it was stopped.

By his own business card that flew so close it almost grazed his eyes when he was turning back, and without pause it then stabbed on the door like a joke.

No, really, what kind of joke this is? Looking there, Yuuka-chan is standing with one hand on her waist, and her other hand is lifted with two fingers

pointing toward the man. It's as though those fingers were just throwing the business card that was held between them.

.....Before this, I once watched a television show where a vegetable was cut using a trump card. That's why, this situation really looks like a joke, but it's also not something impossible if one has a preeminent skill I guess.

Even if for example the business card is made from paper that is far thicker than a trump card, or even though the door is made from wood that is hard in nature. Or even if the thrower isn't a pro with such occupation, but a female high school student helping out her family in her holiday!

The man's gaze is moving slowly toward the business card that is stabbed on the entrance door. The twitching on his cheeks is already at the level that cannot be hidden away.

Yuuka-chan speak with a dignified voice toward that man.

「Thank you for your concern. But, even though I look like this I'm a really strong woman, so I'll shoulder by myself the baggage I have decided to shoulder by my own will until the end. Besides.....」

Yuuka-chan smile gently. In that smile there is the utmost trust? Anyone who see that smile will understand that there is no gloominess or worry at all in there, it's a smiling face that is packed with a charm that is hard to describe.

「I know someone who will do something about it when it really matters.」

‘That's why, take away that business card and scram right away.’ Such wordless pressure is lurking inside that charming smile. Aa, certainly, if someone get ordered by that kind of smile and gaze, then that person won't even feel like disobeying.

「I see. It will be great if you won't regret that.」

Surely that parting threat is the best the man can do. The man roughly pull out the business card and get out without even hiding his irritation.

Yuuka-chan sighed ‘fuuh’ and then she lightly nod at her parents who have been watching over all this time from the kitchen and counter. The parents also nodded back lightly and they return back to their work.

「Eerr, I'm really sorry for the disturbance. Please forgive the discomfort it has caused you customers.」

Yuuka-chan faced the customer seats and she quickly bowed her head. The regular customers are striving to be the first to say「Don't mind it」「It's fine you know~」「The next time he come, uncle will make my subordinate deal with him」and so on. Even the customers who aren't regulars also doesn't look like they mind it, perhaps they are affected by the dignified figure and smile of Yuuka-chan just now.

Rather, they are keep sending glances with deep interest. Those gazes feel like they are looking interested purely at Yuuka-chan herself rather than because she is a “returnee”.

Right, like this Yuuka-chan's fans are increasing. Similarly I too feel toward Yuuka-chan just now——

glare- The auntie's gaze is flying at me. That auntie is absolutely an esper.

By the way, who is this person who will do something somehow that she refers to?

Now then, around one week since the day I learned the shocking truth that Yuuka-chan is actually an expert at card throwing.

During that time I visited Wisteria four times and observed Yuuka-chan.

.....No, I'm not a stalker. Until the end this is for work. A data gathering. I feel bad for Yuuka-chan, but I too am a pro, and so I won't be merciful. I endure the abnormal stare of the regulars and also the bombing that is Yuuka-chan's smile, and stand on guard waiting until the girl reveal her faults!

The result is that it end in vain, it's completely a wasted effort. There is nothing suspicious about the girl, and there is also nothing suspicious about her classmates that come playing to the restaurant.

If I have to say what I have learned, it's that the girl is a serious girl as expected, she is lovely, and not just card throwing, from pen until vegetable stick, she is a master at throwing whatever, those are all that I learned.

I only learned for the first time the fact that even a pen can pierce through a smartphone.

The male student who seems to be a classmate and got such thing done at his smartphone and Yuuka-chan herself are,

「Sonobeee!? What the hell have you done!? My smartphone is dying here! Don't get carried away just because you are that guy's mistress okay!?!」

「Shut up, idiot Tamai-. I'm not a mistress! So it's because you guys are saying such things that recently Yue-san and others are looking at me strangely isn't it!?!」

「Just because of that, this is still too much right!? Aa, now my smartphone looks like Tio-san whose ass is stabbed by Nagumo ain't it. Even though my smartphone is skewered it's still gasping and not dying yet. Shiitt, can I at least take out the data? Oi, Sonobe, take responsibility and ask Nagumo for a new one. Even that guy if he is begged by his mistress——」

「Fuhn」

「Aa!? Carrot and radish and cucumber are stabbing my smartphone all over!?!」

They were quarreling with each other really like a student.

I only learned for the first time the fact that even vegetable stick can pierce through a smartphone.

They yelled several words that I'm curious about, but Yuuka-chan who is angry with that bright red face is somehow cute so I cannot remember.

Nevertheless, what is the meaning of “aijin” I wonder? Oh man, I don't really get the most recent vocabs that the youngsters are using. (TN: Aijin means mistress in Japan. The dialogue in Japan is heavily relying context because many Japanese words sound similar. When Yuuka and Tamai were talking, the word aijin was written using kanji so it can be quickly understood what they were talking about. But the reporter is parroting aijin using katakana, he is under the impression that it might be some new slang because it's unthinkable for a good kid to be called a mistress just from that conversation.)

I am recalling such trivial thing while today too my feet are heading toward Wisteria.

Even if there is no information I can get about the returnees, the cooking in that restaurant is really good. The atmosphere of the restaurant is also calming, so I can drink coffee at the end while relaxing. After soaking my body in this harsh industry, taking a short time in this kind of restaurant is really healing me.

I can see Wisteria in front of me right now. A large stylish signboard can be seen on the quiet restaurant's appearance. The time is evening, so Wisteria that is illuminated by the madder red of evening even looks like the entrance to a different world.

「Just what am I thinking」

Is it because the girl had encountered spirited away phenomenon? I retort to myself after saying that kind of impossible imagination. I'm thinking for a little, perhaps it's better to just normally interview about the restaurant.

The restaurant's atmosphere and cooking, coffee, and then a beautiful high school student is the future second generation~

Yep, I feels like that can become a good enough article. Although, if I do that, then inevitably Yuuka-chan's background will get exposed and it will only shift back to the topic of "returnee".

When I'm about to arrive after a little bit more with a wry smile on my face, suddenly a familiar girl get out from the restaurant, it's Yuuka-chan.

「What? She looks strange.....」

Yuuka-chan is holding a mobile phone in her hand and she is talking to somewhere while walking briskly through a path that is different from the path I'm coming from.

I become strangely concerned and in the end I don't enter the restaurant and follow behind Yuuka-chan instead.

Yuuka-chan ended her call midway and she started jogging.

.....She, she is unexpectedly fast. I have confidence with my waist and legs from my work, but after ten minutes I'm starting to run out of breath. The

cause is one. Yuuka-chan looks like she is jogging in a glance, but the fact is, amazingly with each step she is steadily accelerating. Inevitably I am sprinting almost with all my strength.

Yuuka-chan. You aren't just a throwing master, you are also a jogging master aren't you?

A man desperately following behind a high school girl while breathing roughly 'zee~ zee~'. If someone is looking from the side then it's definitely out. I'm praying so that no one will report me while sprinting for a while.

Yuuka-chan entered an empty building that is for sale.

「In this kind of day when the sun is already sinking, toward this kind of place, just what is her business?」

I'm feeling suspicious while gripping my phone tightly so that if something happened to Yuuka-chan I can report it anytime. At the same time, I'm also feeling the indication of a scoop and take out the camera I'm always carrying.

While confirming that there is no one around, I step into the building cautiously.

I guess originally this building was used for office. The first floor is spacious and wide, and there is the figure of Yuuka-chan at the center.

I'm hiding behind a pillar and watch over the situation.

And then before long, five men appear from deeper inside the building. All of them are wearing black suits. No matter how you look they aren't respectable person.

「I came. And then where is the customer of my restaurant?」

I guess it right now. Yuuka-chan was called by those suspicious fellows! Her customer is taken hostage! Just who are these people?

Abduction and confinement, this is not a usual situation.

I clicked my camera shutter wordlessly.

「Don't be so rushed. We aren't kidnapping anyone or anything. They must be eating dinner normally around this time. It's just that our colleagues are on the

lookout near the,, that's all.」

「Oh, really. And? What do you want me to do?」

Even though this is an outrageous situation, Yuuka-chan is still keeping her hands on her jacket's pockets, while her mouth that is holding a chewing gum without me noticing is blowing out a balloon. Fear and unease are nonexistent in her expression, if I have to say the color of exasperation is stronger in her face.

In a glance, she is a delinquent girl looking down at an adult——she can be seen like that.

In fact the opponent might be feeling like that because their face frowned slightly.

「Just like what we said before, we only want you to cooperate with us. About the ability that all of you have, and then about the method to obtain it and the place.」

「Haa. And, why is it I'm the one who you called out using a method that is going as far as that?」

I understood that they are people aiming for information of the returnees based from the flow of their dialogue. However, Yuuka-chan isn't the only returnee. Why is she the one targeted and not the other students?

The answer is spoken from the man's mouth.

「It's nothing big, you are that boy's mistress right?」

「.....」

That word came out again. The word "aijin". Is that some kind of secret jargon? Hahah, I really don't get it all~. Eh, why is Yuuka-chan turning that red? Just where does her cool figure just now gone to!?

The man glanced at the fiercely trembling Yuuka-chan and he continued.

「We are really well aware about that boy's abnormality. It's impossible to even approach him and his relative. Our colleagues were only "changing job" one after another. The other students look like they have weak influence. But, you are different. You are outside the framework of relative, but you have

special relationship with that boy. If it's your words, even that boy won't be able to bluntly ignore it.」

Special re——eh? What did he say? I didn't hear it really clearly just now.

「We want you to request him following our instruction. That's all. If you do just that, all of your customers can go to your restaurant without knowing any——」

「First thing first, that thing about mi, mi, mistress. Where did you hear it from?」

Yuuka-chan questioned while still looking down with her body trembling. The man raised an eyebrow as though to say「Why are you concerned with that one?」, yet he still answered.

「Mainly from your classmates, then also from your parents. They were talking about it normally in the restaurant, and then even from the conversation when shopping, I got the report that your parents were talking worriedly that they wished you won't be a mistress but marry normally.」

「.....Everyone you better remember this. My vegetable sticks are hungering for smartphone.」

It seems that the smartphones of her classmates and parents will become the prey of the vegetable sticks, just like the smartphone of that boy some time ago.

The eyes of Yuuka-chan who lifted up her face are steady. As might be expected from the face of a beauty that possess long slits eyes, it has a remarkable intensity when it make such expression. The man in the front stirred for a moment as though he is faltering.

「A, anyway, will you follow along with our “cooperation request”?」

「If I don't, my customers will randomly meet misfortune?」

「.....」

The wordless reply is the proof of affirmation.

Seeing the situation that is becoming more and more outrageous, I decided to withdraw for the moment from here to report this. What is passing through my

mind is the sudden calming down of the returnees commotion and the warning from the people in the same business. Furthermore, from the talk of those men in suits in addition with their experienced air, the possibility that they are government people is high.

Perhaps reporting this to police will be pointless. On the contrary, perhaps I will also be in danger with the reason that informer = witness.

However, there is no way I cannot leave this as it is. Yuuka-chan came here alone for the sake of her restaurant customers even knowing the danger. She is a girl who is more than a decade younger than me, but she came here after mustering her courage for the sake of others! Then, I too have to do what I can!

Because, even I am a customer that love Wisteria!

(Yuuka-chan. Please don't provoke the opponent and do your best just a little bit——)

While gritting my teeth that I cannot leap out like a hero, I try to retreat until a place where my voice won't be able to be heard when I report this.

But, that cannot come true.

「Uguh」

「.....Good grief. Rat like your kind is always barging in from everywhere.」

I got caught. There was also these guys comrade behind me. My neck get choked by an arm and I get trouble breathing. My body get groped around with one hand and my camera and smartphone are taken. I get dragged along out from behind the pillar.

Noticing the commotion, Yuuka-chan and the men look to this direction. The men are making unpleasant face. Yuuka-chan's expression looks like she wants to say「What the hell」. No, it's strange for me to be the one to say it but Yuuka-chan, isn't it better if you show a bit different reaction than that..... What happen with your cool and unperturbed attitude?

「That person, is more or less my customer though?」

「A reporter, Hamada Shouta. Looks like he is investigating your surrounding.」

My background is exposed from the business card they took. What kind of

expression Yuuka-chan will make now she know I'm tricking her I wonder. Her expression that enter my sight that is turning blurry from the distress is.....ah, yep, it's just like usual. She isn't thinking anything of it. She is cool and lovely. Can I cry?

「It doesn't matter what is that person's background. And? What are you going to do with that person?」

「.....It's something you don't need to know. Can I consider that our deal is struck? Then, you can go back to your restaurant. We will contact you again later. Our thanks for your cooperation.」

Whose mouth is saying that? After threatening a girl who is still a student!

An indescribable rage is surging inside me. What will happen to me after this? Of course I'm feeling scared about that. The inside of my head is already messed up. What to do? What to do!? There are only those words that keep flowing in and vanishing inside.

In this hopeless situation, a voice suddenly resounded. It's Yuuka-chan's voice.

「.....Ah, yep. This side is all right though. Ah, I see, so it's over. Okay.」

The men look suspicious. Me too. The reason is because Yuuka-chan is talking to empty space.

The sudden happening make me only able to be confused, but it appears the men are different. Their facial expression changes as though they recalled something and their hand moved toward their chest pocket.

「Chih. Some kind of ability!? Don't mo——」

「Shut up.」

Yuuka-chan says sharp words. Right after that, the two men raised short scream and they crumble down. Almost at the same time, Yuuka-chan's face turn at my direction, and at the next moment, 'puh' she spit out something.

That thing make the sound of slicing wind while passing through near my forehead, right after that, the pressure restricting my neck vanished.「Guah」 That cry make me turn around reflexively, and there I see the figure of a man holding his eye looking pained.

The hand of me who fell on my backside felt a flabby sensation. When I look there, there is a chewing gum that has been stretched long and narrow. This is the chewing gum Yuuka-chan was chewing. There is no need to guess, perhaps Yuuka-chan threw the gum she held in her mouth to hit the man's eyes.

Groans and screams are overlapping even while I'm slightly befuddled.

When I turned my gaze, there are already five men collapsing. Their leg is stabbed by a knife that release electrical discharge *crackle crackle* and then men are convulsing.

「Shit-. Do you think this will end well for you after doing something like this?」

The man who received the chewing gum spit said such thing while tears are trickling from his one eye. At the same time, his hand secretly reach toward his breast pocket, and *ton-* that hand is stabbed lightly by a long and narrow knife like a joke.

「I'll return those exact words back to you. Get punished a lot later by the demon king-sama.」

pachin- Yuuka-chan's fingers snap resounded. The knife stabbed into the man's hand immediately crackled. The man raises a small scream and fall powerlessly.

「Please don't move from there.」

Faster than I can comprehend that those words are directed at me, Yuuka-chan look toward the entrance while she lifted her hand toward the collapsed men. Thereupon, of all things. The knives pulled out by itself and fly toward her hand.

I can only open my eyes wide at the strange happening before my eyes. I don't even have the composure to scrap off Yuuka-chan's chewing gum from my hand.

Yuuka-chan catch the five knives flying at her with one hand and she start juggling them using one hand like a street performer. Wha, what a dangerous act.....is what I thought, but her gaze is fixed toward the entrance without change. From that I understand that this extremely dangerous skill is nothing more than a diversion for her.

The figure of the girl looking relaxed with one hand still put inside her pocket and the other hand juggling throwing knives is really picturesque that I get completely fascinated.

Even unconsciously I feel like I have to say something here, I try to let out words by desperately moving my mouth that doesn't really want to hear what my brain is ordering it to do.

However, before I can, the reason why Yuuka-chan is staring at the entrance finally arrives.

What entered the building along with a low engine sound is two black cars. No matter how I think, they are obviously the comrade of the fainted guys here. Come to think of it, before I entered here, I believe I saw no car nearby. That means, were they already coming here to pick up these men, or else they had arranged to come if there is no contact in certain interval.....

「How ill-prepared. As expected is it just like Nagumo said, they are underestimating us because we are children?」

Yuuka-chan whispered that. The cars' headlight illuminated at Yuuka-chan. At her feet are naturally me who fell on my ass and the collapsed men. The cars came to a sudden stop and they try to back away in hurry.

「My bad, but this is an order from the sca~ry demon king-sama. Well, he told me to only do it if possible though.」

Inside the building that is shined by the headlights, a new light source is created. It's from Yuuka-chan's knives. The juggled throwing knives are blazing up along with *gou-* sound.

Yuuka-chan throw three knives high in the air, she catch the remaining two blazing knives between her fingers, and right after that, 「shih」she throw them along with such spirited voice.

The two knives are flying while pulling trail of fire behind them. Each of them is like a streak of laser, stabbing on both cars' bonnet and explosive sound roared from there. The cars lost their momentum and also the control before they crashed on a pillar and wall.

.....Unbelievably, it seemed that Yuuka-chan's blazing knives pierced the car

engines.

Men rolled out from the driving seats of the cars. At that time Yuuka-chan caught the falling knives and throws them again. At the same time, even though she is throwing with one hand, the two knives splendidly follow two different tracks and stabbed the thigh of the men. They collapsed with a thud from the stun gun effect.

「Something like this I think. The rest, I'll leave the clean up at Nagumo just like he said.....」

Yuuka-chan is playing around with her knives by twirling them around while her gaze is moving toward me.

.....Just what is this extremely extraordinary situation?

Now I'm sharing a special circumstance with her. Will I become a secret cooperator that protects her secret after this? Will the two of us face against powerful organization? Will I give comfort to her when she is tired of fighting?

Like that someday the two people.....

「E~rr, anyway, sorry to do this while you are in your own world but, hoih」

pushu- It feels like something stabbed me. When I look at the back of my hand, there is a knife that she was holding before this. Hm, can you wait a bit, Yuuka-chan? Right now my hand is sticky with the chewing gum that you were chewing, and now the back of my hand is stabbed like this, just what is this situation.....

「Please come to the restaurant again as a normal customer.」

「Ah, wai-, ABABABABABABABAABABABABABAHBAAH!？」

There my consciousness is swallowed into darkness.

Her last words. I see, until the end, you are going to fight without anyone else knowing huh. So that's your resolve.

Loving the normal everyday, possessing mysterious power, you leap into the extraordinary days without hesitation for the sake of other people.

Aa, I know. Just what is such a girl is called. I never thought that it really exist

in reality.

Yes, you are——

A few days later after the ill-prepared attack of a certain government agency. The western restaurant Wisteria that was loved by the local people. It was afternoon, when it was time where people's visit was the slowest, inside the restaurant was sparse despite it was a holiday.

At such Wisteria the bell that informed of the customer's arrival played its ring. When Yuuka who was wiping the table turned her gaze, there she found the boys trio Tamai and co, and also Miyasaki Nana and Sugawara Taeko.

While smiling wryly thinking that her friends came for jabbering again, Yuuka opened her mouth to welcome them,

「Yo-, magical girl!」

「Are business flourishing, magical girl!」

「Oh man, that's really a great picture yeah, magical girl!」

She got called with strange nickname by the boys trio. After mistress now it was magical girl? Fine then. If that's what you wish then it's war. Do you have enough spare smartphone in stock?

With a fixed smiling face, Yuuka took out vegetable sticks from the kitchen.

「Wait wait, Yuuka-chi! It's not like we are making fun of you. No, Tamai-kun and co are making fun of you though.」

「Ahaha, err, Yuuka. Here.」

Nana immediately hid her smartphone and pacified Yuuka, while Taeko was smiling wryly and took out a magazine from her bag and handed it over to Yuuka. Beside her, 「Ple, please spare at least this childdd!」Tamai embraced his new smartphone on his stomach and crouched down.

「Geez, just what's with you guys.」

When Yuuka dropped her gaze at the magazine she was given while saying that, it appeared that it was a minor gossip magazine. It was something that

published things like urban legend and so on. Its credibility was zero. It was that kind of magazine.

Yuuka found a page that was folded and she opened that page while gazing dubiously at Taeko,

「!？」

She stiffened.

It was only natural. Because there,

——A battle of dusk! Magical girl exist! What is the true identity of her who protects the citizens from a mysterious organization!?

Such headline was written with large font, and the picture of Yuuka who was emitting flame was printed there.

Of course, Yuuka's face wasn't shown, there was only the side profile of a girl who looked like she was emitting flame projected there. But, it was obvious in a glance for those who knew Yuuka. The knives that were faintly visible inside the flame and the sparking knives were also the proof.

Yuuka was opening wind holes using curving throwing vegetable sticks at the smartphones of Tamai and co who were cackling while saying things like「Magical girl(mahou shoujo)? No, this is magical high school girl right?」「No, it's magical mistress(mahout aijin) see」「That sound indecent somehow. Rather how about demon king mistress(maou aijin)?」, and then she made a phone call from her own smartphone.

『What's up?』

「What do you mean what's up, Nagumo! The concealment!? You were concealing the case weren't you!？」

『Aa, about that article huh. You see.....hm? Do you hear anyone screaming? Sounds like Tamai and co there.』

「Who cares about that, explain the reason why I become a magical girl!」

Yuuka questioned Hajime while ignoring Tamai and co who were grieving「This time it's celery!? Damn it!」while embracing their smartphones that were returning blank eye(screen).

『No, I erased everything like the camera data and so on, I also manipulated their memory. But as expected from a pro journalist. It appeared he also took several picture using his smartphone and transferred the pictures into his PC at his home.』

「Guh. His gaze was always following me stickily every time he came to the restaurant, so I thought he was surely a no-hoper third class reporter.」

『.....Well, putting aside your harsh evaluation. That reporter put out the article at a gossip publisher while I was pressed with dealing at the public safety side. Even though he should have no memory, he moved fast to make the article because the picture was just interesting.』

Yuuka was determined. The next time that reporter bastard came, it wouldn't end well for him, she resolved.

It was impossible for anyone to judge that it was Yuuka from that picture except her friends and comrades, and above all the magazine was a local gossip publisher. The number of copies printed and also the number of buyer was few. Yuuka considered the reporter as a customer and against her better judgment she didn't make him faint. She cursed her careless self and let out a sigh of resignation.

By the way, when she eventually made him fainted, for some reason around the end that reporter was staring at her stickily, on top of that he was excessively grinning in his own world, he looked simply revolting so Yuuka electrified him somewhat reflexively.

『Well, in the end it's just gossip. It won't become a big problem I believe. If it happens then it happens, I'll crush it entirely at that time. So don't worry about that.』

「It's not like I'm particularly uneasy or anything. It's Nagumo after all.」

Just what was it? Yuuka felt smirking gazes from outside her field of vision. It also felt like there was exasperated gazes「They are do~ing it again~」.

A voice calling at Hajime could be heard from the other side of the phone. It seemed that he was still in the middle of dealing with a trouble.

「My bad suddenly calling you. I got already for now about the situation.」

『Aa. Then later——』

Yuuka told that she was ending the call seeing that Hajime was busy, Hajime too also replied——just before that, it was as though he got a mischievous idea and made a stifled laugh. And then,

『Later, magical girl Yuuka-chan』

「-, You-」

Before she could complain, *tuut tuut* lifeless electronic sound sounded. Yuuka was trembling all over with her eyes staring fixedly at the smartphone while her cheeks were gradually turning red. Then she whispered.

「.....Don't call me, Yuuka-chan.」

Naturally, it went without saying that she was given the wide grin of the two people at the kitchen and the counter, and her five friends.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I caught cold. The Word frequently deadlocked. When I changed using Ichitaro(TN: Japanese program), my data flew. Okay. I'm gonna post the chapter at any cost.

And so this chapter was late, but it's Yuuka chapter that felt tedious.

I also want to write a long arc with Yuuka as the main, so this time it's just an idle story.

The chronological order is around one month after the return.

Everyone too please be careful of catching cold.

Arifureta Chapter 250

Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ①

AN: Thank you for waiting.

It's a trifling ordinary day arc.

I wrote ①, but I'm planning to interpose the student life arc with idle story, so it's just for numbering.

I'm undecided whether next week I'll also write student life arc's continuation. It will depend on my mood.

Blue sky without a single cloud was spreading vast, in a corner of resident area that was filled with comfortable cool air that was characteristic of the morning time,

——*gashan-*

Such sound of crashing and,

——Gupeh!?

Such scream were resounding.

「.....Hajime? Are you listening?」

「Hm? A, aah. I'm listening Yue.」

Yue who was walking beside Hajime while making footstep sounds regularly puffed up her cheeks in a bit of dissatisfaction.

With their height difference as one factor, Yue who was turning her gaze at Hajime as though she was peering from below was naturally looking like she was directing upturned gaze at him, and despite having seeing her gesture that was like that many times until now, Hajime couldn't prevent his heartbeat from

jumping up for a moment.

And so, the cause of the sound of crashing and scream just now——a passing by salary man riding a bicycle in his way to his workplace who was driving inattentively, and in the end he crashed onto a telephone pole and toppled over, such tragedy was smoothly slipping off from Hajime's mind along with his moving away gaze.

Yue fastened her pace to move ahead of Hajime and then there she made a beautiful turn with a twirl. Her golden threads hair softly fluttered and glittered as though it was even blessed by the morning sunlight, while her skirt that was similarly fluttering softly greatly emphasized her whitely alluring absolute territory. (TN: Absolute territory = zettai ryouiki = exposed skin between top of knee-high socks and hemline of skirt)

——*zubo-*, dowah!?

A boy who seemed to be a high school student from another school walking at the edge of street put his foot into a ditch and he screamed, but Hajime whose heart was captured by Yue who was staring straight at him while walking backward didn't even turn his gaze there.

「It's dangerous walking backward like that you know?」

「.....Nn. But, like this both of us are inside each other's sight.」

Yue was staring still at him expressionlessly, but her default expression crumbled slightly. The gently softening expression——Yue's smile stimulated Hajime's déjà vu and he narrowed his eyes.

.....A postman overtaking Hajime from the side seemed to get his brain stimulated. As the compensation of not looking straight while driving, he almost got into an accident and put on his emergency brake *kikii*——!! He came to a stop with a really impressive drift.

「.....Hajime?」

Yue tilted her head at Hajime's state. Hajime realized the source of his déjà vu and he muttered「My dream became reality huh」. Hearing that mutter, Yue tilted her head even further to the opposite side to show her confusion.

That gesture was so lovely that Hajime loosened his face.

At the same time, a female high schooler walking from the roadside suddenly pressed on her nose and crouched down. Red liquid of joy was dripping from between her hand. This female high schooler who was whispering「I, I saw it again. It's just too angelic just now」was also discharging out drips of red joy at the same place four, five days ago, so surely she was in a healthy state without any abnormality.

「You see, I had seen Yue's figure wearing that uniform while walking backward like this before.」

「.....Nn? I had done this before?」

「No, we have gone to school together many times, but something like this is the first time. It's just, it's embarrassing to confess this but.....I saw it at Haltina's great dungeon, yeah.」

「.....ah. Fufuh. Did you dream it?」

「Don't laugh.」

Hajime looked aside while scratching his cheek. For his delusion and desire to be known by his lover, even though it was at this late hour, no, exactly because it was at this late hour that it was a bit embarrassing.

The true identity of the déjà vu Hajime felt. The cause was one of the trial that he received at the capturing of great sea of trees Haltina. The capturing members were shown world of dream at the same time when they were teleported. There they experienced a world of supreme convenient wish they desired on top of having their inconvenient past written off.

What Hajime dreamed off inside that world was ordinary days on top of the erasure of his despair and hellish pain he experienced at the abyss. Inside that world there was Yue as his lover and he went to school with her like this. Both of them were carefree under the sunlight without any conflict, pain, and anxiety.

Yue was twirling like now and she steadily walked backward in front of Hajime, wearing the uniform of the school Hajime attended.

The figure of Yue wearing blazer and skirt, and then loafers, with the school bag held behind her, she was walking backward..... This spectacle of dream waiting ahead after he passed through all difficulties was truly the symbol of happiness for Hajime.

「Haa haa, my goddess——abeshih!?!」

The finger bullet Hajime unconsciously fired splendidly hit the forehead of a man peeking out from between the curtain of the second floor room of a house the two happened to pass by. Of course, the glass window was beautifully pierced through.

The man who was blown away along with an impact that felt like it would tear off the head, without pause he was sent flying into the corridor with a force that could smash through a door. From inside the house,「Dear-, Takeshi is! Takeshi is coming out from his room!」「What!? Recently he is doing this every morning isn't he!? Finally Takeshi too is resolved to return to society.....uuuh」such harmonious voices could be heard.

Surely the number of family conversation there was increasing in proportion of the number of hole in the window. It was something wonderful.

「You are used with the school already?」

「.....Nn. It's fresh and novel. Especially the going to and from school alone with just Hajime.」

Yue's smile deepened at Hajime's attempt to change topic while she replied.

「Though I also feels like this isn't something we need to decide the rotation shift and even purposefully not using car though. Even going through shortcut, it's still faster by riding bicycle.」

「.....Hajime don't get it. Going to and from school with just two people is our important time. This is the consensus of opinion so objection or refusal won't be allowed.」

「I, I see. But still.....」

Just as Yue said, Yue, Shia, Kaori, and Shizuku enforced a rotation shift where each of them would go to school with just Hajime once a week. It was

something that was decided by their consensus of opinion, and the time became an important time where they could be together with just Hajime who most of time was together with someone among his families.

Hajime more or less also guessed that. However, there was a relatively pressing problem in the case of all these four people, especially in regard to Yue, because of that Hajime's expression was a bit twitching.

「.....You don't like, being alone with me?」

「There is no way that's true.」

Getting asked such thing with a sad looking gaze, Hajime had no other option than giving an immediate answer.

Even if he witnessed the tragic scenes of all the passerby in the range where Yue's expression was visible were crashing, tumbling over, or spraying out joy from their nose.

When he was going to and from school with just Yue, most of the time the path they traveled became like a disaster site in their passing. Also to say more, the smartphones of the smartphone users all over the place who suddenly became unmannered were invited to heaven and agonizing cries in that kind of meaning also echoed in the path that was turned into a road of tragedy.....

Hajime fastened his brisk pace and caught up to Yue, he then took out a glasses with crimson frame from his pocket and gently put it on Yue. Glasses girl Yue blinked her eyes.

This glasses was actually an artifact that possessed recognition obstruction effect but,

——*Gashan! Kikii——, gosha! Chuin!*

——So, so cutebuberah!? Hidebuh. Abeshi!?

In front of the charm of *Yue wearing glasses*, the artifact bent its knees in defeat.

「.....A charm that nullified an artifact that is enchanted with age of god magic, huh. You haven't actually obtained a concept magic of charm or something haven't you?」

「.....?」

Hajime whispered to himself and took off the glasses that had opposite effect from Yue. The glasses artifact of recognition obstruction was quite effective at first, but recently it was becoming an item that increased Yue's charm instead.

Hajime could only cocked his head in puzzlement, but his mother Sumire who heard this story was staring blankly while answering「That's must be because she is with you」as though it was nothing. Recently their surrounding had calmed down compared to at the beginning and Yue became able to enjoy her time alone with Hajime to her heart's content. Surely Yue's euphoria was overflowing out at her time alone with her beloved, that seemed to be the case.

While thinking 'Don't tell me it's really that kind of reason?', Hajime turned his gaze from the glasses back to Yue,

howawan~

Small heart mark bubbles were gushing out from Yue's body only from her gaze meeting Hajime's.....was how it looked like. Hajime scrubbed his eyes and when he looked at her one more time, there was only Yue there smiling normally. It seemed that he was hallucinating.

「We arrived, at the station.」

「Nn」

Deciding not thinking deeper about it, Hajime thought of preparing a more powerful artifact. When Hajime was thinking that, they arrived at the nearest station that was actually the a detour in their going to and from school.

Yue returned walking at Hajime's side once more and with an extremely natural motion she linked her arm with Hajime's. Her soft sensation and sweet fragrance tickled his nose and he received sharp gazes from the station workers and salary men. Even now their expression looked as though they were going to yell out「Showing off right from the morning」with spits flying out.

Yue-sama who was in cloud nine of happiness from the morning didn't seem to bother at all with the surrounding, but for Hajime who was endeavoring to return to his former livelihood in the modern Japan, this situation was really serious. It was to the degree that he needed to hold back his hand that wanted

to immediately move toward his thigh. Of course his partner railgun wasn't there.

While the two were having idle chat like nothing at the station platform, a strange situation that was already the routine every morning was starting to occur.

No matter how one looked, people were congesting at the position of the train coach Hajime and Yue were lining up for. There were many male, but there was also quite the number of female. Also, in a glance the females were looking like they were fixing their eyes on smartphone, newspaper, or book, but from Hajime's viewpoint it was totally obvious that they kept glancing his and Yue's way.

(Every single morning, they aren't getting tired of it. This is already at the level of killing intent.Well, going to school with different woman every morning, if it's asked whether this can't be helped then it really can't be helped I guess.)

Among these people that were forming lines, there weren't only Yue's fans, there must be Shia's fans too there. Small voices like「Toying around with Shia-chan, this shitty braatt」could be heard sometimes. By the way, when he was going with Kaori or Shizuku, Hajime would go until their house to pick them up by riding train, but at that time there would be salary men that happened to catch sight of him without fail.

By the way, the closest station from Kaori and Shizuku's house was at the opposite site with the school sandwiched in between of that station and the nearest station from Hajime's house. There were eight stations until this station.

If this happened to a normal male high schooler, their mind would surely get disturbed from getting exposed to this storm of negative emotions like jealousy and so on that the mere expression of bed of nails wasn't possibly enough to signify the significance.

Of course, the one here wasn't a possessor of soft mind that would wither down from such thing.

Glancing at a salary man uncle lining up behind him who was subtly closing the distance, Hajime circled his hand around Yue's waist and he pressed her

body tightly toward him.

The surrounding became noisy. Murderous gazes were doubling.

「.....Hajime?」

「Hey, Yue. It's fine even if we take detour, so how about we stop riding train? I don't have any intention at all letting you get touched by anyone, and if there is that kind of guy trying that, I'll tear off his nails even if it's still in the stage of attempt, but there is also no need at all to mass produce people with their life ended right?」

Yue who tilted her head in puzzlement seemed to guess the meaning of his words a beat later. Or rather, it seemed she was really ignoring the surrounding's situation as though it was only natural. As expected from a former royalty. It appeared that it was the default state to put the gazes of the rabble outside the mind. Or possibly, perhaps it was also that she wasn't able to see anything but Hajime.

Yue showed a bit of thinking gesture「.....Nn~~」and her index finger suddenly stood up straight.

「.....『Everyone, bee~~come unconcerned with us』」

The words sounded slow and stupid, but they were whispered with a mysterious echo. Invisible power permeated the whole station as though it was spreading in ripples, and right after that, including the salary man who was gradually getting closer, the expression of the people who were focusing on Hajime and Yue went 'hah' as though they returned to their senses.

And then, they were making wondering expression about why were they making long lines in the entrance for this train coach like this while scattering toward other spots.

「What should I say, that's a special bargain sale of【Divine Statement】huh. You want to go to school by train that much?」

「Nn-. To speak in Hajime's wording, this is romance. Therefore I won't give it up.」

「Yo, you are insisting it like that huh. I got it. Well, it's also nothing really

difficult, I'll reinforce the recognition obstruction artifact quickly.」

「.....Glasses?」

「Glasses.」

He wouldn't give that up. Glasses girl Yue-sama was the key point for Hajime.

After that, during their walk until they reached the school, it went without saying that the words of god were literally firing in rapid succession toward the people who just arrived to ride the train and the crowd of people getting off the train. If it was for the sake of her desire, Yue-sama wouldn't be stingy with using the words of god! It was Hajime>Unsurpassed wall>Everything else for her!

Hajime and Yue who arrived at school reached the shoe locker while respectively gathering attention.

There was one more template that was still continuing here.

——*rustle rustle rustle-*

Numerous letters surged like avalanche. It was a really retro method to put letter into shoe locker, but there was no other way for these people to convey their feeling so it couldn't be helped. After all, the contact address of Yue and co weren't known except by their classmates and a part of friends, and on top of that if they tried to talk to them directly there was always demon king level escort constantly beside them.

「Just like always.」

「.....Nn. Being liked itself isn't bad. But I cannot help to say that this is really a bother.」

Yue didn't even hide her expression of feeling troublesome, her eyes narrowed for a moment to see through something and she put several letters into her pocket while she pushed in everything else into another locker. By the way, that locker was Kaori's.

「Are those love letters from girls again?」

Hajime said that with a wry smile after guessing the sender of the letters that

Yue pocketed. Just as he said, about 30 or 40 percent of the love letters Yue received came from female students.

「.....Rather than calling them love letter, the letters are more like from fan or requesting to become friend, those kind of things. Idiots who are sending love letter even knowing I have Hajime doesn't matter at all, but I cannot carelessly treat the letter from girls who want to be friend with me.」

「That kind of treatment is the reason you are popular.」

Seeing Yue who lowered her eyebrows looking a bit troubled, Hajime said that looking amused while opening his own locker. Several cute letters were piled up snugly inside. Yue-sama's gaze stabbed.

Helplessly Hajime took out the letters and put them inside another locker. By the way that locker had the name "Amanogawa Kouki" written on it.

Seeing such Hajime, Yue asked with a bit amused expression.

「.....Hajime. Is it fine not to read the letter right at the top?」

「The top one? What, is there something in it?」

The words of Yue who somehow understood the state of when the letter was created by using regeneration magic caused Hajime to make a dubious expression.

Yue took out the aforementioned letter from the locker and,

「.....Nn. This is from a cute fan of Hajime.....a girlish boy's——」

「Sooih!!!」

Hajime snatched the letter with godspeed, super compressed it with his grip strength and threw it with full power toward outside the school. The crumpled letter casually hit the speed of 166 kilometer per hour and the letter that was compressed until it was smaller than a pinball flew away like a laser beam.

It felt like a pained voice「Aah, my letteerr!!」could be heard from somewhere, but surely it was just an imagination.

「.....As always, Hajime is popular among the cute boys.」

「Stop that. They don't feel repulsive like when I was stared at by Chrystabel,

even so those guys' gazes are unbearable. Recently the fellows in class are shuddering『The demon king is finally feeling like turning his hand at that direction!?!』while nonchalantly taking distance away from me. It's just plainly weighing the mind.」

「.....Even though, Chrystabel is a good person.」

「Your lover's ass is being targeted here you know? Don't just conclude that he is a good person.」

Yue chuckled at the dejected Hajime. Lured by that amused look of Yue, the students who were arriving at school were rapidly getting slower in their walk. A crowd trying to get even just a glimpse at the beautiful face of the girl who outwardly changed school was starting to form.

Hajime took Yue's hand to quickly head toward the classroom.

The classroom of Hajime and others were at the highest floor and the farthest corner of the school building. They were at second year of high school, so normally they should be at the second floor, but their classroom was at that place where normally no one would come at was because Hajime and others were "returnees".

With the uneasiness from the school side and a part of students' family, and the criticism from the society about the decency if the students who returned back miraculously at great pains were to be driven out from school, the school administration compromised by wishing to gather the returnees in one place and they set up a "special classroom" at a place that was isolated in the same school building.

Also, Hajime and others were in the middle of their first year when they were summoned to the other world Tortus. And so, originally they should be held back a grade, but although Hajime and others were put into a special classroom, but their school grade was properly in the second year.

This was the result of the conformance between the demand of Hajime and co "no way we will repeat the year", and the opinion of the school side that wished for them to quickly graduate the school and left with the official stance that it was their sympathy and compassion at work.

As the result, a special short course period was prepared for the returnees and on top of that they were given examination, it was to confirm whether they were equipped with the scholarly ability of the first year curriculum of high school, if there was no problem with the test result then their grade advancement would be recognized. That was the special measure that the school taken.

Of course, it was also the result of a demon king somewhere and the wife~s working behind the scene.

And so, amidst the hectic situation of dealing with the government and mass media, all the classmates received special short course and in the end all of them struck high score without anything that could be complained about and their grade advancement was recognized.

At that time, after the special short course, the classmates held a study meeting by their own initiative and diligently study hard. The school officials were really in admiration seeing that but.....

Things like encouragement yell「Limit Break-」could sometimes be heard from the classroom.

Actually, they increased their concentration power and learning power by taking in a drug named Cheatmate while in addition they invoked Limit Break using Last Zell to study. It didn't stop there, after the school was over they would also gather in Yuuka's restaurant for a study meeting and used Hour Crystal to lengthen their time.

It was only getting held back a grade that everyone hated. To a very great extent.

Arriving at the topmost floor, the number of people decreased right away the moment Hajime and Yue stepped into a corridor where their classroom was located. It was natural because originally the classroom here wasn't used and other than that there was only storage room.

But, this morning there was the silhouettes of another people other than the classmates.

「That's, the vice principal and, Aiko, sensei who is completely hidden behind

the silhouette?」

「.....Nn. It looks like they are quarreling?」

Indeed, over there they saw the back of the vice principal who was famous with his hair that had overly splendid 7:3 ratio it was unnatural, and opposite him seemed to be Aiko seeing from the tiny legs that were barely visible from the two's position. The voice of the vice principal sounded angry for some reason, so it seemed that Aiko was being scolded or preached at.

Hajime and Yue looked at each other and they slowly and smoothly sneaked behind the vice principal after cutting off their presence.

「Now listen, Hatayama-sensei. You are still employed as teacher in this school because of this school's kindness. I hope you will be aware of that a little bit more!」

「Ye, yes. About that I'm really grateful.....」

「In that case, why did you leak an extremely careless statement that show contempt to our school toward the likes of the press. I'm greatly troubled by this!」

「My, my deepest apologies. By no means I'm intending to show contempt.....」

「Hou. The statement that the reason the special classroom is set up because the school is discriminating, you are saying that's not you showing contempt?」

「No! I didn't say anything like discrimination! It's just, I was only saying, if only the school side is also able to treat the students a bit more normally.....」

The reason the vice principal was offended seemed to be the statement Aiko leaked out to the press. Aiko often came out in front of the press with her position as the representative of the returnees. So far as it went she took formal appointment for something like interview, and it was done after talking it thoroughly with the school side, but the persistent reporters were staking out in front of her house and rushed her with questions.

At that time Aiko fastened her pace while doing her utmost to not answer, but the statement of a reporter who spoke as though the students were

dangerous individuals and claimed that the special classroom was something that proved it to be true caused Aiko to object against her better judgment.

She said, that the students weren't dangerous or anything. That originally they should be able to attend school normally.

The press that happily picked up on that made an uproar claiming that the school side was discriminating and whatever, and the vice principal who received the news got angry.

(This wig-wearing baldy vice principal. What is he doing venting at Aiko.)

(.....Nn. It's the fact that the school is treating us with isolation. This baldy wig-covered head is only protecting himself.)

Hajime and Yue were squinting their eyes toward the vice principal who were still nagging angrily at Aiko. Both of them sneaked even closer behind the vice principal with their presence still cut off.

There, Aiko finally noticed Hajime and Yue's existence. Seeing the two who were slowly and stealthily approaching behind the vice principal, Aiko felt a violent bad premonition and she sent repeated glances at the vice principal and Hajime alternately.

Hajime smilingly conveyed「Morning」with his lip movement. Aiko too sent glances at the vice principal who was absorbed with his preaching while conveying「Good morning」with her lips movement.

Hajime nodded once and,

(For now, how about I attack this guy?)

He slowly took out Donner and aimed at the back of the vice principal's head.

「No way-! Absolutely no way!」

「Muh. Exactly. It's self-explanatory what does alma mater meant. It's something that will be unforgettable for the whole life for the students, and you must not do anything that can harm this alma mater. In the first place——」

Aiko reflexively yelled and crossed both her arms to make a cross mark. She did that incidentally right after the vice principal was saying「Do you think it's fine to put a stigma on the school?」, and so Aiko's sudden eccentric behavior

was also miraculously ignored.

Yue straightened up her index finger all of a sudden,

(.....Don't worry Aiko. Right now I'll annihilate this barely remaining hair roots for you.)

Fire lit up above the finger. Yue's gaze was directed toward the vice principal's head.

「More than this is no good! It will be completely gone!」

「Exactly, Hatayama-sensei! The prestige of our school must not be harmed even more than this. If we lose our credence, it's also possible for the alma mater of the students to be gone!」

Once more it was a relay of miraculous conversation.

Surely under the 7:3 ratio wig, the hair roots that were already in the verge of annihilation were squeezing out their final willpower. As expected, perhaps feeling the danger instinctively, the vice principal inadvertently looked behind. Hajime and Yue smoothly moved to his blind spot with harmonized breathing.

Confirming that there wasn't anyone behind him, the vice principal returned his gaze at Aiko. At the same time, Hajime and Yue also smoothly returned behind him.

The vice principal checked his watch and it seemed he would conclude his preaching. Surely this talk was something important to him that was grounded on his belief. But, Aiko was helplessly bothered by the two behind the vice principal that his words didn't enter her head at all.

(The bell will ring soon! Please enter the classroom quickly! Or rather, eh? Why am I conversing with lip movement like this?)

Aiko responded with lip movement talk from being somehow carried away by the place's atmosphere, she noticed the strangeness about that while urging Hajime and Yue with a scolding.

The two who even now were reaching out their hand together toward the wig of the vice principal as though to say 'This is the first group work of us two desu!' looked at each other's face after seeing Aiko's upset look and desperate

lips movement. And then, they nodded as though something had passed between them, and right after that the two of them acted despondently which didn't suit them.

(Even though I did this because I thought Aiko is troubled.....)

(.....Even though I'm doing my best to help Aiko)

No matter how one thought of it what they were doing was nothing more than being mischievous, but Aiko who was overwhelmed so much by the situation honestly felt guilt pressing on her chest.

Toward such Aiko, Hajime and Yue moistened their eyes with their mischievousness in full throttle while appealing.

(Aiko already hated me now huh.)

(.....Aiko already hated me now?)

Getting told that by the man she was in love with and the top of the wife~s, there was no way Aiko who was already at her wits end could recover her calm,

「Such thing-, it's obvious that I love you very much!」

「Wha-. Ha, Hatayama-sensei, what are you suddenly.....」

For some reason vice principal was greatly flustered. His wig head was blushing red until the tip of his ears and his expression was taken aback for a while. And then he cleared his throat once *cough-*.

「Ha, Hatayama-sensei. That's, it's, just what do you mean by that?」

The talk of the wig vice principal before this was「Anyway, there is no time, I'll stop with this much for now. I really wish that you can realize just how large the influence your carelessness in your speech has brought to our school. Although, it seems that you are hating me, perhaps my words are only entering your right ear before going out from the left ear right away」that was said with a lot of sarcasm in his tone.

It was at that timing that Aiko finally turned her focus at her talk with the vice principal. Of course, she wasn't listening to the vice principal's talk just now so she also didn't really understand what was said and asked at her. But, with the atmosphere and also with her social standing, here she absolutely cannot say

anything like「Actually I'm not listening! I'm sorry!」.

(Wha, what to do? I don't know at all what is he talking about..... Wait, Aiko, remember it well. This wig, cough-, vice principal is talking about how to protect the school and about the necessity of protecting the school so.....that's right! There is no doubt he is asking me whether I'm treasuring, loving the school or not!)

「Err, even if you ask me what I mean, the meaning is exactly just like I said.....」

Ai-chan-sensei replied carefully while watching the situation. With how she was also turning upturned gaze to observe the situation, the wig vice principal was further bewildered.

「You, you really mean what you said..... Hatayama-sensei, you, in this kind of place you suddenly.....please stop with you joke.」

The vice principal averted his gaze away with a huff. Hajime and Yue escaped to outside the field of vision with a splendid moving technique.

Aiko felt a heartburn seeing the wig-wearing middle-aged man blushing for some reason, so she gripped her chest tightly and racked her brain hard.

(What's this, this situation feel somewhat strange but.....he is telling me to stop joking, that means he is thinking that I'm not thinking seriously about the school. As I thought from the view point of vice principal who has worked in teaching profession for nearly thirty years until now, someone like me introducing myself as teacher is just presumptuous.....but, it's true that a school is a place to protect the students, and it's a place of important memory that will remain through our life. Then, at the very least I have to convey that I'm serious!)

Still being unaware that the perception of both sides were mutually greatly deviating from each other, Aiko took a deep breath with resolve. The wig vice principal twitched seeing that straightforward gaze.

Aiko didn't even pay attention to the wig vice principal twitching and she met his gaze frankly and,

「I'm not joking, I really feel fondness (for the school and students)! No,

rather, it's not an exaggeration even if I say that I feel love (for the school and students)!」

「Wha, what did you saay—!?!」

That powerful speech was delivered with a tightly clenched fist and a force that made one hallucinated the sea wave splashing behind her *splaa~~sh*. The serious feeling was conveyed clearly whether the recipient wanted it or not.

The wig vice principal took a step back as though he was overpowered and,

「I, I HAVE, A WIFE AND CHILDRENNNNNNNNNN~'''~」

He yelled such thing while running through the corridor. Of course, Hajime and Yue escaped to the blind spot with divine smoothness. At that time, a divine wind also blew and the vice principal's wig was smoothly taken and fell on the floor.

Aiko watched with her mouth wide open at the vice principal who suddenly yelled out incomprehensible thing while running away.

「.....Aiko, you are a miraculous human. This is the first time since I was born witnessing this kind of artistic misunderstanding.」

「Hee? Eh?」

「Aa~, Aiko. You see, perhaps vice principal is thinking that he was confessed by Aiko. After all you gave him those lines after he was sarcastically asking whether you hate actually him.」

「Yes?」

Aiko was astonished. However, a beat later she recalled her dialogue with the vice principal and then thinking of what Hajime said she guessed the situation, which caused her expression to lose color in a flash. And then, she picked up the wig on the floor using her fingertips and,

「Vi, VICE PRINCIPAALLLLLLL-! IT'S A MISUNDERSTANDINGGG! THIS IS A MISUNDERSTANDING!!! ALSO YOUR WIGGG!!! PLEASE DON'T ENTER THE STAFF ROOM! THE TIME OF MORNING ASSEMBLY WILL BE HELL~~~!! YOUR WIG IS STILL HEREEEEEEEE-」

She yelled that and dashed with amazing speed.

It felt like it would ended up the same with her yelling 'wig wig' like that but.....

While staring at the back figure of the cute homeroom teacher who was energetically running in place today too, Yue shortly said.

「.....Nn. As I thought, school is fun.」

「Yep, well, I think it's relatively an extraordinary student life though.」

The bell rang at the same time with Hajime's retort.

Today too the mundane school life was starting.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.